BEGINNING FRENCH

CERF
AND
GIESE

REVISED

Class PC 2111

Book .C433
1923

Copyright No.

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.

BEGINNING FRENCH

REVISED

with Summary of Grammar

BY

BARRY CERF

AND

W. F. GIESE

of the University of Wisconsin

PEN-AND-INK DRAWINGS BY

J. ORMSBEE

NEW YORK

HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

HC 2111
C433
1923

COPYRIGHT, 1919, 1921, 1923
BY
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

July, 1923

PRINTED IN THE U. S. A.

AUG 28 '23

©CLA752663

PUBLISHERS' NOTE

In the 1923 edition the International System of Phonetics has been substituted for the symbols used in the first edition of the book, and a few other changes of a minor character have been made in the text.

PREFACE

BEGINNING FRENCH is strictly an introductory book intended for first year work in schools and colleges.

Grammatical theory has been cut down to what seems to the authors the irreducible minimum. Much that is ordinarily included in similar books has been omitted. Attention is concentrated on a few cardinal facts in the hope that the student will thus acquire a sure knowledge of these, in place of the usual vague smattering of many rules.

A small concrete vocabulary of about 800 words dealing with matters of every-day life has been used. These are so constantly repeated that the student is expected to end by handling the whole list with perfect readiness. The vocabulary of each lesson runs to about twenty words only, to be learned once for all.

The book, while insisting on a thoroughly mastered background of grammatical discipline, encourages oral work in the class-room, and emphasizes the importance of repeated drill on the simplest elements and constructions of colloquial French. The principle of imitation has been utilized to an unusual extent. The *Drills* enable the student to study intelligently and to make sure that he rightly understands and applies his precepts. The *Dialogues* offer him the opportunity to do this in a larger and freer way — a thing which, without such guidance, he usually finds impossible. It is hoped they will particularly appeal to teachers who emphasize oral work in the class-room, as they furnish not only subject-matter but a practicable device for preparation.

For the sake of variety, much more material for practice has been furnished than is needed. The teacher may pick and choose. Each lesson is divided into two parts, the first

sufficient in itself, the second supplementary. The latter may be largely or entirely omitted by those who desire only a rapid survey of the elements of French — or it may be reserved for use in going through the book a second time.

So far as is compatible with its purely elementary character, the French text offers to the student consecutive instead of disconnected matter, a feature whose advantages are now so commonly recognized as to require no comment. The *Readings* should be read aloud with accuracy and animation, and only occasionally and partly translated. The *Résumés*, prepared in advance, may be given with closed books, the teacher pronouncing the words one by one and calling on the first volunteer to amplify. They should not be allowed to consume much time.

CONTENTS

PAGE

INTRODUCTION

Pronunciation 3
Table of Sounds 6
Rules for Pronunciation 7
Nasalization 12
Length of Vowels 13
Observations on Vowels — on Consonants 14
Numerals — Stress 16
Syllabification — Linking — Elision 17
Diacritical Marks 18
Alphabet — Exercises 19

LESSON

I. L'ÉCOLE 25
Gender; Number; Definite Article.

II. L'ÉCOLE 29
Contraction of Article; Use of **Est-ce que.**

III. L'ÉCOLE 33
Present Indicative (First Conjugation); Models for Questions; Indefinite Article.

IV. L'ÉCOLE 38
Feminine Adjectives; Plural of Adjectives; Position.

V. REVIEW 43

VI. LA MAISON 45
Imperative; Negative.

VII. LA MAISON 49
Present Indicative (**avoir**); Relative Pronoun; **Il y a, voilà.**

VIII. LE JARDIN 54
Irregular Feminine Adjectives; Present Indicative (Second Conjugation).

IX. LA FAMILLE 60
Possessive Adjectives; Possession.

LESSON PAGE

X. Review 64

XI. La Famille 66
Present Indicative (Third Conjugation); Interrogative Pronoun.

XII. La Rue 70
Past Participle; Past Indefinite.

XIII. Le Restaurant 76
Some, any (before nouns).

XIV. La Gare 81
Present Indicative (**être**); Past Indefinite (with **être**).

XV. Review 87

XVI. La Gare 88
Future; Interrogative Pronoun.

XVII. Le Magasin 94
Adverbs of Quantity; **En**.

XVIII. La Gare 100
Conjunctive Pronouns (Direct Object); **Chez**.

XIX. Le Magasin 106
Conjunctive Pronouns (Indirect Object).

XX. Review 112

XXI. L'Église 114
Present Participle, *etc.*; Prepositions with Infinitive.

XXII. Chez le Marchand de Tabac 120
(Table) Conjunctive Pronouns; Disjunctive Pronouns.

XXIII. Les Jours de la Semaine 125
This, that (adjectives).

XXIV. L'Heure 132
Idioms; **On**; Numerals (1–12); The Clock.

XXV. Review 138

XXVI. Les Métiers 140
Possession; *Some* (*any*); Present Indicative (**faire**).

XXVII. Le Temps; Les Saisons 146
Imperfect Indicative; Its Use; Idioms.

LESSON PAGE

XXVIII. À la Campagne 152
Comparison of Adjectives and of Adverbs; Numerals (13–20).

XXIX. La Famille 160
Numerals (above 20); **Savoir**.

XXX. Review 166

XXXI. La Poste 168
Conditional; **Aller**; Conditions.

XXXII. L'Hôtel 174
Negatives; *Some* (*any*); **Pouvoir, Prendre**; Irregular Verbs (*stem*).

XXXIII. Le Magasin 183
Imperative (with pronoun objects); Adverbs; **Venir**.

XXXIV. Les Mois 191
Idioms; **Faire, Dire**.

XXXV. Review 199

XXXVI. Le Théâtre 201
Agreement of Participles; Idioms; **Ce qui**; **Lire, Écrire**.

XXXVII. La Toilette 208
Reflexive Verbs; **Conduire, Croire**.

XXXVIII. La Toilette 216
Reflexive Verbs; **Sentir**, *etc.*

XXXIX. La Caserne 222
Order of Personal Pronouns; **Voir, Vouloir**.

XL. Review 230

XLI. Chez le Médecin 232
Present Subjunctive (regular and irregular verbs); Uses.

XLII. La Pension 242
Present Subjunctive: further uses; Irregular forms; **Connaître, Mettre**.

XLIII. La Maison 249
Demonstrative Pronouns; Possessive Pronouns; **Recevoir, Devoir**.

LESSON PAGE

XLIV. Une Lettre: Le Paquebot, La Douane 258
Summary of Interrogative and Relative Pronouns; **Craindre, Ouvrir.**

XLV. Review 268
Past Definite; Imperfect Subjunctive 270
Schemes for Verb Drill 272

APPENDIX

Paradigms of Regular Verbs 275
Paradigms of Auxiliary Verbs 278
Table of Irregular Verbs 281
Compound Verbs (*list*) 294
Class-room Words and Phrases 296
Useful Phrases for Memorizing 299
Summary of Grammar 305
Vocabularies 349
Index 373

PRONUNCIATION

Preliminary Remarks.—The observations in §§ 1–14 are introduced here as an aid to teachers and students who desire to utilize a few of the elementary data of phonetic science as a supplement to the usual method of learning to pronounce by approximate English equivalents as given in § 15. Those who prefer to rely on the Table of Sounds will accordingly omit these preliminary remarks and pass to § 15.

1. VOWEL SOUNDS

	FRONT		BACK	
(*High*) *Close*	[j]		[w]	(*High*) *Close*
	[i] [y]		[u]	
	[e] [ø]	[ə]	[o]	
	[ɛ] [œ]		[ɔ]	
(*Low*) *Open*	[a]		[ɑ]	(*Low*) *Open*

2. [i], [e], [ɛ], [a] are *front* vowels, pronounced with the tongue in the *front* of the mouth. They are progressively less *close* and more *open*, pronounced with the tongue progressively less *high* in the mouth and the mouth progressively wider *open*. The corners of the mouth are progressively less far apart, being very far apart for [i].

Practise this series, beginning first with [i], then with [a].
Practise the following: [ti] [te] [tɛ] [ta], [ta] [tɛ́] [te] [ti].

3. [ɑ], [ɔ], [o], [u] are *back* vowels, pronounced with the tongue in the *back* of the mouth. They are progressively less *open* and more *close*, pronounced with the tongue progressively *higher* in the mouth and the mouth progressively less *open*. They are *rounded*, the lips forming a round opening progressively narrower, till with [u] it reaches the shape used for whistling.

Practise this series, beginning first with [ɑ], then with [u].
Practise [bɑ] [bɔ] [bo] [bu], [bu] [bo] [bɔ] [bɑ].
Combine the two series, running first from [i] to [u], then from [u] to [i].
Practice the series [ti] to [bu] and [bu] to [ti].

4. The front vowels are unrounded.

[i] rounded gives [y],
[e] rounded gives [ø],
[ɛ] rounded gives [œ]:

[y] = tongue position of [i], lip position of [u][1]
[ø] = tongue position of [e], lip position of [o]
[œ] = tongue position of [ɛ], lip position of [ɔ]

Practise the series of *rounded front* vowels, as follows: [di] [dy], [de] [dø], [dɛ] [dœ].

Practise [dy] [dø] [dœ], [dœ] [dø] [dy].

5. [ø] and [œ] when short and unstressed will have the sound indicated by [ə]. This sound can hardly be pronounced alone, since a vowel pronounced alone is stressed.

Practise: **venir, demi, ce bon ami.**

6. If the breath sent from the lungs encounters an obstacle (partial or complete stoppage), the sound produced is a consonant; if the breath is unobstructed, the sound is a vowel. [i] and [u] are pronounced with the tongue very high in the mouth. If the tongue is raised slightly more, something like a consonant is produced: [i] becomes the semi-consonant [j] and [u] becomes the semi-consonant [w].

Practise pronouncing [i] [j], [u] [w]; [ti] [tjɛ], [ku][kwɔ].

7. Nasal Vowels. If the *oral* vowels [ɑ] [ɛ] [ɔ] [œ] are pronounced so that the breath passes not only through the mouth but partly also through the *nose*, the result is the nasal vowels [ɑ̃] [ɛ̃] [ɔ̃] [œ̃].

Practise pronouncing [ɑ] [ɑ̃], [ɛ] [ɛ̃], [ɔ] [ɔ̃], [œ] [œ̃]; practise also these sounds preceded by [p].

The nasal sound represented by [ɛ̃] is really intermediate between [ɛ̃] and [ɑ̃], nearer [ɑ̃] than [ɛ̃]. Most books write the sound [ɛ̃]. We have adherred to the usual practise.

[1] When [y] precedes a vowel, the two are united in a single syllable, [y] being shortened. The second vowel of the diphthong is accented: lui [lyí].

8. French vowels are all pure vowels, that is, a single sound; English vowels are really diphthongs; e.g. English *o* in *so* is really the sound [o] followed by something like the sound [u], *a* in *car* is approximately [ɑ] followed by [ə]. This subsidiary sound, called a "glide," should be carefully avoided in pronouncing French.

French vowels should be pronounced sharply and clearly with distinctly marked lip movements.

Pronounce the vowel sounds preceded by [m], first in the English, second in the French manner. Note the greater tenseness, sharpness and clearness of the French sounds.

CONSONANT SOUNDS

9. Consonants, like vowels, are more clearly and sharply pronounced than in English.

10. In pronouncing the "explosive" consonants, [p] [b] [t] [d] [k] [g], avoid the laxness of the corresponding English sounds. *Be careful not to omit the explosion.* This is particularly important when the sound is final, for here the explosion is omitted almost entirely in English.

For [p] and [b] bring the lips together sharply and part them with a distinct explosion.

For [t] and [d] bring the tip of the tongue sharply against the upper teeth and release it with a distinct explosion.

Practise pronouncing **cap**, **aube**, **batte**, **grande**, **flaque**, **dogue**.

11. The sound [ɲ] is like the English *ni* in *union*, but be careful not to make two sounds; don't pronounce *un-yon:* **dignité** (pronounce *di-gni-té*, not *din-yi-té*).

12. The usual French **r** is the so-called "uvular **r**," pronounced by movement of the uvula, somewhat as in the German word *ach*. The "uvular **r**" can be learned only by imitation. The "tip-trill **r**" is sounded by vibration of the

tip of the tongue. It can be more readily acquired than the "uvular **r**," but is usually lost as the student begins to talk easily.

13. In pronouncing English [l], the tongue is loose in the mouth. For the French [l], bring the tongue sharply against the upper teeth. Compare English *long* and French **long**.

The correct pronunciation of [l] is particularly important when the sound is final. Compare English *tell* and French **tel**.

14. For [s] [z] [f] [v] [m] [n] [ʃ] [ʒ] remember the general rule, that French consonants are pronounced with quick, distinct lip and tongue movements.

15. TABLE OF SOUNDS

VOWELS

SYMBOL	SOUND
[a]	like a in '*ma*t'[1]: **dame** [dam], *lady*
[ɑ]	like a in '*fa*ther': **pâte** [pɑːt], *paste*
[e]	like a in '*ma*te': **blé** [ble], *wheat*
[ɛ]	like e in '*me*t': **très** [trɛ], *very*
[ə]	like e in '*the*[2] *ma*n': **le** [lə], *the*
[i]	like ee in '*mee*t': **ici** [isi], *here*
[ɔ]	like aw in '*paw*': **soldat** [sɔl-da], *soldier*
[o]	like o in '*no*te': **tôt** [to], *soon*
[u]	like oo in '*boo*t': **vous** [vu], *you*
[y]	pronounce the ee in '*mee*t' [i] and round the lips to the whistling position: **du** [dy], *of the*
[ø]	pronounce the a in '*ma*te' [e] and round the lips to the whistling position: **peu** [pø], *little*[3]
[œ]	pronounce the e in '*me*t' [ɛ] and round the lips to the whistling position: **peur** [pœːr], *fear*[3]

[1] This [a] should not be pronounced too "flat"; it is really intermediary between the sounds of '*ma*t' and '*fa*ther,' considerably nearer *ma*t, however.

[2] Pronounce *thuh* man, not *thee* man.

[3] The beginner may pronounce both [ø] and [œ] like u in '*bu*rr.'

NASAL VOWELS

[ɛ̃] like the a in '*sang*' without the final consonantal sound: vin [vɛ̃], *wine;* see § 7

[ɔ̃] like the o in '*song*' without the final consonantal sound: **bon** [bɔ̃], *good*

[œ̃] like the u in '*sung*' without the final consonantal sound: **un** [œ̃], *one, a*

[ɑ̃] like the a in '*palm*' pronounced nasally: **enfant** [ɑ̃-fɑ̃], *child*

CONSONANTS

[j] like y in '*yes*': **ciel** [sjɛl], *heaven*[1]

[w] like w in '*wet*': **oui** [wi], *yes;* **louer** [lwe], *to praise*[2]

[ʃ] like ch in '*Ch*icago': **chef** [ʃɛf], *chief*

[ɲ] like ni in '*union*': **signe** [siɲ], *sign;* see § 11

[ʒ] like s in '*pleasure*': **je** [ʒə], *I*

[s] like s in '*sing*': **son** [sɔ̃], *his*

[z] like z in '*zone*': **rose** [roːz], *rose*

Pronounce the other consonants as in English.

[ː] indicates that the vowel it follows is long: **rose** [roːz], *rose*

RULES FOR PRONUNCIATION

VOWELS

16. [ɑ], called "open a," is written as follows:

1. **â**: **âme** [ɑːm], *soul;* **pâte** [pɑːt], *paste.*

   Except in verb endings: **nous donnâmes** [nu dɔ-nam], *we gave;* **vous donnâtes** [vu dɔ-nat], *you gave.*

2. **a** before the sound [z], i.e. before **s** between vowels: **base** [bɑːz], *basis;* **occasion** [ɔ-kɑ-zjɔ̃].

3. **a** before the ending **–tion** [–sjɔ̃]: **nation** [nɑ-sjɔ̃], **station** [stɑ-sjɔ̃].

[1] The beginner may pronounce [j] like [i]: [si-ɛl] for [sjɛl].

[2] The beginner may pronounce [w] like [u]: [lu-e] for [lwe].

4. a before silent final s: **pas** [pɑ], *not, step;* **matelas** [ma-tə-lɑ], *mattress.*

   Except in verb endings: **tu as** [ty a], *thou hast;* **tu donneras** [ty dɔ-nə-ra], *thou shalt give.*

17. [a], called "close **a**," is the usual sound of the French **a**. The letter **a** is to be pronounced [a] except in the cases noted under [a]: **patte** [pat], *paw;* **la** [la], *the;* **parler** [par-le], *to speak*

Note. **oi** is pronounced [wa]: **loi** [lwa], *law;* **oiseau** [wa-zo], *bird.*[1]

18. [e], called "close **e**," is written as follows:

1. **é**: **blé** [ble] *wheat;* **vérité** [ve-ri-te], *truth.*
2. **ai** as verb ending; cf. [ɛ] 2: **j'ai** [ʒe], *I have;* **je donnai** [ʒə dɔ-ne], *I gave;* **je donnerai** [ʒə dɔ-nə-re], *I shall give.*
3. e before all silent final consonants except **t**; cf. [ɛ] 3: **donner** [dɔ-ne], *to give;* **les** [le], *the, them;* **clef** [kle], *key.*

19. [ɛ], called "open **e**," is written as follows:

1. **è, ê, ei**: **père** [pɛːr], *father;* **j'achète** [ʒa-ʃɛt], *I buy;* **tête** [tɛːt], *head;* **vous êtes** [vu zɛt], *you are;* **peine** [pɛn], *pain;* **neige** [nɛːʒ], *snow.*
2. **ai** except as verb ending; cf. [ɛ] 2: **je donnais** [ʒə dɔ-nɛ], *I was giving;* **je donnerais** [ʒə dɔ-nə-rɛ], *I should give;* **vrai** [vrɛ], *true;* **mais** [mɛ], *but.*
3. **e** before a silent final **t** or **ts**; cf. [e] 3: **effet, effets** [ɛ-fɛ], *effect, effects;* **gilet** [ʒi-lɛ], *waistcoat.*

   Note. **et** [e], *and;* **est** [ɛ], *is.*
4. e before a *pronounced* final consonant: **fer** [fɛːr], *iron;* **autel** [o-tɛl], *altar.*
5. e before more than one consonant; cf. [ə] 2: **rester** [rɛs-te], *to remain;* **terrain** [tɛ-rɛ̃], *land.*[2]

   Except before consonant +1 or + **r**; see [ə] 3.

   Note. **x**=**ks** or **gz** (see § 50); it counts as two consonants.

[1] **oignon** [ɔ-ɲɔ̃], *onion;* **poignard** [pɔ-ɲaːr], *poniard.*

[2] **femme** [fam], *woman;* **solennel** [sɔ-la-nɛl], *solemn;* **-emment** as an adverbial ending is pronounced [-a-mɑ̃]: **ardemment** [ar-da-mɑ̃], *ardently;* **récemment** [re-sa-mɑ̃], *recently:* **dessus** [də-sy], *above:* **dessous** [də-su], *underneath;* **messieurs** [mesjø], *Messrs.;* **res-** as a prefix is pronounced [rə-]: **ressembler** [rə-sɑ̃-ble]; **ressentir** [rə-sɑ̃tiːr], *to feel.*

6. **e** before the sound [j]: **abeille** [a-bɛ:j], *bee;* **soleil** [sɔ-lɛ:j], *sun.*

NOTE. 4, 5, 6 may be condensed as follows: **e** before a *pronounced* consonant in the *same* syllable (see § 54).

20. [ə], called "neutral **e**," is written as follows:

1. **e** final in monosyllables: **le** [lə], *the, him;* **de** [də], *of.*

2. **e** before a single consonant in the interior of a word; cf. [ɛ] 5: **venir** [və-ni:r], *to come;* **demi** [də-mi], *half.*

3. **e** before consonant+**l** or+**r**; cf. [ɛ] 5: **secret** [sə-krɛ], *secret;* **reflet** [rə-flɛ], *reflection.*

NOTE. 1. The *second* consonant, not the *first*, must be **l** or **r**: pronounce [ɛ] in **celtique, perdition.** **ll, rr, lr, rl** count as two consonants: pronounce [ɛ] in **celle, serre, merle.**

NOTE 2. See § 40.

NOTE 3. § 20, 1, 2, 3 may be condensed as follows: **e** final in a syllable (see § 54).

21. [i] is written **i**: **cire** [si:r], *wax;* **citron** [si-trɔ̃], *lemon.*

EXCEPT before a vowel; see § 26, 1.

NOTE. The letter **y** is merely an orthographic variant of the letter **i** (**lyre, style, mystère** are pronounced as if written **lire, stile, mistère**); all rules applying to **i** apply also to **y**: **yeux** [jø], *eyes* (see § 26, 1). But for **y** *between vowels*, see § 43.

22. [o], called "close **o**," is written as follows:

1. **ô**: **vôtre** [vo:tr], *yours;* **contrôler** [kɔ̃-tro-le], *to control.*

2. **o** before the sound [z], i.e. before **s** between vowels: **rose** [ro:z], **position** [po-zi-sjɔ̃].

3. **o** before the ending **–tion** [–sjɔ̃]: **motion** [mo-sjɔ̃], **notion** [no-sjɔ̃].

4. **o** final or before a silent final consonant: **zéro** [ze-ro], **piano** [pja-no]; **mot** [mo], *word;* **nos** [no], *our.*

5. **au, eau**; **saut** [so], *leap;* **flambeau** [flɑ̃-bo], *torch.*[1]
EXCEPT that **au** before **r** is pronounced [ɔ]: **j'aurai** [ʒ-ɔre], *I shall have;* **Maure** [mɔ:r], *Moor.*

23. [ɔ], called "open **o**," is the usual sound of the French **o**. The letter **o** is to be pronounced [ɔ] except in the cases

[1] **Paul** [pɔl], *Paul.*

noted under [o]: **votre** [vɔtr], *your;* **école** [e-kɔl], *school;* **donner** [dɔ-ne], *to give.*[1]

NOTE. Compare the rules for [ɑ], [a] with those for [o], [ɔ].

24. [ø], called "close **eu**," is written as follows:

1. **eu** final or before a silent final consonant: **peu** [pø], *little;* **douteux** [du-tø], *doubtful.*

   NOTE. So also **œu: bœufs** [bø], *oxen;* **œufs** [ø], *eggs.*

2. **eu** before the sound [z]: **creuser** [krø-ze], *to dig;* **douteuse** [du-tø:z], *doubtful.*

25. [œ], called "open **eu**." The group **eu** is to be pronounced [œ] except in the cases noted under [ø].

eu is pronounced [œ] in the following cases:

1. **eu** when not final nor before a silent final consonant: **peur** [pœ:r], *fear;* **heureux** [œ-rø], *happy.*

   NOTE. So also **œu: bœuf** [bœf], *ox;* **œuf** [œf], *egg.*

2. **eu** before the sound [j]: **deuil** [dœ:j], *mourning;* **feuillage** [fœ-ja:ʒ], *foliage.*

   NOTE. So also **ue,**[2] **œ: recueil** [rə-kœ:j], *collection;* **œil** [œ:j], *eye.*

26. [j] is written as follows:

1. **i** before another *pronounced* vowel: **ciel** [sjɛl], *sky;* **viande** [vjɑ̃:d], *meat.*

   EXCEPT that when **i** follows consonant+**l** or+**r** it remains [i]: **prier** [pri-e], *to pray;* **client** [kli-ɑ̃], *client.*

   NOTE. Contrast **étudier** [e-ty-dje], *to study* and **j'étudie** [ʒe-ty-di], *I study;* in **j'étudie** *silent* **e** does not affect the pronunciation and **i** remains [i].

2. **ll** after **i: fille** [fi:j], *daughter;* **pillage** [pi-ja:ʒ], *pillage.*

   EXCEPT **ville** [vil], *city;* **village** [vi-la:ʒ], *village;* **mille** [mil], *thousand;* **tranquille** [trɑ̃-kil], *tranquil;* and **ill–** initial: **illégal** [i-le-gal], *illegal;* **illimité** [i-li-mi-te], *unlimited.*

[1] **fosse** [fos], *ditch;* **grosse** [gros], *big.*

[2] **ue** is merely an orthographic variation of **eu** used after **c** and **g** in order to guard the sounds [k] and [g]: **receuil** would be pronounced [rə-sœ:j], and **orgueil**, if spelled **orgeuil**, would be [ɔr-ʒœ:j]; see § 45.

3. **ill** after any vowel: **travailler** [tra-va-je], *to work;* **feuille** [fœ:j], *leaf*.

4. **il** final after a vowel: **travail** [tra-va:j], *work;* **œil** [œ:j], *eye*.[1]

NOTE. **ill** could never be written after **i**; if this were possible **fille** would be written **fiille**. Also, French orthography avoids **–ill** final. So, **ill** may be considered the regular spelling of [j], **ll** (rule 2) and **il** (rule 4) being accidental.

27. [u] is written **ou**: **tout** [tu], **pour** [pu:r].

EXCEPT before a pronounced vowel; see § 29.

28. [y] is written **u**: **pur** [py:r], *pure;* **furtif** [fyr-tif], *furtive;* **sûr** [sy:r], *sure*.

NOTE. **u** before a vowel is shorter than otherwise and forms a single syllable with the vowel. The accent falls on the second vowel of the diphthong: **lui** [lyí], *him;* **puis** [pyí], *then;* **puiser** [pyí-ze], *to draw*. Distinguish **lui** [lyí] and **Louis** [lwi], see § 29.

29. [w] is the sound of **ou** before a *pronounced* vowel: **oui** [wi], *yes;* **Louis** [lwi].

EXCEPT that when **ou** follows consonant+**l** or+**r** it remains [u]: **éblouir** [e-blu-i:r], *to dazzle;* cf. § 26, 1.

NOTE. Contrast **jouer** [ʒwe], *to play*, and **je joue** [ʒə ʒu], *I play:* in **je joue** *silent* **e** does not affect the pronunciation and **ou** remains [u]; cf. § 26, 1, Note.

30. How is the letter **a** pronounced? See [ɑ], [a]. How is **ai** pronounced? See [e] 2, [ɛ] 2. How is **au** pronounced? See [o] 5.

31. How is **eu** pronounced? See [ø], [œ]. How is **e** pronounced (1) before more than one consonant: see [ɛ] 5; (2) before one consonant: see [ə] 2; (3) before a final consonant: see [ɛ] 4, [e] 3, [ɛ] 3?

[1] **poil** [pwal], *hair*.

NASALIZATION

32. A vowel is nasalized before **m** or **n** if the **m** or **n** is not followed by a vowel or **m** or **n** (i.e. vowel+**m** or **n** when **m** or **n** is final or followed by any consonant except **m** or **n**). Rule otherwise stated: A vowel is nasalized before **m** or **n** if the **m** or **n** ends the syllable; see § 54. For examples, see §§ 33–36. Do not nasalize the vowels in such words as **ennemi** [ɛ-nə-mi], *enemy;* **hymne** [imn]; **inouï** [i-nwi], *unheard of;* **image** [i-maːʒ]; **commis** [kɔ-mi], *clerk;* **immodeste** [i-mɔ-dɛst].[1]

33. [ɑ̃][2] represents:

1. **a** nasalized: **dans** [dɑ̃], *in;* **tante** [tɑ̃ːt], *aunt.*
2. **e** nasalized: **en** [ɑ̃], *in;* **client** [kli-ɑ̃].[3]

Except the cases noted under [ɛ̃] 4.

34. [ɛ̃] represents:

1. **i** nasalized: **vin** [vɛ̃], *wine;* **simple** [sɛ̃ːpl].
2. **ai** nasalized: **pain** [pɛ̃], *bread;* **plaindre** [plɛ̃ːdr], *to pity.*
3. **ei** nasalized: **plein** [plɛ̃], *full;* **Reims** [rɛ̃ːs], *Rheims.*
4. **en** final after **i**: **rien** [rjɛ̃], *nothing;* **bien** [bjɛ̃], *well;* and **en** in forms of the verbs **venir, tenir** and their compounds: **je viens** [ʒə vjɛ̃], *I come;* **il tiendra** [il tjɛ̃-dra], *he will hold;* **il retient** [il rə-tjɛ̃], *he retains.*

Note. **oi** nasalized is pronounced [wɛ̃]: **point** [pwɛ̃]; **moindre** [mwɛ̃ːdr], *least.*

35. [ɔ̃] represents **o** nasalized: **don** [dɔ̃], *gift;* **fontaine** [fɔ̃-tɛn], *fountain.*[4]

[1] **ennui** [ɑ̃-nyi], *bore* (so also **ennuyer** [ɑ̃-nyi-je], **ennuyeux**); **emmener** [ɑ̃-mə-ne], *to carry away:* **enivrer** [ɑ̃-ni-vre], *to intoxicate;* **nous tînmes** [nu tɛ̃ːm], *we held:* **nous vînmes** [nu vɛ̃ːm], *we came:* **néanmoins** [ne-ɑ̃-mwɛ̃], *nevertheless.*

[2] [ɑ̃] *palm* 1. **a dans** 2. **e en** — [ɛ̃] *sang* 1. **i vin** 2. **ai pain** 3. **ei plein** — [ɔ̃] *song* **o don** — [œ̃] *sung* **u un**

[3] **examen** [ɛg-za-mɛ̃], *examination:* **–éen** final = [–eɛ̃]: **Européen** [œ-rɔ-pe-ɛ̃].

[4] **monsieur** [mə-sjø], *Mr.* (for **messieurs**, see § 19, footnote 2); **faon** [fɑ̃], *fawn;* **paon** [pɑ̃], *peacock.*

36. [œ̃] represents **u** nasalized: **un** [œ̃], *one, a;* **parfum** [par-fœ̃], *perfume.*[1]

37. Observe the pronunciation of feminines whose masculines end in **n**: **vain** [vɛ̃], **vaine** [vɛn]; **ancien** [ɑ̃-sjɛ̃], **ancienne** [ɑ̃-sjɛn], *ancient;* **un** [œ̃], **une** [yn], *one, a.*

LENGTH OF VOWELS

38. Vowels are usually short in French; they are always short in *unstressed* syllables. The stress in French words falls on the last pronounced vowel; see § 53.

The following vowels are long:

1. *Stressed* vowels before the sounds [z], [ʒ], [v], [j]: **rose** [ro:z]; **j'engage** [ʒɑ̃-ga:ʒ]; **brave** [bra:v]; **je travaille** [ʒə tra-va:j], *I work.* [a] in **engager, travailler,** is short because it is unstressed.

2. *Stressed* vowels before **r** when **r** is pronounced final: **affaire** [a-fɛ:r]; **rapport** [ra-pɔ:r], *report;* but the vowel is short in **porte** [pɔrt], *door,* since **r** is not pronounced final.

3. *Stressed* nasal vowels, *unless* they are pronounced final: **bonde** [bɔ̃:d], *leap;* **amante** [a-mɑ̃:t], *lover;* but the vowels are short in **bon** [bɔ̃], *good;* **amant** [a-mɑ̃], *lover,* since they are pronounced final.

4. *Stressed* vowels bearing a circumflex, unless they are pronounced final: **pâte** [pɑ:t], *paste;* **côte** [ko:t], *coast;* but **mât** [mɑ], *mast;* **ci-gît** [si ʒi], *here lies.*

EXCEPT **vous êtes** [vu zɛt], *you are;* and the endings of the past definite: **nous donnâmes** [nu dɔ-nam], *we gave;* **vous finîtes** [vu fi-nit], *you finished.*

[1] **eu** nasalized is pronounced [œ̃]; the only common word of this class is **à jeun** [a ʒœ̃], *fasting.*

OBSERVATIONS ON VOWELS

39. **ai** before the sound [z] in forms of the verb **faire,** *to do*, is pronounced [ə]: **nous faisons** [nu fə-zõ], *we do;* **il faisait** [il fə-zɛ], *he was doing;* **faisant** [fə-zã], *doing*.

40. [ə] is dropped unless an unpronounceable combination of consonants (usually three consonants) would result: **matelot** [ma-tlo], *sailor;* **venir** [vni:r], *to come;* but **Angleterre** [ã-glə-tɛ:r], *England;* **relier** [rə-lje], *to bind*. The beginning student, however, will do well to give full value to [ə] in all cases.

41. **–e** final, **–es** final, **–ent** as a verb ending (third person plural) are silent: **rose, roses** [ro:z]; **ils donnent** [il dɔn], *they give;* **ils donnèrent** [il dɔ-nɛ:r], *they gave*.

42. **eu** in forms of the verb **avoir,** *to have*, is pronounced [y]: **nous eûmes** [nu zym], *we had;* **il a eu** [i la y], *he has had;* i.e. pronounce as if the **e** were omitted.

43. **y** between vowels is equivalent to two **i**'s: **payer** = **paiier** [pɛ-je] (**pai** = [pɛ], see § 19, 2; **–ier** = [je], see § 26, 1); **voyons** = **voi**+**ions** [vwa-jõ], *let us see;* **tuyau** = **tui**+**iau** [tyi-jo], *pipe*.[1]

NOTE 1. For **y** *not between vowels*, see § 21, Note.

NOTE 2. The **y** in **pays,** *country*, and its compounds is treated as if it were between vowels: **pays** = **pai**+**i** [pɛ-i]; so **paysan** [pɛ-i-zã], *peasant;* and **paysage** [pɛ-i-za:ʒ], *landscape*.

OBSERVATIONS ON CONSONANTS

44. **b** before **s** or **t** is pronounced [p]: **obscur** [ɔp-sky:r]; **obtenir** [ɔp-tə-ni:r], *to obtain*. Cf. Latin *urbs* [urps].

45. **c, g** before **a, o, u** are pronounced [k], [g] (cf. English *cat, cot, cut*): **car** [ka:r], *for;* **goût** [gu], *taste*.

1. **La Fayette** [la fa-jɛt], **mayonnaise** [ma-jɔ-nɛ:z].

c, g before **e, i** are pronounced [s], [ʒ] (cf. English *cent, city*)· **cette** [sɛt], *this;* **gilet** [ʒi-lɛ], *waistcoat.*

ç, ge before **a, o, u** are pronounced [s], [ʒ]: **nous commençons** [nu kɔ-mɑ̃-sɔ̃], *we begin;* **nous mangeons** [nu mɑ̃-ʒɔ̃], *we eat.*

qu, gu are pronounced [k], [g]: **qui** [ki], *who;* **guerre** [gɛːr], *war.*

46. **cc** is pronounced [ks] and **gg** is pronounced [gʒ] before **e, i**: **succéder** [syk-se-de], *to succeed;* **suggérer** [syg-ʒe-re], *to suggest;* elsewhere (i.e. before **a, o, u** or a consonant) **cc** = [k], **gg** = [g]: **occasion** [ɔ-kɑ-zjɔ̃], **aggraver** [a-gra-ve].

47. **ch** is ordinarily pronounced [ʃ]: **chou** [ʃu], *cabbage;* **acheter** [a-ʃə-te], *to buy.*

Note. **ch** before a consonant is pronounced [k]: **chrétien** [kre-tjɛ̃], *Christian;* **chronique** [krɔ-nik], *chronicle;* also in **chœur** [kœːr], *chorus;* **écho** [e-ko], and some other words mainly of Greek origin.

48. **s** between vowels is pronounced [z], elsewhere [s]: **rose** [roːz]; **phrase** [frɑːz]; **somme** [sɔm], *sum;* **passage** [pa-saːʒ]; **vaste** [vast].

Note 1. Final **s** is not pronounced, unless it is linked (see § 55, note 2).

Note 2. In compounds **s** usually retains the sound [s] of the simple word: **vraisemblable** [vrɛ-sɑ̃-blabl], *likely;* **présupposer** [pre-sy-po-ze], *to presuppose.*

49. The ending **–tion** is pronounced [sjɔ̃]: **nation** [nɑ-sjɔ̃], **motion** [mo-sjɔ̃].

Except **–stion** [stjɔ̃]: **question** [kɛs-tjɔ̃], **suggestion** [syg-ʒɛs-tjɔ̃].

50. **x** is pronounced [ks]: **fixer** [fik-se], **excuser** [ɛk-sky-ze].

Except that initial **ex–** before a vowel is pronounced [ɛgz–]: **example** [ɛg-zɑ̃ːpl], **exister** [ɛg-zis-te].

NOTE 1. **x** at the end of a word is equivalent to **s** and follows the rules for **s**; cf. § 55, note 2.

NOTE 2. **x** is pronounced [z] in **deuxième** [dø-zjɛm], *second;* **sixième** [si-zjɛm], *sixth;* **dixième** [di-zjɛm], *tenth.*

NOTE 3. **x** is pronounced [s] in **soixante** [swa-sɑ̃:t], *sixty;* cf. **six, dix** in § 52, 1.

51. Final consonants are usually silent, but final **c, f, l** and **r** are in most cases pronounced: **bec** [bɛk], *beak;* **chef** [ʃɛf], *chief;* **fil** [fil], *wire;* **cher** [ʃɛːr], *dear.*

NUMERALS

52. Pronunciation of numerals **cinq** (5), **six** (6), **sept** (7), **huit** (8), **neuf** (9), **dix** (10):

1. standing alone: [sɛ̃k], [sis], [sɛt], [yit], [nœf], [dis]: **il en a cinq** [i lɑ̃ na sɛ̃k], *he has five.*

2. before a word beginning with a vowel: [sɛ̃k], [siz], [sɛt], [yit], nœv], [diz]. Pronounce the consonant with the word following in accordance with § 55: **cinq ans** [sɛ̃ kɑ̃], *five years;* **dix amis** [di zami]. See § 55, note 2.

3. before a word beginning with a consonant: [sɛ̃], [si], [sɛ], [yi], [nœ], [di]: **cinq chevaux** [sɛ̃ ʃə-vo], *five horses.*

NOTE 1. **dix-huit** [di zyit] 18; **dix-neuf** [diz nœf] 19; **vingt** [vɛ̃] 20; **vingt-deux** [vɛ̃t dø] 22, etc., to **vingt-neuf** [vɛ̃t nœf] 29; but in **quatre-vingt-un** 81, to **quatre-vingt-dix-neuf** 99, **vingt** is pronounced [vɛ̃].

NOTE 2. See § 50, notes 2, 3.

NOTE 3. **c** = [g] in **second** [sə-gɔ̃], *second,* and its derivatives: **secondaire,** etc.

STRESS (ACCENTUATION)

53. There is a slight stress on the last pronounced syllable of all French words, but this stress is so slight that it is well to disregard this rule and to *stress all syllables equally.*

For the first year the student will do well to pronounce syllable by syllable; in this way only will he free himself from the tendency to misaccentuate, especially in the case of words which resemble English words. Say **cón-cén-trér** to avoid **concéntrer.**

SYLLABIFICATION

54. *Correct division of syllables is essential to a good pronunciation.* In dividing into syllables pronounce a single consonant with the vowel following, but separate two or more consonants: **plu-ra-li-té, ad-mi-rer, par-fait, ter-rain.**

NOTE. The group consonant+l or +r is not separated but is pronounced with the vowel following: **se-cret, re-flet;** cf. [ə] 3 (§ 20).

LINKING

55. When a word ending with a consonant precedes a word beginning with a vowel or (in most cases) **h** (see § 56, note 4), the consonant is generally carried over to the following word: **vous allez** [vu zale], *you go;* **un autre** [œ̃ noːtr], *another;* **les hommes** [le zɔm], *the men.*

NOTE 1. Linking takes place even though the consonant would be silent if the word to which it belongs were pronounced alone: **vous** [vu], but **vous allez** [vu zale], *you are going.*

NOTE 2. In linking **d** *becomes* [t], **f** *becomes* [v], **s** or **x** *becomes* [z]: **quand il** [kɑ̃ til], *when he;* **neuf amis** [nœ va-mi], *nine friends;* **des amis** [de za-mi], *some friends;* see § 52, 2.

NOTE 3. Do not link after **et** [e], *and:* **et il a** [e i la], *and he has.*

NOTE 4. See § 56, note 3.

ELISION

56. Before a word beginning with a vowel or (in most cases) **h,** the final **e** of monosyllables is dropped (elided) and replaced by an apostrophe: **le**+**ami**=**l'ami** [la-mi], *the friend;* **l'homme** [lɔm], *the man.* So with **je,** *I;* **me,** *me;* **te,** *thee;* **se,** *himself, herself;* **de,** *of;* **ne,** *not;* **que,** *that;* **ce,** *this, that.*

NOTE 1. **a** is elided in **la**, *the, her:* **l'encre** [lɑ̃ːkr], *the ink;* **je l'aime** [ʒə lɛm], *I love her.*

NOTE 2. **i** is elided in **si**, *if*, when **il**, *he*, or **ils**, *they*, follows: **s'il vient** [sil vjɛ̃], *if he comes;* **s'ils viennent** [sil vjɛn], *if they come.*

NOTE 3. Do not elide nor link before **huit**[1], *eight;* **huitième**[1], *eighth;* **onze**, *eleven;* **onzième**, *eleventh;* **le onzième livre** [lə ɔ̃zjɛm liːvr], *the eleventh book.*

NOTE 4. Initial **h** is not pronounced; linking and elision take place before words beginning with **h**: **des hommes** [de zɔm], *some men;* **l'homme** [lɔm], *the man.*

EXCEPT that **h** at the beginning of a certain number of words, mainly of Germanic origin, prevents linking and elision ("aspirate **h**"): **les héros** [le e-ro], **le héros** [lə e-ro]. These words, which must be learned by observation, are indicated in dictionaries by ' or *: **'héros** or ***héros.**

57. DIACRITICAL MARKS

(´) *acute accent* (l'accent aigu [lak-sɑ̃ tɛ-gy]): **blé** [ble], *wheat*
(`) *grave accent* (l'accent grave [graːv]): **père** [pɛːr], *father*
(^) *circumflex accent* (l'accent circonflexe [sir-kɔ̃-flɛks]): **tête** [tɛːt], *head*

These three accents indicate the quality of the vowels, not stress (see §§ 16, 18, 19, 22, 53).

(¸) *cedilla* (la cédille [se-diːj]): **leçon** [lə-sɔ̃], *lesson* (see § 45)
(¨) *dieresis* (le tréma [tre-ma]): **Noël** [nɔ-ɛl], *Christmas*

The dieresis is used to show that the vowel over which it is placed is in a separate syllable from the vowel preceding. Compare **Noël** [nɔ-ɛl] with **poêle** [pwal], *stove;* **aiguë** [ɛ-gy], *sharp*, with **longue** [lɔ̃ːg], *long.*

(.) le point [pwɛ̃]
(,) la virgule [vir-gyl]
(;) le point et virgule
(:) deux points
(?) le point d'interrogation [dɛ̃-tɛ-rɔ-gɑ-sjɔ̃]
(!) le point d'exclamation [dɛk-skla-mɑ-sjɔ̃]

[1] But link in compound numerals: **dix-huit** [di zyit], **vingt-huitième** [vɛ̃ tyitjɛm].

(-) le trait d'union [trɛ dy-njõ]
(—) le tiret [ti-rɛ]
(« ») les guillemets [gi-jə-mɛ]
(. . .) les points suspensifs [sys-pã-sif]
( ) la parenthèse [pa-rã-tɛːz]

The *tiret* is used to indicate a change of speaker:

— Est-il venu? — Non! — Où est-il? — Je ne sais pas.

The *guillemets* are not used so much as the English quotation marks.

ALPHABET

58. The letters of the alphabet are as follows:

a	a [a]	**j**	ji [ʒi]	**s**	esse [ɛs]
b	bé [be]	**k**	ka [ka]	**t**	té [te]
c	cé [se]	**l**	elle [ɛl]	**u**	u [y]
d	dé [de]	**m**	emme [ɛm]	**v**	vé [ve]
e	é [e]	**n**	enne [ɛn]	**w**	double vé [du-blə ve]
f	effe [ɛf]	**o**	o [o]		
g	gé [ʒe]	**p**	pé [pe]	**x**	iks [iks]
h	ache [aʃ]	**q**	ku [ky]	**y**	i grec [i grɛk]
i	i [i]	**r**	erre [ɛr]	**z**	zèd [zɛd]

It is not advisable to use the *names* of the letters as given above; speak of *sounds* instead: say [s], not *esse*. In the case of the explosive consonants add a "neutral e" [ə] to the sound: [bə], [də], [gə], [kə], [pə], [tə].

EXERCISES

59. Exercise on [ɑ], [a], §§ 16–17, 53-54: 1. la place. 2. nous parlâmes, *we spoke*. 3. le vase. 4. le fracas, *noise*. 5. moi, *me*. 6. *le* dégât, *injury*. 7. il dira, *he will say*. 8. la Loire. 9. vous désirâtes, *you desired*. 10. le tas, *heap*. 11. la tâche, *task*. 12. l'évasion, *escape*. 13. le poisons. 14. tu vas, *thou goest*. 15. pâle. 16. j'arrive. 17. l'opération. 18. écraser, *to crush*. 19. déjà, *already*.

20. froid, *cold.* 21. l'animal. 22. le cas, *case.* 23. la phrase. 24. l'obstacle. 25. tu diras, *thou shalt say.* 26. la nomination. 27. la table. 28. le repas, *meal.* 29. la paroisse, *parish.*

60. Exercise on [e], [ɛ], [ə], §§ 18–20, 53–54: 1. je parlai, *I spoke.* 2. je parlais, *I was speaking.* 3. la mer, *sea.* 4. l'éveil, *awakening.* 5. assez, *enough.* 6. le mètre. 7. le regret. 8. me. 9. été, *been.* 10. je dirai, *I shall say.* 11. mener, *to drive.* 12. la pêche, *peach.* 13. je dirais, *I should say.* 14. je ferai, *I shall make.* 15. vous parlez, *you speak.* 16. pareille, *similar.* 17. je mène, *I drive.* 18. l'effet, *the effect.* 19. te, *thee.* 20. errer, *to wander.* 21. la Seine. 22. replier, *to fold up.* 23. la reprise, *taking again.* 24. il mènerait, *he would drive.* 25. le chef (*f* is pronounced), *chief.* 26. la clef (*f* is silent), *key.* 27. perdu, *lost.* 28. le degré. 29. gai.

61. Exercise on [ɔ], [o], §§ 22–23, 53–54: 1. composer. 2. la potion. 3. le poète. 4. la côte, *coast.* 5. la curiosité. 6. le restaurant. 7. le dos (*s* is silent), *back.* 8. la dot (*t* is pronounced), *dowry.* 9. la pause. 10. notre, *our.* 11. le nôtre, *ours.* 12. la popularité. 13. sot (*t* is silent), *foolish.* 14. sotte, *foolish.* 15. la locomotion. 16. l'écho. 17. la peau, *skin.* 18. tu auras, *thou shalt have.*

62. Exercise on [i], [ø], [œ], [u], [j], [w], §§ 21, 24–29, 53–54: 1. le feu, *fire.* 2. le tablier, *apron.* 3. la sœur, *sister.* 4. veuillez, *please.* 5. la muraille, *wall.* 6. le vœu, *vow.* 7. la prière, *prayer.* 8. la truite, *trout.* 9. la pitié, *pity.* 10. le bleuet, *cornflower.* 11. l'ouvrière, *working-woman.* 12. le bataillon, *battalion.* 13. luisant, *shining.* 14. le beurre, *butter.* 15. cueillir, *to gather.* 16. le fil, *thread.* 17. vieil, *old.* 18. la famille, *family.* 19. familier. 20. initial. 21. heureux, *happy.* 22. heureuse. 23. l'œillet, *pink.* 24. friand, *dainty.* 25. illuminé.

63. Exercise on the nasal sounds, §§ 32–37, 53–54: 1. le panier, *basket.* 2. inférieur. 3. l'ancre, *anchor.* 4. la reine, *queen.* 5. bien, *well.* 6. commun. 7. vous viendriez, *you would come.* 8. joindre, *to join.* 9. pendant, *during.* 10. intime, *intimate.* 11. la conscience. 12. l'âne, *donkey.* 13. l'an, *year.* 14. la peinture, *painting.* 15. ils viennent, *they come.* 16. tenant, *holding.* 17. nous tiendrons, *we shall hold.* 18. la dentelle, *lace.* 19. indiscret. 20. américain. 21. humble. 22. annuel. 23. bon, *good.* 24. bonne. 25. le soin, *care.* 26. le moineau, *sparrow.* 27. immense. 28. américaine. 29. la honte, *shame.*

64. Exercise on § 38: mark the long vowels in §§ 59–63.

65. General exercise on §§ 16–38, 53–54: 1. édifier, *to edify.* 2. redresser, *to straighten.* 3. l'hôpital, *hospital.* 4. l'enjeu, *stake.* 5. l'enfant, *child.* 6. l'intuition. 7. ce, *this.* 8. le câble. 9. je tiendrai, *I shall hold.* 10. la position. 11. illicite. 12. orgueilleux, *proud.* 13. orgueilleuse. 14. il retiendra, *he will retain.* 15. chez, *at the house of.* 16. nous aimâmes, *we loved.* 17. loin, *far.* 18. le moine, *monk.* 19. la dévotion. 20. emprunter, *to borrow.* 21. craindre, *to fear.* 22. l'œuvre, *work.* 23. bravo. 24. le casier, *pigeonholes.* 25. pêcher, *to fish.* 26. pécher, *to sin.* 27. la cuisine, *kitchen.* 28. la Chartreuse. 29. le veau, *calf.* 30. la reine, *queen.* 31. trois, *three.* 32. l'écueil, *reef.* 33. la caution. 34. ceindre, *to gird.* 35. il achèterait, *he would buy.* 36. l'hésitation. 37. nous craignons, *we fear.* 38. tu as, *thou hast.* 39. le paquet, *package.* 40. la feuille, *leaf.* 41. le bec, *beak.* 42. cacher, *to conceal.* 43. Laure. 44. nouer, *to tie.* 45. la pioche, *pickaxe.* 46. fort, *strong.* 47. le balai, *broom.* 48. vermeil, *vermilion.* 49. sevrer, *to wean.* 50. ils viendront, *they will come.* 51. ils tiennent, *they hold.* 52. patiente. 53. coquin, *rascal.* 54. coquine. 55. vous montâtes, *you mounted.*

66. General exercise on §§ 16–56: 1. la théière, *teapot.* 2. l'hôte, *host.* 3. le bilan, *balance-sheet.* 4. isoler, *to isolate.* 5. le blâme. 6. défunte, *defunct.* 7. le cahier, *note-book.* 8. la groseille, *currant.* 9. la ceinture, *belt.* 10. la frayeur, *fright.* 11. le Maine. 12. l'essai, *trial.* 13. j'achèterai, *I shall buy.* 14. l'émotion. 15. les vœux, *vows.* 16. vous racontâtes, *you related.* 17. la peine, *pain.* 18. la science. 19. le grelot, *bell.* 20. vous tiendriez, *you would hold.* 21. jaser, *to chatter.* 22. l'œillade, *glance.* 23. l'avoine, *oats.* 24. l'aumône, *alms.* 25. ils mènent, *they drive.* 26. le fléau, *scourge.* 27. le soin, *care.* 28. tu aurais, *thou wouldst have.* 29. seize, *sixteen.* 30. chrétien, *Christian.* 31. le jouet, *plaything.* 32. le tien, *thine.* 33. nous crions, *we cry.* 34. exigeant, *exacting.* 35. le tuyau, *pipe.* 36. décemment, *decently.* 37. quel, *what.* 38. la canaille, *rabble.* 39. le poignard, *poniard.* 40. le moyen, *means.* 41. égayer, *enliven.* 42. et, *and.* 43. il réveille, *he awakens.* 44. la tienne, *thine.* 45. la cuisine, *kitchen.* 46. la femme, *woman.* 47. que, *that.* 48. fuir, *to flee.* 49. elle est, *she is.* 50. l'indignité. 51. la fosse, *ditch.* 52. six hommes, *six men.* 53. nous enrageons, *we are enraged.* 54. le paysage, *landscape.* 55. le secrétaire. 56. il maintiendra, *he will maintain.* 57. anxieux, *anxious.* 58. le lycéen. 59. monsieur. 60. mieux, *better.* 61. l'invitation. 62. l'affût, *hiding-place.* 63. guère, *scarcely.* 64. chrétienne, *Christian.* 65. prodigue, *prodigal.* 66. tu ennuyeras, *thou wilt bore.* 67. l'entrain, *spirit.* 68. second. 69. tu feras, *thou wilt do.* 70. vous êtes, *you are.* 71. l'engin. 72. le combat. 73. huit, *eight.* 74. l'ennemi. 75. le bastion. 76. l'innovation. 77. succinct. 78. partir, *to leave.* 79. la reclusion. 80. faisant, *doing.* 81. Paul. 82. le rayon, *beam.* 83. ressortir, *to come out again.* 84. solennel, *solemn.* 85. anxieuse, *anxious.* 86. chasser, *to hunt.* 87. ensuite, *then.* 88. vous tîntes, *you held.* 89. balayant, *sweeping.* 90. le pillage. 91. nous eûmes, *we had.* 92. toi, *thee.* 93. la besogne, *task.*

94. quand il faisait, *when he was making*. 95. neuf œufs, *nine eggs*. 96. je devrai, *I shall have to*. 97. le poil, *hair*. 98. l'obscurité. 99. le beffroi, *belfry*. 100. vous creuseriez, *you would dig*. 101. ayant, *having*. 102. ardemment, *ardently*. 103. le voisin, *neighbor*. 104. inanimé. 105. il brille, *he shines*. 106. l'emprunt, *loan*. 107. vous sembliez, *you seemed*. 108. l'examen, *examination*. 109. à jeun, *fasting*. 110. l'accueil, *welcome*. 111. l'excuse. 112. la main, *hand*. 113. le geai, *jay*. 114. le succès, *success*. 115. baiser, *to kiss*. 116. baisser, *to lower*. 117. le fusil, *gun*. 118. l'absinthe. 119. qu'il aille! *let him go!* 120. l'ail, *garlic*. 121. l'aile, *wing*. 122. le mécanicien. 123. le pigeon. 124. la pilule, *pill*. 125. le feuillet, *leaf*. 126. soixante, *sixty*. 127. deuxième, *second*. 128. le poison. 129. le poisson, *fish*.

1. PREMIÈRE LEÇON [prəmjɛːr ləsõ]

L'ÉCOLE

I

1. Gender. All French nouns are either masculine or feminine[1]

2. Number. Nouns usually form the plural by adding **s** to the singular: **école** [ekɔl], *school;* **écoles** [ekɔl], *schools*.[2]

3. Definite Article: *the*.

le [lə] before a masculine noun: **le livre** [liːvr], *the book*
la [la] before a feminine noun: **la table** [tabl], *the table*
l' [l] before either a masculine or a feminine noun beginning with a vowel[3]: **l'élève** [lelɛːv], *the pupil;* **l'école** [lekɔl], *the school*
les [le] before *all* plurals: **les écoles** [le zekɔl[4]], *the schools;* **les livres** [le liːvr], *the books*

4. VOCABULARY

le cahier [kaje], the copy-book
le crayon [krɛjõ], the pencil
dans [dã], in, into
de [də], of, from
devant [dəvã], in front of
l'école [lekɔl] (*f.*), the school
l'élève [lelɛːv] (*m.*, *f.*), the pupil
est [ɛ], is
la fenêtre [fənɛːtr], the window
le livre [liːvr], the book

[1] The gender of all nouns must be learned.

[2] This final **s** being silent, singulars and plurals are pronounced alike. If the singular ends in **s**, the singular and plural are identical: **le Français**, *the Frenchman:* **les Français**, *the Frenchmen.*

[3] Nouns beginning with **h** are treated as if they began with a vowel: **l'histoire** [listwaːr], *the story.* There are a few exceptions; none occur in the lessons of this book. See Introduction, § 56, 4.

[4] See Introduction, §55.

le maître d'école [mɛːtrə dekɔl], the school-master
la maîtresse d'école [mɛtrɛs dekɔl], the school-mistress
où [u], where
la salle de classe [sal də klas], the class-room
sur [syːr], on
la table [tabl], the table

5. DRILL

1. The copy-book; the window	**Le cahier; la fenêtre**
2. The copy-books; the windows	**Les cahiers; les fenêtres**
3. The pupil; the school	**L'élève; l'école**
4. The pupils; the schools	**Les élèves; les écoles**
5. The book; the books	**Le livre; les livres**
6. The class-room The class-rooms	**La salle de classe** **Les salles de classe**
7. The school; the schools	**L'école; les écoles**
8. The school-masters	**Les maîtres d'école**
9. The school-mistress	**La maîtresse d'école**
10. In the school; in front of the class	**Dans l'école; devant la classe**
11. On the table; in front of the tables	**Sur la table; devant les tables**
12. On the copy-book; in the copy-books	**Sur le cahier; dans les cahiers**
13. On the pencil; in the pencils	**Sur le crayon; dans les crayons**
14. Of the pupil; of the school	**De l'élève; de l'école**
15. Of the window; of the school-mistress	**De la fenêtre; de la maîtresse d'école**

6. Reading. Où est la salle de classe? La salle de classe est dans l'école. Où est la maîtresse d'école? La maîtresse d'école est dans la salle de classe devant les élèves. La table de la maîtresse d'école est devant la fenêtre. Où est l'élève? L'élève est devant la maîtresse. Où est le livre de l'élève? Le livre de l'élève est sur les cahiers. Le crayon de l'élève est dans le livre. La maîtresse est devant les élèves. Le livre de la maîtresse est sur la table. Le crayon de l'élève est sur le cahier dans la salle de classe. Où est le maître

d'école? Le maître d'école est devant la table. Le cahier est sur la table. La table est devant la fenêtre. La fenêtre est dans la salle de classe. La salle de classe est dans l'école.

L'élève est devant la maîtresse

7. Résumé for Oral Work. Reproduce what you can of the *Reading* with the aid of the following hints, or use them to construct similar matter:

salle de classe; maîtresse d'école; table; élève; livre; crayon; maîtresse d'école; livre; crayon de l'élève; maître d'école; cahier; table; fenêtre; salle de classe.

8. Oral Drill. 1. the pencil; the pencils. 2. the window; the windows. 3. the pupil; the pupils. 4. the book; the books. 5. the table; the tables. 6. the copy-book; the copy-books. 7. the school; the schools. 8. in front of the school-master; in front of the school-mistress. 9. the book of the pupil; the table of the school-mistress. 10. on the pencils; in the books.

II

9. DIALOGUE

1. Where is the pupil?	**Où est l'élève?**
2. The pupil is in the class-room	**L'élève est dans la salle de classe**
3. Where is the class-room?	**Où est la salle de classe?**

4. The class-room is in the school	La salle de classe est dans l'école
5. Where is the school-master?	Où est le maître d'école?
6. The school-master is in front of the pupils	Le maître d'école est devant les élèves
7. Where is the table of the mistress?	Où est la table de la maîtresse?
8. The table of the mistress is in front of the window	La table de la maîtresse est devant la fenêtre
9. Where is the copy-book of the pupil?	Où est le cahier de l'élève?
10. The copy-book of the pupil is on the table	Le cahier de l'élève est sur la table
11. Where is the pencil of the pupil?	Où est le crayon de l'élève?
12. The pencil of the pupil is in the book	Le crayon de l'élève est dans le livre
13. Where is the book?	Où est le livre?
14. The book is on the table	Le livre est sur la table
15. Where is the table?	Où est la table?
16. The table is in front of the windows	La table est devant les fenêtres

10. Conversation. A student puts one of the following questions into French; another student answers it, using the *Reading* (not the *Dialogue*) as a basis:

1. Where is the school-master? 2. Where is the pupil? 3. Where is the book of the pupil? 4. Where is the table? 5. Where is the pencil of the school-mistress?

11. Theme. The pupil is in front of the window. The window is in the class-room. The class-room is in the school. The school-mistress is in front of the tables. The book of the pupil is on the table. The copy-book of the pupil is on the books. The pencil is in the copy-book. Where is the school-master? The school-master is in front of the table of the pupil.

12. **Exercises.** *A*. Put the definite article, first singular, then plural, before the following:

school-master	copy-book	pencil	pupil	window
school-mistress	school	class-room	table	book

B. Use the above words in sentences.

2. DEUXIÊME LEÇON [døzjɛm ləsõ]

L'ÉCOLE

I

13. **à** [a] = *at, to* **de** [də] = *of, from*

à+**le** contracts to **au** [o]; *never say* à le
de+**le** contracts to **du** [dy]; *never say* de le
à+**les** contracts to **aux** [o]; *never say* à les
de+**les** contracts to **des** [de]; *never say* de les

au livre, *to the book;* **du** livre, *of the book*
à la leçon, *to the lesson;* **de la** leçon, *of the lesson*
à l'élève, *to the pupil;* **de l'**élève, *of the pupil*
aux livres, *to the books;* **des** livres, *of the books*

14. To ask a question, put **est-ce que** [ɛs kə], *is it (true) that*, before the affirmative form.[1]

Le livre est sur la table, The book is on the table
Est-ce que le livre est sur la table? Is the book on the table?

15. VOCABULARY

l'anglais [lãglɛ] (*m.*), English
le banc [bã], bench
ce [sə], this, that, it
difficile [difisil], difficult
donne [dɔn], gives
l'étude [letyd] (*f.*), study
facile [fasil], easy
le français [frãsɛ], French

[1] Exception: With **où?** follow the order learned in Lesson I.

l'histoire[1] [listwa:r] (*f.*), story
la leçon [ləsõ], lesson
non [nõ], no
oui [wi], yes
le devoir [dəvwa:r], paper, exercise
la plume [plym], pen
le professeur [prɔfɛsœ:r], professor, the teacher
sont [sõ], are

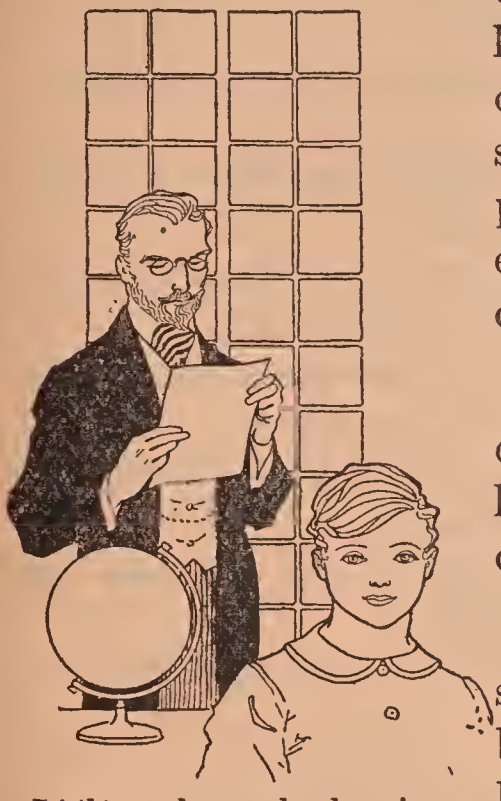
16. DRILL

1. To the professor; to the lesson	Au professeur; à la leçon
2. To the professors; to the lessons	Aux professeurs; aux leçons
3. Of the paper; of the lesson	Du devoir; de la leçon
4. Of the papers; of the lessons	Des devoirs; des leçons
5. To the pupil; to the school	À l'élève; à l'école
6. To the pupils; to the schools	Aux élèves; aux écoles
7. Of the pupil; of the school	De l'élève; de l'école
8. Of the pupils; of the schools	Des élèves; des écoles
9. Of the window; of the study	De la fenêtre; de l'étude
10. Of the table; of the papers	De la table; des papiers
11. To the bench; of the story	Au banc; de l'histoire
12. Of the stories; to the papers	Des histoires; aux devoirs
13. To the story; of the English	À l'histoire; de l'anglais
14. Of the windows; to the studies	Des fenêtres; aux études
15. To the pen; of the lesson	À la plume; de la leçon
16. To the stories; of the benches	Aux histoires; des bancs
17. To the professor; to the window	Au professeur; à la fenêtre
18. To the English; of the pen	À l'anglais; de la plume
19. To the pens; of the studies	Aux plumes; des études

17. Reading. Le professeur est dans l'école devant la fenêtre. Les bancs des élèves sont dans la salle de classe devant la table du professeur. Le professeur donne les livres aux élèves. Est-ce que l'étude du français est facile? L'étude de l'anglais est facile. L'étude du français est

[1] See p. 25, note 3.

difficile. La leçon sur l'histoire dans le livre est facile. Le professeur donne la plume à l'élève. L'élève donne le devoir au professeur. Le devoir de l'élève est dans le cahier. Les cahiers des élèves de l'école sont sur les bancs devant la table du professeur. Est-ce que la leçon des élèves est difficile? Non, la leçon des élèves est facile.



L'élève donne le devoir au professeur

18. Résumé.[1] Professeur; bancs; donne; étude du français; anglais; leçon; plume; devoir; cahiers; leçon difficile.

19. Oral Drill. 1. to the professor; of the professor. 2. to the bench; to the benches. 3. of the benches; of the bench. 4. of the pen; of the pens. 5. to the pen; to the pens. 6. to the pencil of the mistress; to the pencils of the masters. 7. of the study of the lessons; to the study of the lesson. 8. to the story of the mistress; of the stories of the masters. 9. to the bench of the pupil; to the pupils of the school. 10. to the pens of the pupils; to the benches of the school.

II

20. DIALOGUE

1. Is the study of (the) English easy?	**Est-ce que l'étude de l'anglais est facile?**
2. Yes, the study of (the) English is easy	**Oui, l'étude de l'anglais est facile**

[1] For all **Résumés** follow instructions on p. 27, § 7.

3. Is the study of (the) French easy?	Est-ce que l'étude du français est facile?
4. No, the study of (the) French is difficult	Non, l'étude du français est difficile
5. Where are the copy-books of the pupils?	Où sont les cahiers des élèves?
6. The copy-books of the pupils are on the bench	Les cahiers des élèves sont sur le banc
7. Does the professor give the pens to the pupils?	Est-ce que le professeur donne les plumes aux élèves?
8. No, the professor gives the papers to the pupils	Non, le professeur donne les devoirs aux élèves
9. Is the study of the story difficult?	Est-ce que l'étude de l'histoire est difficile?
10. Yes, the study of the story is difficult	Oui, l'étude de l'histoire est difficile
11. Where are the books of the pupils?	Où sont les livres des élèves?
12. The books of the pupils are on the table of the professor	Les livres des élèves sont sur la table du professeur

21. Conversation.[1] 1. Where are the papers of the pupils? 2. Is the story difficult? 3. Does the pupil give the book to the mistress? 4. Does the master give the pen to the pupil? 5. Is the study of (the) English easy? 6. Are the books on the table? 7. Does the mistress give the pens to the master? 8. Does the master give the lesson to the pupils? 9. Is the study difficult? 10. Where are the lessons?

22. Theme. The professor is in the class-room of the school. The pupils of the school are in front of the table of the professor. The professor gives the books to the pupils. The lesson is difficult. The study of the story is easy. The pupil gives the paper to the professor. The papers of the

[1] For all Conversations follow instructions on p. 28, § 10.

pupils are on the table of the professor in front of the window. The pens are on the papers.

23. Exercises. *A.* Put *of the* and *to the* before the following words, first singular, then plural:

pen	school	bench	paper	pupil	school-master
story	lesson	study	professor	window	copy-book

B. Use the above words in sentences.

C. A student asks questions (based on *A*); another answers.

3. TROISIÈME LEÇON [trwazjɛm]

L'ÉCOLE

I

24. Present Indicative of First Conjugation (verbs ending in **–er** in the infinitive): **donner** [dɔne], *to give*.

je donn **e** [ʒə dɔn], I give[1]
(tu donn **es** [ty dɔn], thou givest[2])
il donn **e** [il dɔn], he gives[3]
elle donn **e** [ɛl dɔn], she gives[3]

nous donn **ons** [nu dɔnɔ̃], we give
vous donn **ez** [vu dɔne], you give
ils donn **ent** [il dɔn], they (*m.*) give
elles donn **ent** [ɛl dɔn], they (*f.*) give

25. Note that the three singular forms and the third person plural are pronounced alike, the endings **–e, –es, –ent** being silent.

[1] **Je donne** = *I give, I do give, I am giving.*

[2] **Tu** is used only in speaking to children or intimate friends. Always use the **vous** form for *you*.

[3] *It* = **il** or **elle** according to the gender of the noun to which it refers: **il** (*le livre*) **est difficile; elle** (*la leçon*) **est facile.**

26. Interrogative.

Est-ce que je donne? [ɛs kə ʒə dɔn], do I give?[1]
(**donnes-tu?** [dɔn ty], dost thou give?)
donne-t-il?[2] [dɔn til], does he give?
donne-t-elle?[2] [dɔn tɛl], does she give?
donnons-nous? [dɔnɔ̃ nu], do we give?
donnez-vous? [dɔne vu], do you give?
donnent-ils? [dɔn til], do they (*m.*) give?
donnent-elles? [dɔn tɛl], do they (*f.*) give?

27. MODELS FOR QUESTIONS

(Use this table for reference until it is learned)

1. If the subject is a *pronoun* (except **je**[3]):	**Donnez-*vous*?** *or* **Est-ce que *vous* donnez?**
2. If the subject is a *noun:*	**Est-ce que le *livre* est sur la table?**[4]
3. With **où?** and some other interrogative words:	***Où* est le livre?**[5]

28. Indefinite Article: *a, an.*

un [œ̃] before a masculine noun: **un banc,** *a bench*
une [yn] before a feminine noun: **une étude,** *a study*

29. VOCABULARY

l'allemand [lalmɑ̃] (*m.*), German	**et** [e], and
après [aprɛ], after	**le mot** [mo], word
aussi [osi], also	**parler** [parle], to speak
chanter [ʃɑ̃te], to sing	**la phrase** [frɑːz], sentence
la classe [klas], class	**prononcer** [prɔnɔ̃se], to pronounce

[1] The **est-ce que** form is to be used in the first person singular, and *may* be used in all persons and numbers. For elision of **e** before a vowel (**est-ce qu'il** donne?), see Introduction, § 56.

[2] When **il** or **elle** follows its verb, **t** (between hyphens) intervenes, if the verb ends in a vowel.

[3] See § 26, and Note 1.

[4] *Or* **Le livre est-il sur la table?** (less used).

[5] *Or* **Le livre où est-il?** (less used). This construction or the **est-ce que** form *must* be used if the subject of the verb is a noun and the verb has a direct object.

Où est-ce que le maître trouve le livre? / **Le maître où trouve-t-il le livre?** } Where does the master find the book?

30. DRILL

1. Do you sing? I sing	Chantez-vous? je chante
2. Do you give? we give	Donnez-vous? nous donnons
3. Does he speak? she speaks	Parle-t-il? elle parle
4. They (*m.*) give; we speak	Ils donnent; nous parlons
5. Does she speak? he speaks	Parle-t-elle? il parle
6. Do you speak? I speak	Parlez-vous? je parle
7. Do I pronounce?	Est-ce que je prononce?
8. I pronounce; he pronounces	Je prononce; il prononce
9. Do they (*m.*) pronounce? they (*f.*) pronounce	Prononcent-ils? elles prononcent
10. Of a sentence; of a pupil	D'une[1] phrase; d'un! élève
11. Of a pencil; of a story	D'un[1] crayon; d'une! histoire
12. Do I sing?	Est-ce que je chante?
13. They give; they (*f.*) speak	Ils donnent; elles parlent
14. Does he pronounce? does she speak?	Prononce-t-il? parle-t-elle?
15. Do I give?	Est-ce que je donne?
16. Do the pupils speak to the masters?	Est-ce que les élèves parlent aux maîtres?
17. Does the class sing?	Est-ce que la classe chante?

31. Reading. Le maître est dans l'école. Les élèves sont dans l'école aussi. Le maître est devant la fenêtre. Les élèves sont devant les bancs. Le maître donne la leçon d'allemand aux élèves. Après la leçon d'allemand, il donne la leçon de français aux élèves. Les élèves prononcent les mots et les phrases du livre après le maître. Est-ce que vous chantez après la leçon de français? Nous chantons après la leçon d'anglais. Est-ce que la classe chante? Oui, elle chante. Donnez-vous les cahiers au maître? Oui, nous donnons les cahiers au maître, et les devoirs aussi. Est-ce que l'élève prononce les phrases de l'histoire? Il prononce les phrases de l'histoire après le maître. Est-ce que l'étude de l'allemand est difficile? Oui, elle est difficile. Est-ce que l'étude de l'anglais est difficile aussi? Non, elle est facile.

[1] See Introduction, § 56.

15 Parlez-vous français au maître? Oui, nous parlons français au maître après la classe.

32. Résumé. Maître; élèves; leçon d'allemand; après; prononcent; chantez?; classe chante; donnez?; prononce; étude de l'allemand; de l'anglais; parler français.

33. Oral Drill. 1. a copy-book; a pupil. 2. a school; a window. 3. a professor; a class-room. 4. a school-mistress; a table. 5. a bench; a study. 6. to pronounce; I give; he pronounces. 7. she speaks; they pronounce; we sing. 8. to sing; we give; you pronounce. 9. they speak; she sings; I speak. 10. Does the master speak of the pupils? 11. Does the mistress speak to the pupil? 12. Does the professor give the papers to the class? 13. Does he pronounce?; do I give?; does she speak? 14. Do they (*m.*) pronounce?; do you sing? 15. Do we speak?; do they (*f.*) sing?

II

34. DIALOGUE

1. Do you speak French to the professor?	**Parlez-vous français au professeur?**
2. No, I speak German to the professor	**Non, je parle allemand au professeur**
3. Does the professor speak German to the pupils?	**Est-ce que le professeur parle allemand aux élèves?**
4. No, the pupils speak German to the professor	**Non, les élèves parlent allemand au professeur**
5. Do the pupils pronounce the sentences after the professor?	**Est-ce que les élèves prononcent les phrases après le professeur?**
6. Yes, they pronounce the words and the sentences of the book after the professor	**Oui, ils prononcent les mots et les phrases du livre après le professeur**
7. Do we speak of the mistress to the pupil?	**Est-ce que nous parlons de la maîtresse à l'élève?**

8. No, the pupil speaks of you to the mistress	Non, l'élève parle de vous à la maîtresse
9. Does the master give a French lesson (lesson of French) to the pupils?	Est-ce que le maître donne une leçon de français aux élèves?
10. No, he gives an English lesson (lesson of English) to the pupils	Non, il donne une leçon d'anglais aux élèves
11. Does the class pronounce the words after the master?	Est-ce que la classe prononce les mots après le maître?
12. No, it pronounces the sentences after the master	Non, elle[1] prononce les phrases après le maître
13. Do you sing at (the) school?	Est-ce que vous chantez à l'école?
14. We sing after the lesson	Nous chantons après la leçon
15. Does the master sing also?	Est-ce que le maître chante aussi?
16. The master and the mistress sing	Le maître et la maîtresse chantent

35. Conversation. 1. Are the pupils in front of the window? 2. Do you sing after the lesson? 3. Does she pronounce the sentences? 4. Does the master give the lesson to the pupil? 5. Do I give the pencil to the mistress? 6. Do we sing? 7. Do you pronounce the words also? 8. Does the class sing? 9. Do they speak to the pupils? 10. Do you speak to the mistress?

36. Theme. Where is the professor? Is he in the school? Yes, he is in the class-room in front of the pupils. Does the professor give the lesson to the pupils? Yes, he gives the lesson to the pupils, and they pronounce the words and the sentences of the lesson. Does the class pronounce the sentences after the professor? Yes, they pronounce the sentences and the words also. Is the study of (the) German difficult? Yes, and the study of (the) French is difficult also. The study of (the) English is easy. Do you sing after the lessons? Yes, we sing after the lessons.

[1] See page 33, footnote 3.

37. Exercises. *A.* Conjugate:

I give a book. Do I speak of the school?
I sing the words. Do I speak to a professor?

B. Students fill in the blanks in the following; other students answer the questions:

1. Est-ce que — est dans l'école?
2. Est-ce que — sont dans la salle de classe?
3. — -vous les mots?

C. Put the indefinite article before the following words:

pen	school-mistress	school	class	lesson
bench	professor	word	sentence	paper

D. Verb Drill on **donner**, **parler**, **chanter**, **prononcer** in the affirmative and in the interrogative: § 480, *A*.

4. QUATRIÈME LEÇON [katriɛm]

L'ÉCOLE

I

38. Feminine Adjectives are formed by adding **e** to the masculine (the final consonant being *now* pronounced — but not the **e**).[1]

Il est petit [pəti], He is small
Elle est petite [pətit], She is small

39. Plural of Adjectives. Adjectives form the plural like nouns. See p. 25, § 2, note 2.

[1] Adjectives ending in **–e** remain unchanged:

Le livre est facile [fasil], The book is easy
La leçon est facile [fasil], The lesson is easy

Il est petit [pəti], He is small
Elle est petite [pətit], She is small
Ils sont petits [pəti], They are small
Elles sont petites [pətit], They are small

40. Position of Adjectives.

1. Adjectives usually follow their noun:

la leçon facile, the easy lesson
la leçon difficile, the difficult lesson

2. Adjectives of **color** and **nationality** *always* follow their nouns:

la langue française, the French language
l'encre noire, the black ink

3. Many short common adjectives precede their nouns; such are **grand** and **petit** which are used in this lesson.

4. Position of adjectives must in the main be learned by observation.

41. VOCABULARY

bleu [blø], blue
chercher [ʃɛrʃe], to seek, look for
la cour [ku:r], yard
l'encre [lã:kr] (*f.*), ink
l'enfant [lãfã] (*m.*, *f.*), child
enseigner [ãsɛɲe], to teach
la fille [fi:j], daughter, girl
le garçon [garsõ], boy
grand [grã], big, large
jouer [ʒwe],[1] to play
la langue [lã:g], language
noir [nwa:r], black
petit [pəti], small, little
rouge [ru:ʒ], red
trouver [truve], to find
vert [vɛ:r], green

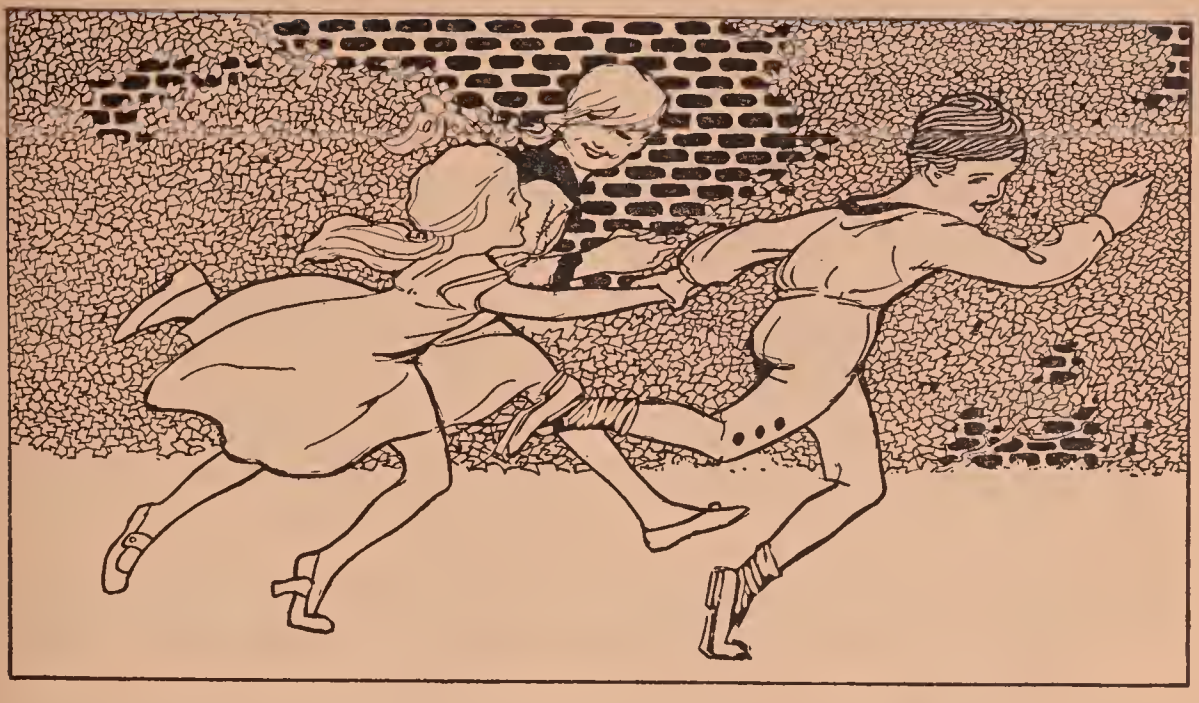
42. DRILL

1. The small boy; the small yard — **Le petit garçon; la petite cour**
2. The small boys; the large rooms — **Les petits garçons; les grandes salles**
3. The easy lesson; the difficult books — **La leçon facile; les livres difficiles**

[1] See p. 11, § 29, Note, on pronunciation [ʒwe] and [ʒə ʒu].

4. The French sentences; the French words	Les phrases françaises; les mots français
5. The big sentences; the small words	Les grandes phrases; les petits mots
6. The red pencil; the red pencils	Le crayon rouge; les crayons rouges
7. The big girls; the little boys	Les grandes filles; les petits garçons
8. Of the blue ink; to the green inks	De l'encre bleue; aux encres vertes
9. To the English language; of the big windows	À la langue anglaise; des grandes fenêtres
10. To the German sentences; of the blue copy-book	Aux phrases allemandes; du cahier bleu
11. Of the green ink; of the French language	De l'encre verte; de la langue française
12. To the difficult lesson; of the English child	À la leçon difficile; de l'enfant anglais
13. To a small child; of the French word	À un petit enfant; du mot français
14. Of the difficult languages; of the daughter of the master	Des langues difficiles; de la fille du maître
15. To a big yard; to the black ink	À une grande cour; à l'encre noire

43. Reading. Les enfants sont à l'école. Les grandes filles et les grands garçons sont dans la salle de classe; les petits garçons et les petites filles jouent dans la cour. Le maître est devant la fenêtre. Il enseigne la langue française à la classe des petites filles et la langue allemande à la classe des grandes filles. Il enseigne la langue anglaise aux petits garçons et la langue allemande aux petites filles. Il donne un livre français au petit élève français et un livre allemand à la petite élève anglaise. L'élève français trouve le livre français facile et l'élève anglaise trouve le livre allemand difficile. La fille du maître est dans la salle de classe.



Les petits garçons et les petites filles jouent dans la cour

44. Résumé. Enfants; grandes filles et grands garçons; petits; petites; maître; langue française, allemande, anglaise; donne; élève français; élève anglaise; fille du maître.

45. Oral Drill. 1. Does he pronounce the English words? 2. The children pronounce the French sentences. 3. Do you give the blue copy-books to the pupils? 4. We give the English books to the daughter of the professor. 5. Does the girl speak to the German school-master? 6. She is looking for the green ink. 7. Do the boys and the girls play in the big yard? 8. The boys play in the yard in front of the class-room. 9. Are you teaching the French language to the child? 10. I am teaching[1] the English language to the little girl. 11. Where is the red ink? 12. Does the master give the easy lessons to the pupils?

II

46. DIALOGUE

1. Where are the children?	**Où sont les enfants?**
2. The big boy is in the yard and the little girl is in the class-room	**Le grand garçon est dans la cour et la petite fille est dans la salle de classe**

[1] For elision of **e** of **je** with **enseigner** (**j'enseigne**), see Introduction, § 56.

3. Does the little girl play?	Est-ce que la petite fille joue?
4. No, she is looking for the ink and the pencil	Non, elle cherche l'encre et le crayon
5. Is she looking for the red ink?	Est-ce qu'elle cherche l'encre rouge?
6. No, the red ink is on the table of the master; she is looking for the black ink	Non, l'encre rouge est sur la table du maître; elle cherche l'encre noire
7. Does she find the pencil?	Est-ce qu'elle trouve le crayon?
8. Yes, she finds the blue pencil and the black ink	Oui, elle trouve le crayon bleu et l'encre noire
9. Does the master teach the English language to the big boys?	Est-ce que le maître enseigne la langue anglaise aux grands garçons?
10. No, he teaches the French language to the little girls and the German language to the big boys	Non, il enseigne la langue française aux petites filles et la langue allemande aux grands garçons
11. Are the lessons difficult?	Est-ce que les leçons sont difficiles?
12. The lessons of the little girls are easy; the lessons of the big boys are difficult. The little girls find the French books easy, and the big boys find the German books difficult	Les leçons des petites filles sont faciles; les leçons des grands garçons sont difficiles. Les petites filles trouvent les livres français faciles, et les grands garçons trouvent les livres allemands difficiles

47. Conversation. 1. Do you play in the class-room? 2. Do you teach the English language? 3. Where are the masters? 4. Do you give the French books to the German pupils? 5. Is the little girl French? 6. Do you find the French books difficult? 7. Are you seeking the German pupils? 8. Is the French book difficult? 9. Does the English pupil give the pencils to the little girls? 10. Where are the pupils?

48. Theme. We find the little German children in the big yard of the school. The little boys are playing with the

little girls. Is the school-master in the yard with the pupils? No, he is teaching the French language to the big girls and to the big boys. Is the French language difficult? No, it is easy. The daughter of the master is looking for the red ink. She finds the blue ink, the green ink and the black ink. She gives the blue ink to the pupils. Are they playing in the yard? The little children are playing in the yard. Do the big children play in the yard? They play in the yard after the class. They are pronouncing the difficult words and the difficult sentences after the master.

49. Exercises. *A*. Use the indefinite article and an appropriate adjective with the following words:

yard	girl	boy	sentence
story	ink	bench	book

B. With these same words use the plural of the definite article and an adjective.

C. Conjugate:

I teach the French language. Do I look for the red ink?

D. Drill on present indicative of **chercher** and **enseigner**: § 480, *A*.

5. CINQUIÈME LEÇON [sɛ̃kjɛm]

Review

I

50. 1. On the table; before the pupils. 2. In the yards; of the tables. 3. To the pupil; of the schools. 4. To the class-room; of the copy-books. 5. To the pencils; of the pupils. 6. Of the masters; to the windows. 7. Of the yard; to the professor. 8. To the lessons; of a yard. 9. Of a pen; of a paper. 10. Of the pens; to the professors. 11. To a

bench; of the study. 12. Of the studies; to the story. 13. To the stories; do you sing? 14. We sing; does he speak? 15. They speak; do I pronounce? 16. You pronounce; do we give? 17. He gives; she sings. 18. Does he speak?; does she give? 19. The English language; the big window. 20. The green ink; of the little girl. 21. To the black ink; of the small child. 22. Are you seeking? I am finding. 23. Do you teach German? We teach English. 24. Does she play? She sings. 25. Do you speak to the school-mistress? 26. They look for the daughters of the professor.

II

51. 1. Where is the school? 2. The pencil is on the table. 3. The little boy is in front of the window. 4. The French book is on the table. 5. Does the daughter of the professor give the papers to the children? 6. Do you find the study of the lesson difficult? 7. The study of the French language is easy. 8. The copy-books of the pupils are on the bench. 9. The mistress gives the little books to the pupils. 10. I am looking for the blue ink in the class-room. 11. The boys in front of the window are singing. 12. A little girl is pronouncing the German words after the master. 13. The study of the stories is difficult. 14. Are you looking for the red ink? 15. I find the French books. 16. The boy is playing in front of the house. 17. Does the master teach the English language to the little girls? 18. We teach the French language to the big boys. 19. Is the professor teaching the German language to the English pupils in the class-room? 20. The daughters of the school-mistress are playing in the yard of the school. 21. Are you looking for the girls? 22. No, they are looking for the boys. 23. We find the study of (the) English easy and the study of (the) French difficult.

52. Oral. Students talk about *The School*, asking and answering questions.

6. SIXIÊME LEÇON [sizjɛm]

LA MAISON

I

53. Imperative = indicative with pronoun omitted: **vous donnez,** *you give;* **donnez!** *give!*

54. Negative. *Not* = **ne** + *verb* + **pas** [nə . . . pɑ]:

I do not give, etc.	*Do I not give?* etc.
je ne donne pas	**est-ce que je ne donne pas?**
(tu ne donnes pas)	**(ne donnes-tu pas?)**
il ne donne pas	**ne donne-t-il pas?**
nous ne donnons pas	**ne donnons-nous pas?**
vous ne donnez pas	**ne donnez-vous pas?**
ils ne donnent pas	**ne donnent-ils pas?**

55. VOCABULARY

la chambre [ʃɑ̃:br], room
entrer (dans) [ɑ̃tre (dɑ̃)], to enter
fermer [fɛrme], to close, shut
la maison [mɛzɔ̃], house
manger [mɑ̃ʒe], to eat

la porte [pɔrt], door
la salle à manger [sal a mɑ̃ʒe], dining-room
le salon [salɔ̃], living-room
sonner [sɔne], to ring
la sonnette [sɔnɛt], bell

je peux [ʒə pø], I can
il peut [il pø], he can
nous pouvons [nu puvɔ̃], we can
vous pouvez [vu puve], you can

je veux [ʒə vø], I wish, want
il veut [il vø], he wishes
nous voulons [nu vulɔ̃], we wish
vous voulez [vu vule], you wish

56. DRILL

1. I give; I do not give	**Je donne; je ne donne pas**
2. We enter; we do not enter	**Nous entrons; nous n'entrons pas**
3. She rings; she does not ring	**Elle sonne; elle ne sonne pas**
4. We give; we don't give	**Nous donnons; nous ne donnons pas**
5. You give; don't you give?	**Vous donnez; ne donnez-vous pas?**
6. They enter; they don't enter	**Ils entrent; ils n'entrent pas**

7. He can; he cannot	**Il peut; il ne peut pas**
8. We wish; we don't wish	**Nous voulons; nous ne voulons pas**
9. Do you wish? don't you wish?	**Voulez-vous? ne voulez-vous pas?**
10. Can he? can't he?	**Peut-il? ne peut-il pas?**
11. Give! don't give!	**Donnez! ne donnez pas!**
12. Eat! don't eat!	**Mangez! ne mangez pas!**
13. She wishes; doesn't she wish?	**Elle veut; ne veut-elle pas?**
14. I ring; I don't ring	**Je sonne; je ne sonne pas**
15. He shuts the door	**Il ferme la porte**
16. Doesn't he shut the door?	**Ne ferme-t-il pas la porte?**
17. Close the doors!	**Fermez les portes!**
18. Don't close the windows!	**Ne fermez pas les fenêtres!**
19. Enter the house!	**Entrez dans la maison!**
20. Don't enter the living-room!	**N'entrez pas dans le salon!**

57. Reading. Les petits garçons jouent devant la maison. Une grande fille est dans le salon et une petite fille est dans la salle à manger. La petite fille dans la salle à manger cherche le petit garçon, et la grande fille dans le salon cherche la petite fille dans la salle à manger. Le petit garçon veut entrer. La petite fille ferme la porte. Le petit garçon ne peut pas entrer. Il sonne. Le maître de la maison est dans une grande chambre. Il entre dans le salon. Il veut sonner. Il cherche la sonnette. Il ne trouve pas la sonnette. — Voulez-vous[1] chercher les enfants? — Je cherche les enfants. Je trouve les petites filles, mais je ne peux pas trouver les petits garçons. — Est-ce que les petites filles ne sont pas dans la salle à manger? — Non, elles sont dans la cour devant la maison.

Il sonne

[1] **Voulez-vous?** = *do you wish?* or *will you?*

58. Résumé. Petits garçons; grande fille; petite fille; cherche; veut entrer; ferme; ne peut pas; maître; entre; sonner; chercher les enfants; je trouve, où?

59. Oral Drill. 1. You give. 2. You don't speak. 3. Sing! 4. We give. 5. We don't teach. 6. Don't pronounce! 7. They seek. 8. They don't close the door. 9. She eats. 10. She doesn't give. 11. Does she ring? 12. Does she not teach? 13. Do you pronounce? 14. Don't you sing? 15. Do I eat? 16. Do I not ring? 17. He can play. 18. Can he find? 19. Can she not give? 20. She cannot speak. 21. Do you wish? 22. We wish. 23. Does he wish? 24. He wishes. 25. He does not wish to give the ink. 26. Does she not wish to give the papers? 27. Eat! 28. Don't eat! 29. Enter the school! 30. Don't enter the house! 31. Do you enter the room? 32. You do not enter the living-room. 33. Close the windows! 34. Don't shut the door of the house! 35. Ring the bell! 36. Do they ring the bell? 37. Do you not want the ink? 38. I want the ink. 39. Give the ink to the boys!

II

60. DIALOGUE

1. Do you wish to enter the house?	**Voulez-vous[1] entrer dans la maison?**
2. I wish to enter the house, and the little boy does not wish to ring	**Je veux entrer dans la maison, et le petit garçon ne veut pas sonner**
3. Will you close the door?	**Voulez-vous fermer la porte?**
4. I do not wish to close the door; the little girl wishes to enter the room	**Je ne veux pas fermer la porte; la petite fille veut entrer dans la chambre**
5. Where is the master of the house?	**Où est le maître de la maison?**

[1] See p. 46, note 1.

6. He is not in the living-room, he is in the dining-room	**Il n'est pas dans le salon, il est dans la salle à manger**
7. Will you not enter the dining-room?	**Ne voulez-vous pas entrer dans la salle à manger?**
8. No, I do not wish to eat	**Non, je ne veux pas manger**
9. Where are the children?	**Où sont les enfants?**
10. The children are not in the house	**Les enfants ne sont pas dans la maison**
11. Will you look for the little boy and the little girl? They are in front of the house	**Voulez-vous chercher le petit garçon et la petite fille? Ils sont devant la maison**
12. I cannot find the little girl	**Je ne peux pas trouver la petite fille**
13. Is she not in the living-room? Look! Ring!	**Est-ce qu'elle n'est pas dans le salon? Cherchez! Sonnez!**
14. Can't you find the bell?	**Ne pouvez-vous pas trouver la sonnette?**
15. I cannot find the bell	**Je ne peux pas trouver la sonnette**

61. Conversation (*answer in the negative*). 1. Are the little boys and the little girls in the yard? 2. Is the little girl in the house? 3. Does she close the door of the dining-room? 4. Can you enter the house? 5. Can we find the bell? 6. Do you wish to enter the room? 7. Does he wish to look for the children? 8. Does he find the little girls? 9. Are they not in the dining-room? 10. Can you not find the bell on the table?

62. Theme. We do not find the little children. They are playing in the yard. Are the girls not entering the house? The little girls are in the living-room, and the little boys are in the dining-room. Ring! Do you not wish to ring? You cannot close the door; find the bell, ring! The schoolmaster can close the door. Do you not wish to eat? Enter the dining-room! We do not wish to enter the dining-room; we wish to look for the little boys and the little girls in the yard in front of the house. Can you not find the children?

63. Exercises. *A.* Conjugate:

I do not enter the house. Do I not close the door?]

B. Translate: We do not give; do they (*f.*) not give?; you do not give; do I not give?; she does not give. Replace *give* by *close, ring, teach.*

C. One student asks questions (using § 57 as a basis); another answers in the negative.

D. Verb Drill on **fermer, sonner, enseigner** in the negative: § 480, *A.*

7. SEPTIÊME LEÇON [sɛtjɛm]

LA MAISON

I

64. Present Indicative of *avoir* [avwaɪr], ***to have.***

I have, etc.	*I have not*, etc.
j'ai [ʒe]	**je n'ai pas** [ʒə ne pɑ]
(**tu as** [ty a])	(**tu n'as pas** [ty na pɑ])
il a [il a]	**il n'a pas** [il na pɑ]
nous avons [nu zavõ]	**nous n'avons pas** [nu navõ pɑ]
vous avez [vu zave]	**vous n'avez pas** [vu nave pɑ]
ils ont [il zõ]	**ils n'ont pas** [il nõ pɑ]

65. Relative Pronoun (Persons and Things)

Subject **qui** [ki] Object **que**[1] [kə]

L'enfant *qui* **est ici est petit,** The child *who* is here is small
L'enfant *que* **vous cherchez est petit,** The child *whom* you seek is small
La maison *qui* **est ici est petite,** The house *that* (*which*) is here is small
La maison *que* **vous cherchez est petite,** The house *that* (*which*) you seek is small

66. Il y a [il ja] = *there is, there are;* **voilà** [vwala] = *there is!, there are!*

[1] For elision, see Introduction, § 56: L'enfant qu'il cherche.

Il y a un livre sur la table, There is a book on the table (*statement of fact*)

Voilà un livre sur la table! *There* is a book on the *table!* (*pointing out object; exclamation*)

Voilà les livres que je veux! *There* are the books that I want!

67. VOCABULARY

la bonne [bɔn], maid
la chaise [ʃɛːz], chair
la chambre à coucher [ʃãːbr a kuʃe], bed-room
la cuisine [kyizin], kitchen
la cuisinière [kyizinjɛːr], cook
déjeuner [deʒœne], to breakfast
dîner [dine], to dine
en bas [ã bɑ], downstairs
en haut [ã o], upstairs
l'escalier [lɛskalje] (*m.*), stairs
ici [isi], here
Jean [ʒã], John
là [la], there
monter [mɔ̃te], to mount, go up
très [trɛ], very

68. DRILL

1. The book which I have	**Le livre que j'ai**
2. The house which is here	**La maison qui est ici**
3. The rooms which they have	**Les chambres qu'ils ont**
4. The child who is downstairs	**L'enfant qui est en bas**
5. Have we a small house?	**Avons-nous une petite maison?**
6. You have not a large house	**Vous n'avez pas une grande maison**
7. Have you a small table?	**Est-ce que vous avez une petite table?**
8. The table which I have is large	**La table que j'ai est grande**
9. Has he a chair?	**Est-ce qu'il a une chaise?**
10. He has no bench	**Il n'a pas de banc**
11. Have they no bed-room?	**N'ont-ils pas de chambre à coucher?**[1]
12. They have a bed-room	**Ils ont une chambre à coucher**
13. Have you a room upstairs?	**Avez-vous une chambre en haut?**
14. I have a room downstairs	**J'ai une chambre en bas**
15. Is there a boy here?	**Est-ce qu'il y a un garçon ici?**

[1] *No* = **pas de** (with **ne** before the verb).

16. There is a boy here	**Il y a un garçon ici**
17. Is there a pen here?	**Est-ce qu'il y a une plume ici?**
18. There are the pens!	**Voilà les plumes!**
19. Has the maid a chair?	**Est-ce que la bonne a une chaise?**
20. She has no chair	**Elle n'a pas de chaise**

69. Reading. Nous avons une grande maison. Il y a une sonnette à la porte. Sonnez! J'ai une chambre en haut qui est très petite, et Jean a une chambre en bas devant

Voilà la bonne qui monte l'escalier!

la salle à manger. Les enfants dînent dans la petite chambre. La bonne dîne là aussi. Nous dînons ici dans la salle à manger qui est très grande, et la cuisinière dîne dans la cuisine. Voilà la bonne qui monte l'escalier! Elle n'a pas une grande chambre.[1] La chambre qu'elle a est en haut devant les chambres à coucher des enfants. Elle cherche le petit garçon qui est en haut et qui ne veut pas déjeuner. Il y a un grand escalier devant le salon, et il y a un petit escalier devant la cuisine. Montez l'escalier et entrez dans la petite chambre qui est là! Le livre que vous cherchez est sur la table. Il y a un livre aussi sur le banc qui est devant la fenêtre. Fermez la fenêtre et la porte aussi!

[1] Translate *not a*. What would **Elle n'a pas de chambre** be? See p. 50, note.

70. Résumé. Grande maison; sonnette; petite chambre; Jean; enfants dînent; bonne; dînons; cuisinière; bonne monte; chambre qu'elle a; cherche; grand escalier, petit escalier; montez, entrez; livre; fermez!

71. Oral Drill. 1. Has he? 2. Has he not? 3. He has not. 4. We have. 5. We have not. 6. You have not. 7. They have. 8. She has not. 9. Has she not? 10. Have you not? 11. Have we not? 12. I have. 13. I have not. 14. They have not. 15. Have I not? 16. Has he? 17. Has she not? 18. She has. 19. Have we? 20. We have not. 21. Have you? 22. Have you not? 23. You have not. 24. There is. 25. Is there? 26. Are there? 27. There are. 28. There's the book! 29. The book which they have. 30. There are the books on the table! 31. The books which we have are upstairs. 32. There are the boys in the kitchen! 33. The boys who are breakfasting here are in the dining-room. 34. Can you find the book that you are looking for? 35. There is the table! 36. Look for the boys whom you wish to find. 37. We have no book (*see p. 50, Note*).

II

72. DIALOGUE

1. Have you a large house?	**Avez-vous une grande maison?**
2. We have a very large house	**Nous avons une très grande maison**
3. Is there a large living-room in the house?	**Est-ce qu'il y a un grand salon dans la maison?**
4. Yes, there is a living-room which is very large	**Oui, il y a un salon qui est très grand**
5. Where is the kitchen?	**Où est la cuisine?**
6. There is the kitchen which you are looking for!	**Voilà la cuisine que vous cherchez!**
7. And where is the dining-room?	**Et où est la salle à manger?**
8. Here. Do you wish to dine?	**Ici. Voulez-vous dîner?**

9. Yes, I wish to dine	Oui, je veux dîner
10. Enter! There is the table in front of the window! Can you find a chair?	Entrez! Voilà la table devant la fenêtre! Pouvez-vous trouver une chaise?
11. There is no chair here. Here is a very large chair!	Il n'y a pas de[1] chaise ici. Voici une très grande chaise!
12. There is a little chair! The chair that you have is the chair of the cook	Voilà une petite chaise! La chaise que vous avez est la chaise de la cusinière
13. Where are the cook and the maid? Are they upstairs?	Où sont la cuisinière et la bonne? Sont-elles en haut?
14. The cook is in the bed-room upstairs	La cuisinière est dans la chambre à coucher en haut
15. And where is the maid? Is she not here?	Et où est la bonne? Est-ce qu'elle n'est pas ici?
16. No. There is the maid who is going up the stairs, there in front of the kitchen!	Non. Voilà la bonne qui monte l'escalier, là devant la cuisine!
17. Has she a French book?	Est-ce qu'elle a un livre français?
18. The book that she has is German	Le livre qu'elle a est allemand

73. Conversation. 1. Where is the dining-room? 2. Does the maid go upstairs? 3. Does she go up the stairs? 4. Does the little boy wish to eat? 5. Do you enter the room of the children? 6. Where is the book that I wish? 7. Is there a book on the chair? 8. Where is the bench? 9. Do we not close the doors? 10. Where is the boy who closes the windows of the class-room?

74. Theme. There is a small chair in the bed-room which is upstairs and a very large table in the dining-room which is downstairs. The maid who is in the bed-room is German; the cook who is in the kitchen is French. The children who breakfast and dine in the dining-room go up the stairs to the bed-room where they play. The maid does not dine in the bed-room, she dines in the kitchen. The

[1] See p. 50, note.

cook, whom you are looking for, dines there also. The little boys and the little girls, whom I am looking for, do not play in the kitchen.

75. Exercises. *A*. Drill on present indicative of **avoir:** § 480, *A*, first positive, then negative.

B. Finish the following sentences:

La bonne qui . . . La maison qui . . .
La bonne que . . . La maison que . . .

8. HUITIÈME LEÇON [yitjɛm]

LE JARDIN

I

76. Irregular Feminine Adjectives:

	beautiful	*good*	*which? what?*
Masc.	**beau**[1] [bo]	**bon** [bɔ̃]	**quel?**[2] [kɛl]
Fem.	**belle** [bɛl]	**bonne** [bɔn]	**quelle?** [kɛl]

	old	*white*
Masc.	**vieux** [vjø]	**blanc** [blɑ̃]
Fem.	**vieille** [vjɛːj]	**blanche** [blɑ̃ːʃ]

77. Present Indicative of Second Conjugation (verbs ending in **–ir** in the infinitive): **finir** [finiːr], *to finish*.[3]

je fin **is** [fini], *I finish*
(tu fin **is** [fini], *thou finishest*)
il fin **it** [fini], *he finishes*

nous fin **issons** [finisɔ̃], *we finish*
vous fin **issez** [finise], *you finish*
ils fin **issent** [finis], *they finish*

[1] The plural of **beau** is **beaux.**
[2] Used only before nouns; not for *which* or *what* standing alone.
[3] All regular verbs ending in **-ir** are conjugated like **finir.**

78 VOCABULARY

choisir [ʃwaziːr], to choose
la fleur [flœːr], flower
l'herbe [lɛrb] (*f.*), grass
le jardin [ʒardɛ̃], garden
mais [mɛ], but
l'œillet [lœjɛ] (*m.*), pink
pousser [puse], to grow
la rose [roːz], rose
saisir [sɛziːr], to seize
le travail [travaːj], work
la tulipe [tylip], tulip

79. DRILL

1. Which garden? which gardens?	**Quel jardin? quels jardins?**
2. Which rose? which roses?	**Quelle rose? quelles roses?**
3. The beautiful rose; the beautiful garden	**La belle rose; le beau jardin**
4. The white pink; the white rose	**L'œillet blanc; la rose blanche**
5. A good master; a good mistress	**Un bon maître; une bonne maîtresse**
6. What masters? what mistresses?	**Quels maîtres? quelles maîtresses?**
7. The old master; the old mistress	**Le vieux maître; la vieille maîtresse**
8. We finish; I finish	**Nous finissons; je finis**
9. He finishes; they finish	**Il finit; ils finissent**
10. You finish; you don't finish	**Vous finissez; vous ne finissez pas**
11. He seizes; they seize	**Il saisit; ils saisissent**
12. Seize! do not seize!	**Saisissez! ne saisissez pas!**
13. Are you finishing? finish!	**Finissez-vous? finissez!**
14. What house? the old house	**Quelle maison? la vieille maison**
15. Which boys? which girls?	**Quels garçons? quelles filles?**
16. Find the flower! which flower?	**Trouvez la fleur! quelle fleur?**
17. Which tulip? the beautiful tulip	**Quelle tulipe? la belle tulipe**
18. What flowers do you choose?	**Quelles fleurs choisissez-vous?**
19. We choose the white tulips	**Nous choisissons les tulipes blanches**
20. Finish the lesson!	**Finissez la leçon!**

Elle donne une rose blanche à la petite fille

80. Reading. La bonne vieille maîtresse de la maison et la petite fille finissent le travail qui n'est pas difficile. La maîtresse entre dans le jardin qui est devant la maison. Les enfants qu'elle cherche entrent dans le jardin aussi. Elle donne une rose blanche à la petite fille et un œillet blanc au petit garçon. La bonne vieille maîtresse n'est pas belle, mais le bon vieux maître est beau. Il entre dans le jardin. Les enfants finissent le travail qu'il donne. Ils entrent dans le jardin. Ils choisissent les fleurs qui poussent dans le jardin. Ils donnent les tulipes rouges au bon vieux maître et les roses blanches à la bonne cuisinière qui n'entre pas dans le jardin. Ils choisissent les fleurs qui poussent dans l'herbe verte. Ils ferment la porte du jardin et ils entrent dans la salle à manger. La cuisinière finit le travail dans la salle à manger. Le petit garçon cherche la sonnette. Il ne peut pas trouver la sonnette. La petite fille trouve la sonnette. Elle sonne. La bonne entre. Elle saisit le petit garçon. Voulez-vous entrer dans la chambre à coucher? — Non, nous voulons manger. — Vous ne pouvez pas manger. Fermez la porte! Voilà le vieux maître qui cherche un petit garçon et une petite fille!

81. Résumé. Finissent le travail; entre dans le jardin; enfants aussi; donne rose blanche, œillet blanc; belle, beau; enfants finissent; jardin; fleurs qui; donnent tulipes, roses; fleurs, herbe; ferment; entrent; cuisinière; garçon.

82. Oral Drill. 1. Which work? 2. The good work. 3. Which flowers? 4. The beautiful flowers. 5. Is the boy good? 6. The girl is good. 7. The beautiful garden. 8. The beautiful girl. 9. Does he finish the lesson? 10. He does not finish the lesson. 11. Find the master! 12. Which master? 13. The old master. 14. Seek the good mistress! 15. Which mistress? 16. The old mistress. 17. Choose a flower. 18. I choose a white pink. 19. Which roses do you

choose? 20. I choose the white roses. 21. Do you finish the work? 22. We finish the work. 23. Do they finish the lessons? 24. They do not finish the lessons. 25. Do not finish the work!

II

83. DIALOGUE

1. Which garden are you looking for?	Quel jardin cherchez-vous?
2. I am looking for the garden which is in front of the white house. Is there a door here?	Je cherche le jardin qui est devant la maison blanche. Est-ce qu'il y a une porte ici?
3. There is the door! You can enter the garden	Voilà la porte! Vous pouvez entrer dans le jardin
4. What is the flower that you have?	Quelle est la fleur que vous avez?
5. The flower that I have is a pink. It is very beautiful; it is white	La fleur que j'ai est un œillet. Il est très beau; il est blanc
6. What flowers do you choose?	Quelles fleurs choisissez-vous?
7. I choose the black tulips. Is there no black tulip in this beautiful garden?	Je choisis les tulipes noires. Est-ce qu'il n'y a pas de tulipe noire dans ce beau jardin?
8. No, choose the roses! They are very beautiful. They do not grow in the green grass, but they grow in front of the stairs. Will you enter the house?	Non, choisissez les roses! Elles sont très belles. Elles ne poussent pas dans l'herbe verte, mais elles poussent devant l'escalier. Voulez-vous entrer dans la maison?
9. I do not wish to enter the house; the school-master is there. Does he dine there?	Je ne veux pas entrer dans la maison; le maître d'école est là. Est-ce qu'il dîne là?
10. Yes, and he is not very good, but the school-mistress is very good	Oui, et il n'est pas très bon, mais la maîtresse d'école est très bonne

11. Is he old?	**Est-ce qu'il est vieux?**
12. He is very old, but she is not very old	**Il est très vieux, mais elle n'est pas très vieille**

84. Conversation. 1. Do you not finish the work which I give? 2. Where are the children? 3. Do you give the beautiful flowers to the boy? 4. Where do the white roses grow? 5. Are the roses that grow in front of the house white? 6. What flowers do you choose? 7. Where is the bell? 8. Can't you find the bell? 9. Do you not close the door of the dining-room? 10. Which pupils finish the work?

85. Theme. The children finish the work which the good old school-mistress gives. They enter the garden. They play. They look for the flowers which are growing there. What flowers are you looking for? We are looking for the white flowers. There are the white flowers! They are very beautiful. Do you choose the pinks? No, we choose the tulips; where are they? They are in the old garden in front of the house. Which house? The white house which is there in front of you. Can you find the door? There is a bell there. Ring! The roses do not grow in the green grass, but the pinks grow there.

86. Exercises. *A*. Use the definite article and the correct form of 'beautiful,' 'good,' 'old,' 'white,' with the following words: 'house,' 'book,' 'chair,' 'pencil.'

B. Drill on present indicative of **finir**, **choisir**, **saisir**: § 480, *A*, first positive, then negative, then interrogative.

C. Conjugate:

I seize the old book.	I do not choose the white flower.
What lesson do I finish?	Do I not choose the beautiful flowers?

9. NEUVIÈME LEÇON [nœvjɛm]

LA FAMILLE

I

87. Possessive Adjectives:

	my	*his, her, its*	*our*	*your*	*their*
Masc.	**mon** [mɔ̃][1]	**son** [sɔ̃]	**notre** [nɔtr]	**votre** [vɔtr]	**leur** [lœːr]
Fem.	**ma** [ma]	**sa** [sa]	**notre** [nɔtr]	**votre** [vɔtr]	**leur** [lœːr]
Pl.	**mes** [me]	**ses** [se]	**nos** [no]	**vos** [vo]	**leurs** [lœːr]

88. Note that these words agree with the nouns *following* them: **son livre,** *his* or *her book;* **sa plume,** *his* or *her pen;* **ses plumes,** *his* or *her pens.*

89. Possession. The French have no form corresponding to *John's, the maid's;* they say *of John, of the maid.*

le livre de Jean (the book of John), John's book
la chambre de la bonne (the room of the maid), the maid's room

90. VOCABULARY

l'ami [lami] (*m.*), friend
avec [avɛk], with
le cousin [kuzɛ̃], **la cousine** [kuzin], cousin
la famille [famiːj], family
la femme [fam], woman, wife
la fille [fiːj], daughter
le fils [fis], son
le frère [frɛːr], brother
le mari [mari], husband
Marie [mari], Mary
la mère [mɛːr], mother
l'oncle [lɔ̃ːkl], uncle
ou [u], or
le parent [parɑ̃], relative
le père [pɛːr], father
Pierre [pjɛːr], Peter
la sœur [sœːr], sister
la tante [tɑ̃ːt], aunt
tout (*m. pl.* **tous**) [tu], all, every

91. DRILL

1. His daughter or my daughter — **Sa fille ou ma fille**
2. Her son and our son — **Son fils et notre fils**
3. His father and your brother — **Son père et votre frère**

[1] *Thy* is **ton** [tɔ̃], **ta** [ta], **tes** [te].

4. Her father or her mother	**Son père ou sa mère**
5. His relatives or his mother	**Ses parents ou sa mère**
6. Our brothers and your sisters	**Nos frères et vos sœurs**
7. My aunt and Peter's sisters	**Ma tante et les sœurs de Pierre**
8. Mary's sisters and my uncles	**Les sœurs de Marie et mes oncles**
9. Our relatives and your aunts	**Nos parents et vos tantes**
10. Your sons or our son	**Vos fils ou notre fils**
11. There's their cousin!	**Voilà leur cousin!**
12. There's her husband!	**Voilà son mari!**
13. Where are my sisters?	**Où sont mes sœurs?**
14. There's Mary's rose!	**Voilà la rose de Marie!**
15. Where is Mary's cousin (*f.*)?	**Où est la cousine de Marie?**
16. There's Peter's wife!	**Voilà la femme de Pierre!**
17. Where are their relatives?	**Où sont leurs parents?**
18. There is your family!	**Voilà votre famille!**
19. All my sons; all the ink	**Tous mes fils; toute l'encre**
20. All the paper; all your daughters	**Tout le papier; toutes vos filles**

92. Reading. Voilà ma maison et mon jardin! Entrez, mes amis! Voilà mon frère et sa femme dans le jardin avec

Voilà ma maison et mon jardin

leurs enfants! Ils ont une très belle fille. Leur fils, qui joue là dans l'herbe, est l'ami de mes fils. Ils jouent avec leur petit cousin. Leur cousine Marie cherche une belle rose blanche. Son petit frère Pierre est là aussi. Il cherche un

œillet blanc. Pierre et sa sœur ne trouvent pas la rose blanche et le petit œillet blanc. Tous mes œillets et toutes mes roses sont rouges. Voilà Pierre qui choisit une fleur! Sa sœur choisit une fleur aussi. La rose de Marie est très belle et l'œillet de Pierre est très beau aussi. Il y a un grand banc dans le jardin devant la maison. Toute notre famille est là devant l'escalier, mon bon père, ma bonne mère, notre oncle et ses enfants, et mes bonnes vieilles tantes. Devant le banc, dans l'herbe verte où poussent les belles tulipes, sont leurs fils et leurs filles, tous nos petits cousins et toutes nos petites cousines. Votre femme, vos fils et nos filles sont là aussi. Marie donne sa fleur à votre femme, et Pierre donne son œillet à une de vos filles.

93. Résumé. Voilà; entrez; frère et . . .; fille, fils . . . ami; jouent avec; Marie; Pierre; cherche; ne trouvent pas; œillets; roses; choisit; sœur; banc; famille; poussent; Marie donne; Pierre donne.

94. Oral Drill. 1. Your son and my daughter. 2. His mother; her father. 3. Her brother; his sister. 4. His aunt; her uncles and my mother. 5. Her uncle; his aunts and their father. 6. Our son and his sisters. 7. Her husband and his daughter. 8. His wife and her father. 9. Your aunts and their cousins. 10. Where is Peter's brother? 11. Is Mary's husband in the garden? 12. Are your cousins and their sisters in the house? 13. Do your friends dine with their relatives?

II

95. DIALOGUE

1. Where are your children?	**Où sont vos enfants?**
2. One of my sons is here. He is playing with his sister in front of my house	**Un de mes fils est ici. Il joue avec sa sœur devant ma maison**
3. Where is your son Peter?	**Où est votre fils Pierre?**

4. He is in your garden with his cousin Mary	Il est dans votre jardin avec sa cousine Marie
5. The little girl there, on the bench, is she his cousin?	La petite fille là, sur le banc, est-elle sa cousine?
6. Yes, Mary is the daughter of my sister	Oui, Marie est la fille de ma sœur
7. Does your little Peter look for a flower in our garden?	Est-ce que votre petit Pierre cherche une fleur dans notre jardin?
8. Yes, he wants to give a red rose to his cousin Mary	Oui, il veut donner une rose rouge à sa cousine Marie
9. I have no red rose in my garden	Je n'ai pas de rose rouge dans mon jardin
10. Are your tulips and your pinks red?	Est-ce que vos tulipes et vos œillets sont rouges?
11. My tulips are not blue, all my pinks are red and all my roses are white	Mes tulipes ne sont pas bleues, tous mes œillets sont rouges et toutes mes roses sont blanches
12. Mary, do you want a white rose?	Marie! voulez-vous une rose blanche?
13. Yes, my friend, your white roses are very beautiful	Oui, mon ami, vos roses blanches sont très belles
14. Do you wish to give your flowers to our aunts or to their friends?	Voulez-vous donner vos fleurs à nos tantes ou à leurs amis?
15. I want to give my flowers to my mother	Je veux donner mes fleurs à ma mère
16. There are all my pinks and all my roses. Choose!	Voilà tous mes œillets et toutes mes roses. Choisissez!
17. I choose one of your beautiful roses and one of your beautiful pinks. I have Peter's beautiful red flower here	Je choisis une de vos belles roses et un de vos beaux œillets. J'ai la belle fleur rouge de Pierre ici

96. Conversation. 1. Where are your old friends? 2. Where are their children? 3. Do your sons play with my son? 4. Does their cousin play with my little boys? 5. Is

my cousin with her husband in the garden? 6. Have they all my pinks or all your roses? 7. Are there no beautiful flowers in your brother's garden? 8. Is there a beautiful white tulip in her garden? 9. Where are my sister's children? 10. Where do his sister's sons and daughters play?

97. Theme. No, my cousin John is not my uncle's son, he is my aunt's son. My cousin Mary is my uncle's daughter. My uncle Peter is not Mary's mother's husband; Mary and John are not brother and sister. My father's family is very large; all his relatives are here in our house; his brother and his brother's wife are here with all their children. All my cousins (*m.*) are not handsome (see § 76, note 1), but all my cousins (*f.*) are beautiful. Have you a large family also?

98. Exercises. *A.* Put the adjectives *our, my, your, his, their, her,* first singular, then plural, before the following:

cousin (*f.*) friend daughter son aunt uncle

B. Use the following words in sentences:

all relative with or father mother

10. DIXIÈME LEÇON [dizjɛm]

Review

I

99. 1. Finish your lessons! 2. Don't enter my house! 3. Have you her flower? 4. We have not his pen. 5. We enter their house. 6. They find our house. 7. Shut the door! 8. I shut the door. 9. Which garden do you seek? 10. We seek his garden. 11. Does she finish her work? 12. We do not finish our work. 13. Which books do you choose? 14. I choose your books. 15. Have you not

my pen? 16. I have your pencil. 17. Have you John's chair? 18. John's wife has my chair. 19. Give my daughter your rose! 20. We give our roses to your sons. 21. Has her husband a brother? 22. I have a sister. 23. Has she not his pen? 24. We have no pencil. 25. They have your copy-books. 26. Give our books to the boys! 27. We have not his pens. 28. Have you no flowers? 29. They have her flowers. 30. There is a rose! 31. There is a bell in my room. 32. Finish the work! 33. Do not finish your work! 34. They have a beautiful house. 35. His mother and her sisters are looking for our aunt.

II

100. 1. Choose one of our beautiful flowers! 2. Which rose does John's brother wish? 3. There is an old chair in her kitchen or in her living-room. 4. His good old aunt is finishing our work. 5. There are my blue flowers; there is your beautiful little pink! 6. Which French books have your friends? 7. Have you not my sister's pencils? 8. Does her father choose the house which I wish? 9. Mary's relatives do not finish the books which are not English. 10. Finish the lesson which you have! 11. Do not give my good pens to your sisters! 12. I am giving their old copy-books to my pupils. 13. His uncles are finishing their work. 14. Is the good old school-master her uncle or her father? 15. Is there a dining-room in front of their kitchen? 16. Do you close the door of your house? 17. Where are our children? 18. There are your sons with my daughters! 19. There is a good pen on his mother's table. 20. In which room of her house has she her books? 21. Ring, or look for my maid! 22. There is a cook in the kitchen of their house. 23. In what house? 24. There's the house! 25. Enter the dining-room!

11. ONZIÈME LEÇON [õzjɛm]

LA FAMILLE

I

101. Present Indicative of Third Conjugation (verbs ending in **-re** in the infinitive): **vendre**[1] [vã:dr], *to sell.*

je vend s [vã], I sell
(tu vend s [vã], thou sellest)
il vend[2] [vã], he sells

nous vend **ons** [vãdõ], we sell
vous vend **ez** [vãde], you sell
ils vend **ent** [vã:d], they sell

102. Interrogative Pronoun (*Persons*) = **qui?** *who? whom?*

Qui est là? *Who* is there?
Qui cherchez-vous? *Whom* are you looking for?
Á qui parlez-vous? *To whom* are you speaking?

103. VOCABULARY

le bâtiment [bɑtimã], building
bâtir [bɑti:r], to build
le chapeau (*pl.* **chapeaux**) [ʃapo], hat
descendre [dɛsã:dr], to go down
deux [dø], two
entendre [ãtã:dr], to hear
frapper [frape], to knock, strike
mettre [mɛtr], to put, put on
il met [mɛ], he puts (*irregular*)
rencontrer [rãkõtre], to meet
la rue [ry], street

104. DRILL

1. Who goes down? I go — **Qui descend? je descends**
2. Do you hear? we hear — **Entendez-vous? nous entendons**
3. Do they put? you put — **Mettent-ils? vous mettez**

[1] Regular verbs ending in **-re** are conjugated like **vendre**.

[2] If the consonant preceding the ending **-re** of the infinite of verbs of the third conjugation is not **d** or **t**, a **t** (which does not affect the pronunciation) is added in the third person singular: **rompre** [rõ:pr], *to break;* **il rompt** [rõ], *he breaks.*

4. Who sells? they sell	Qui vend? ils vendent
5. Whom do you meet?	Qui rencontrez-vous?
6. I don't hear; she hears	Je n'entends pas; elle entend
7. He does not build; we build	Il ne bâtit pas; nous bâtissons
8. Go down! don't go down!	Descendez! ne descendez pas!
9. They put; we put	Ils mettent; nous mettons
10. She goes down; she builds	Elle descend; elle bâtit
11. To whom do you speak?	À qui parlez-vous?
12. Whom are you looking for?	Qui cherchez-vous?
13. There is the boy whom they meet!	Voilà le garçon qu'ils rencontrent
14. Who meets his friends?	Qui rencontre ses amis?
15. To whom does he sell his building?	À qui vend-il [vɑ̃ til] son bâtiment?
16. To the friends who build	Aux amis qui bâtissent
17. We go up; you go down	Nous montons; vous descendez
18. Choose a good hat!	Choisissez un bon chapeau!
19. The hats we choose are beautiful	Les chapeaux que nous choisissons sont beaux
20. What books does he sell?	Quels livres est-ce qu'il vend?

105. Reading. Le père entend la petite fille qui frappe à la porte de sa chambre. Elle rencontre son père. Son père et elle saisissent leurs chapeaux. Ils mettent leurs chapeaux. Ils descendent l'escalier. Ils entrent dans le beau jardin. Ils choisissent toutes les belles fleurs qu'ils rencontrent dans l'herbe verte. Ils montent l'escalier. Ils ferment la porte. La mère de la petite fille n'est pas dans la maison, mais son frère est là. Elle rencontre sa sœur aussi. Le frère et la sœur descendent l'escalier avec leur père. Ils sont dans la rue. La rue est belle. Il y a un beau bâtiment là. Le beau bâtiment est une école. Les enfants bâtissent une belle maison dans leur jardin. Le garçon monte en haut chercher un ami. Il descend avec son ami et la sœur de son ami. Voilà deux garçons et deux filles! Ils jouent. La bonne cherche les enfants. Elle ne peut pas trouver Pierre et Marie qu'elle entend, mais qui ne sont pas dans le jardin. Où sont-ils?

Ils sont dans la rue. N'entendez-vous pas Pierre qui parle à Marie? Voilà le beau bâtiment qu'ils cherchent! La vieille tante d'un des enfants vend les fleurs qui sont devant la porte du beau bâtiment.

106. Résumé. Père entend; rencontre; chapeaux; mettent; escalier; jardin; fleurs; montent; mère, frère; descendent; rue; bâtiment; enfants, maison; monte; descend; jouent; bonne; Pierre, Marie; bâtiment; tante.

107. Oral Drill. 1. He hears. 2. We hear. 3. You don't meet. 4. Go down! 5. Don't build! 6. Choose! 7. Don't go down! 8. Which boys do you meet? 9. What lesson do you choose? 10. Do not build a house! 11. She sells the pens. 12. He meets a friend. 13. Are you building a large house? 14. I am building a little house. 15. Which house? 16. The little building which is in her garden. 17. The buildings which they sell. 18. To whom do you sell the hats? 19. Whom do you choose?

II

108. DIALOGUE

1. Whom do you hear? Who is knocking at my door?	**Qui entendez-vous? Qui frappe à ma porte?**
2. Your friend Peter	**Votre ami Pierre**
3. Whom are you looking for?	**Qui cherchez-vous?**
4. I am looking for my sister and my brother	**Je cherche ma sœur et mon frère**
5. With whom are they?	**Avec qui sont-ils?**
6. They are with my uncle and my aunt	**Ils sont avec mon oncle et ma tante**
7. Put on your hats, go down into the street and meet your relatives. I am going down with you	**Mettez vos chapeaux, descendez dans la rue et rencontrez vos parents! Je descends avec vous**

8. There is a fine building! Who is selling the flowers which are there?	Voilà un beau bâtiment! Qui vend les fleurs qui sont là?
9. I am selling the flowers. Which flowers do you choose?	Je vends les fleurs. Quelles fleurs choisissez-vous?
10. Do you wish to sell all the roses which are on the bench?	Est-ce que vous voulez vendre toutes les roses qui sont sur le banc?
11. I wish to sell all the white roses, but I do not sell the white pinks. Choose!	Je veux vendre toutes les roses blanches, mais je ne vends pas les œillets blancs. Choisissez!
12. Good! I choose the white roses	Bon! Je choisis les roses blanches
13. The flowers which you choose, my friend, are very beautiful. There are your white roses!	Les fleurs que vous choisissez, mon ami, sont très belles. Voilà vos roses blanches!
14. There is a flower there which I wish to have	Il y a une fleur là que je veux avoir
15. I do not hear. Which flower do you wish to have?	Je n'entends pas. Quelle fleur voulez-vous avoir?
16. I wish to have the beautiful flower which is there in front of the window. Do you hear?	Je veux avoir la belle fleur qui est là devant la fenêtre. Entendez-vous?
17. I hear. There are all your flowers, my child!	J'entends. Voilà toutes vos fleurs, mon enfant!

109. Conversation. 1. Whom do you hear at my door? 2. To whom do you sell the hats? 3. Do you go up or do you go down? 4. Where is the little boy's family? 5. With whom does his sister go down the stairs? 6. Who meets the little girls? 7. Do her brothers build and sell the houses? 8. Who builds and sells the beautiful buildings in your garden? 9. Do the children hear the boys who play in the street? 10. To whom do they sell the two beautiful buildings?

110. Theme. Who sells the ink to the girls? My daughters sell the black ink to the girls. To whom do you sell your pencils? I sell my pencils to the children. Whom is your aunt looking for? She is looking for her son who is in the garden. Who meets your cousin Mary at the school? My brother. Who is going down the stairs into the street? My sisters. What work are they finishing? They are finishing the work which my husband gives. Have you no work for your sisters? There are your sons! Can't you find your hats? Where do they put their hats?

111. Exercises. *A*. Conjugate:

I go down the stairs.	Do I hear the bell?
I do not sell the hats.	Do I not choose the old hat?

B. Drill on present indicative of **vendre**, **descendre**, **entendre**: § 480, *A*, first positive, then negative, then interrogative.

C. Complete the following: 'who . . .?' 'whom . . .?' 'of whom . . .?' A second student answers the questions.

12. DOUZIÈME LEÇON [duzjɛm]

LA RUE

I

112. Past Participle (endings of the three conjugations):

I. donn **é** [dɔne], *given*
II. fin **i** [fini], *finished*
III. vend **u** [vãdy], *sold*

113. Past Indefinite: *I have given, I have finished*, etc., are expressed in French as in English:

j'ai donné, I have given	**je n'ai pas donné**
(**tu as fini**, thou hast finished)	(**tu n'as pas fini**)

il a vendu, he has sold	**il n'a pas vendu**
nous avons bâti, we have built	**nous n'avons pas bâti**
vous avez entendu, you have heard	**vous n'avez pas entendu**
ils ont rencontré, they have met	**ils n'ont pas rencontré**

This is the most commonly used past tense in French and has a double function, corresponding not only to the English *I have given*, etc., but also to the English *I gave*, etc.[1]

114. VOCABULARY

le chemin [ʃəmɛ̃], road
le coin [kwɛ̃], corner
l'église [legli:z] (*f.*), church
entre [ɑ̃:tr], between
le magasin [magazɛ̃], store
maintenant [mɛ̃tnɑ̃], now
marcher [marʃe], to walk
le parc [park], park
perdre [pɛrdr], to lose
pour [pu:r], for
le tramway [tramwɛ], street-car
le trottoir [trɔtwa:r], sidewalk
la ville [vil], city
la voiture [vwaty:r], carriage, vehicle, wagon

115. DRILL

1. I have given; we have heard	**J'ai donné; nous avons entendu**
2. They have finished; he sold	**Ils ont fini; il a vendu**
3. She built; you sought	**Elle a bâti; vous avez cherché**
4. I taught; she seized	**J'ai enseigné; elle a saisi**
5. We lost; he sang	**Nous avons perdu; il a chanté**
6. You chose	**Vous avez choisi**
7. I pronounced; you lost	**J'ai prononcé; vous avez perdu**
8. She walked; we heard	**Elle a marché; nous avons entendu**
9. They (*f.*) met; he knocked	**Elles ont rencontré; il a frappé**
10. With whom did you build the store?	**Avec qui avez-vous bâti le magasin?**
11. Who spoke French?	**Qui a parlé français?**
12. Whom did you hear?	**Qui avez-vous entendu?**
13. To whom did you sell the books?	**À qui avez-vous vendu les livres?**

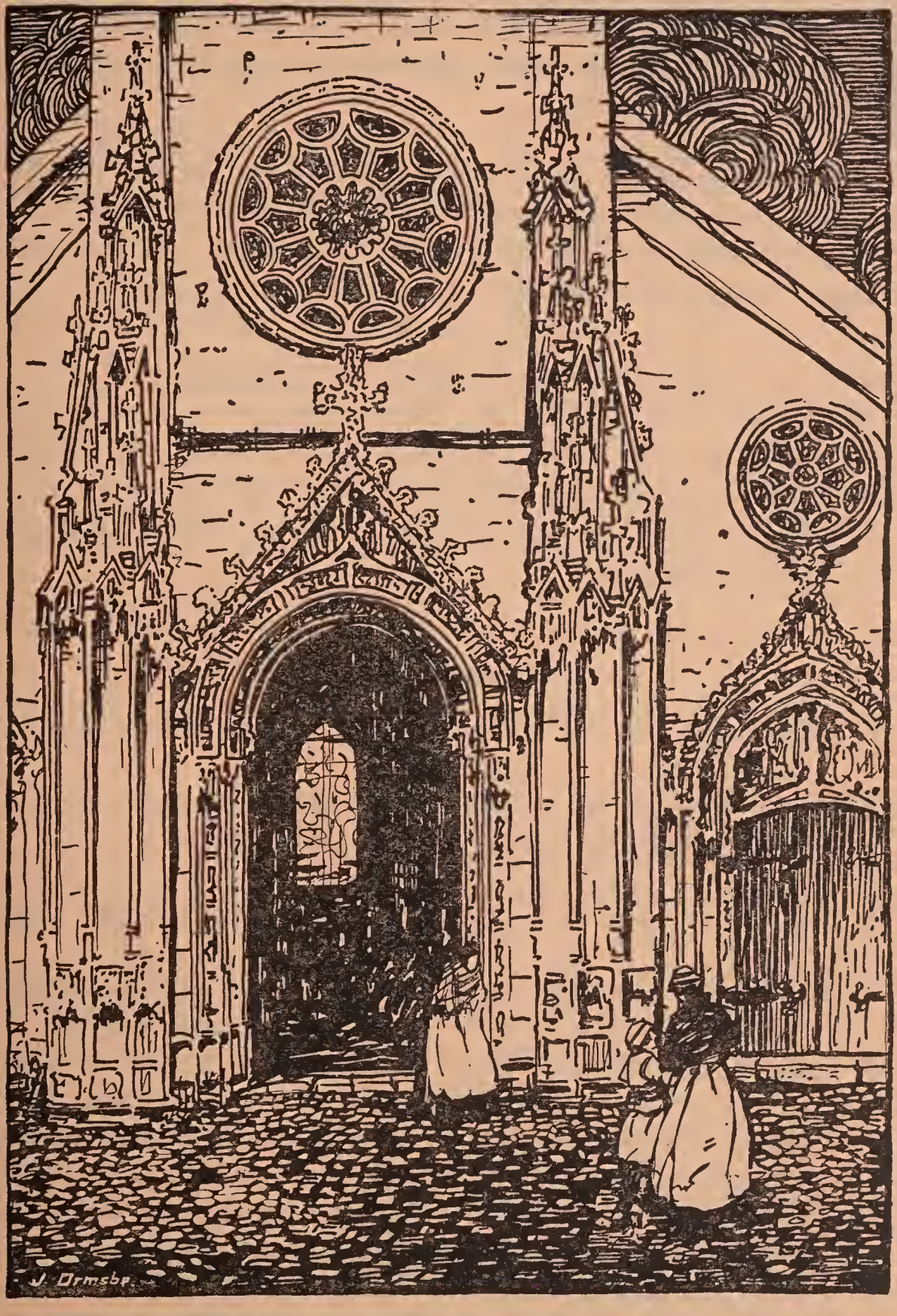
[1] The past participle agrees with the direct object *when the object precedes* (see § 362):

Quelle leçon avez-vous étudiée? What lesson have you studied?
But: **J'ai étudié la leçon.** I have studied the lesson.

14. I sold the books to the boys — **J'ai vendu les livres aux garçons**
15. Did the children meet their friends? — **Est-ce que les enfants ont rencontré leurs amis?**

116. Reading. J'ai cherché mes enfants en haut et en bas. J'ai rencontré ma petite fille au coin de la rue devant l'église, mais je n'ai pas trouvé mon fils Pierre. Où est-il maintenant? N'a-t-il pas entendu la sonnette? A-t-il monté l'escalier? N'a-t-il pas joué dans le jardin avec sa petite sœur Marie? Ou a-t-il joué dans la rue ou dans le parc? A-t-il perdu son chemin? A-t-il marché sur le trottoir devant les magasins ou dans la rue entre les tramways et les voitures? La ville est très grande et Pierre est très petit. Marie! Marie! cherchez votre petit frère! Il n'est pas dans le jardin. Il a descendu l'escalier; il a joué sur le trottoir; il a perdu son chemin. — Non, ma mère, Pierre n'est pas dans la rue; il a descendu l'escalier et il a joué sur le trottoir devant les tramways, mais il n'a pas perdu son chemin. Notre oncle, qui a bâti le grand magasin au coin de la rue devant l'église, a rencontré mon petit frère. Ils ont monté l'escalier. Mon bon oncle est dans le jardin; il n'a pas entendu la sonnette. Il a choisi une belle rose blanche pour sa femme et un œillet blanc qu'il a donné à ma cousine et qu'elle a perdu. Elle perd toutes ses fleurs. Pierre et sa cousine sont maintenant dans la salle à manger. Ils ont déjeuné avec la cuisinière et la bonne. Nous n'avons pas fini nos leçons. Pierre et elle ont joué dans le jardin. Ils ont marché sur les tulipes. Ils ont chanté. Ils ont parlé français aussi. Notre oncle est maître d'école et il a enseigné le français à toute sa famille. J'ai choisi un œillet blanc, très beau, que j'ai donné à ma cousine et que Pierre a saisi. Marie a frappé Pierre, et Pierre a prononcé un mot que je ne peux pas et ne veux pas prononcer.

117. Résumé. Cherché; rencontré; où?; entendu; monté; joué; chemin; trottoir; ville; cherchez!; escalier; perdu;



J'ai rencontré ma petite fille au coin de la rue devant l'église

non; oncle; jardin; rose; œillet; salle à manger; cuisinière; Pierre et elle; tulipes; chanté; français; maître d'école; œillet; saisi; prononcé.

118. Oral Drill. 1. We have heard. 2. We heard. 3. Have you walked? 4. He lost. 5. They met. 6. Did he not teach? 7. You built. 8. We seized. 9. Has she taught? 10. Did you sing? 11. We sang. 12. I have not lost. 13. I lost. 14. Did you knock? 15. Did they not finish? 16. We knocked. 17. Have you finished? 18. Who spoke? 19. You heard. 20. Have you chosen? 21. Did you pronounce the French words? 22. I did not pronounce the English words. 23. Pronounce the German sentences. 24. We have not spoken German. 25. Have you spoken the French language?

II

119. DIALOGUE

1. Where have you looked for your children?	**Où avez-vous cherché vos enfants?**
2. I have looked for my son and my daughter in your garden	**J'ai cherché mon fils et ma fille dans votre jardin**
3. Did you not meet your son Peter?	**N'avez-vous pas rencontré votre fils Pierre?**
4. No, I found my daughter, but I did not meet my son	**Non, j'ai trouvé ma fille, mais je n'ai pas rencontré mon fils**
5. Look in the street at the corner in front of the old church. He played there with his cousin Mary	**Cherchez dans la rue au coin devant la vieille église. Il a joué là avec sa cousine Marie**
6. There is the cook who has looked for Peter also. Have you met my son?	**Voilà la cuisinière, qui a cherché Pierre aussi. Avez-vous rencontré mon fils?**
7. I found your son at the corner of the street. He is with his uncle and his aunt.	**J'ai trouvé votre fils au coin de la rue. Il est avec son oncle et sa tante. La bonne vieille tante**

The good old aunt met the little boy on the stairs of the church. She heard Peter and his sister who are playing in the street	**a rencontré le petit garçon sur l'escalier de l'église. Elle a entendu Pierre et sa sœur qui jouent dans la rue**
8. I heard the children also	**J'ai entendu les enfants aussi**
9. Did they not meet the maid?	**N'ont-ils pas rencontré la bonne?**
10. No, she lost her way. She looked for the children in the park	**Non, elle a perdu son chemin. Elle a cherché les enfants dans le parc**

120. Conversation. 1. Did not the mother meet her daughter? 2. Did the son meet his mother? 3. Did the boy hear the bell in the dining-room? 4. Did he play in the street between the carriages and the street-cars? 5. Did the children walk on the sidewalks in front of the stores? 6. Did they go down the stairs of the church? 7. Who built the large building at the street-corner? 8. With whom did the boy and girl dine? 9. Who taught French to the children? 10. Will you pronounce the word which the little boy pronounced?

121. Theme. Where did you look for the child's mother? I looked for the child's mother in the church, but I found his sister there. She did not meet her mother there. I met your two sons in front of the store. What language did they speak[1]? I did not hear. They spoke French; the school-master taught (the) French to all my family. Did you choose French? No, they chose French. Who is the woman on the sidewalk in front of the church at the street-corner? She is our old cook's aunt; we met her son in the street-car Has she lost her way? No, she is going into the church

122. Exercises. *A*. Conjugate:

I met my friends.	I did not build the church.
Did I lose my way?	Did I not walk on the sidewalk?

[1] See p. 71, footnote 1.

B. Drill on past indefinite of **rencontrer**, **bâtir**, **entendre**: § 480, *A*.

C. Use forms of the past indefinite with the following words in sentences:

road corner church between city for now

13. TREIZIÈME LEÇON [trɛzjɛm]

LE RESTAURANT [rɛstɔrɑ̃]

I

123. *Some*, adjective (i.e. followed by a noun) = *of the*. *Some*, object pronoun (i.e. used alone) = **en**, which is placed *immediately* before the verb.[1]

J'ai *des* pommes, I have some (i.e. of the) apples
J'ai *de la* viande, I have some meat
J'*en* ai, I have some
***En* avez-vous?** Have you any?[2]
Il n'*en* a pas, He has none[2]

124. *Some* may be omitted in English, but must not be omitted in French:

J'ai du lait et de l'eau, I have milk and water

125. VOCABULARY

apporter [apɔrte], to bring
le beurre [bœːr], butter
le café [kafe], coffee
la crème [krɛːm], cream
l'eau [lo] (*f.*), water
le garçon [garsɔ̃], boy, waiter

[1] In the case of the past indefinite, the auxiliary (*have*, *has*) is considered the verb, and **en** goes before it; **il en a trouvé**, *he has found some;* **il n'en a pas trouvé**, *he has not found any, he has found none.*

[2] In questions *any* is substituted for *some* in English; in negative sentences *no* (see p. 50, note), *none* = *not any*. The French constructions are not affected. Observe that in negative sentences **ne** precedes **en**.

En a-t-il? Has he any (= some)?
Il n'en a pas. He has none (= not any).

le lait [lɛ], milk
monsieur [məsjø], Mr., sir
le pain [pɛ̃], bread
la pomme de terre [pɔm də tɛːr], potato [**la terre**, the earth]
la pomme [pɔm], apple
le potage [pɔtaːʒ], soup
la viande [vjɑ̃ːd], meat
le vin [vɛ̃], wine

126. DRILL

1. Some butter; some meat	**Du beurre; de la viande**
2. Some coffee; have you any?	**Du café; en avez-vous?**
3. Some apples; he has none	**Des pommes; il n'en a pas**
4. Some milk; he sold some	**Du lait; il en a vendu**
5. Some water; he brought none	**De l'eau; il n'en a pas apporté**
6. Some cream; did he bring any?	**De la crème; en a-t-il apporté?**
7. Some potatoes; some soup	**Des pommes de terre; du potage**
8. Some paper; some ink	**Du papier; de l'encre**
9. He brought meat and potatoes	**Il a apporté de la viande et des pommes de terre**
10. Have you any? He has none	**En avez-vous? Il n'en a pas**
11. Has the waiter brought any wine?	**Est-ce que le garçon a apporté du vin?**
12. We gave none to the boys	**Nous n'en avons pas donné aux garçons**
13. Did she give some water to your sister?	**Est-ce qu'elle a donné de l'eau à votre sœur?**
14. Did they (*f.*) sell any?	**Est-ce qu'elles en ont vendu?**
15. He sold apples and potatoes	**Il a vendu des pommes et des pommes de terre**

127. Reading. Voilà mon fils qui monte l'escalier! Il y a deux de ses amis ici. Ils ont marché dans la rue, ils n'ont pas perdu leur chemin, ils ont cherché notre maison et ils ont trouvé la porte. Ils ont sonné. Maintenant ils sont dans le jardin. Il y a des fleurs et de l'herbe là. Ils ont dîné dans le jardin. La bonne a apporté du pain, de l'eau, du beurre, des pommes de terre, de la viande, du café, de la

crème. Elle n'a pas apporté de[1] vin. Elle a donné du café à mon fils et du lait à ma fille. Ma fille a donné le lait à l'ami de son frère, et mon fils a donné le café à la sœur de son ami. Ma femme cherche les enfants, elle a descendu l'escalier, elle a trouvé les petits garçons et les petites filles dans le jardin. Elle a donné du potage à notre fils qui ne peut pas

Ils ont dîné dans le jardin

manger avec les grands enfants. Elle en a donné aux grands enfants aussi, mais ils n'en ont pas mangé. Notre fils en a mangé; il veut en donner à l'ami de son frère, mais l'ami de son frère n'en veut pas. Ils ont entendu la sonnette. Ils ont monté l'escalier. Ils sont maintenant dans la chambre à coucher.

128. Résumé. Fils; ami; marché; chemin; maison; porte; sonné; jardin; fleurs, herbe; dîné; bonne; pain, eau,

[1] See p. 50, note.

beurre, pommes de terre, viande, café, crème; vin; fils, fille; donné; femme cherche; jardin; potage; grands enfants; notre fils, l'ami; sonnette.

129. Oral Drill. 1. Some wine; some ink; I have some. 2. Some meat; some pens; has he any? 3. Bring milk and cream! 4. Have you any? I have none. 5. Some soup; some potatoes. 6. Black coffee, white milk; they have none. 7. Water; has the boy any? He has some. 8. Blue ink; English words; difficult languages. 9. Has his wife any?; no, but their son has some. 10. He has none; have we any?; we have none. 11. She has no milk (*see p. 50, Note*).

II

130. DIALOGUE

1. Waiter, bring some bread for my son!	Garçon, apportez du pain pour mon fils!
2. Yes, sir, there is some bread and some butter!	Oui, monsieur, voilà du pain et du beurre!
3. Now he wishes coffee and milk	Maintenant il veut du café et du lait
4. Do you wish some coffee also, sir?	Voulez-vous du café, aussi, monsieur?
5. No, I want some water	Non, je veux de l'eau
6. What meat do you choose, sir?	Quelle viande choisissez-vous, monsieur?
7. I do not want any. I want some soup; have you any?	Je n'en veux pas. Je veux du potage; est-ce que vous en avez?
8. Yes, sir, we have some; it is very good	Oui, monsieur, nous en avons; il est très bon
9. Is the meat good?	Est-ce que la viande est bonne?
10. Yes, it is very good; do you wish some now after your soup?	Oui, elle est très bonne; en voulez-vous maintenant après votre potage?
11. Yes, and bring some water for my son!	Oui, et apportez de l'eau pour mon fils!

12. (My) father, there is (my) uncle in front of the big red building!	**Mon père, voilâ mon oncle devant le grand bâtiment rouge!**
13. Waiter, some butter! . . . Do you want some water?	**Garçon, du beurre! . . . Voulez-vous de l'eau?**
14. No, I want some milk and some bread; I have not eaten. Bring some potatoes and meat!	**Non, je veux du lait et du pain; je n'ai pas mangé. Apportez des pommes de terre et de la viande!**

131. Conversation. 1. In what house did you meet your friend? 2. Whom did you find in the garden? 3. With whom did his son speak in the street? 4. Who brought water, bread and meat into the garden? 5. Did she bring coffee and cream also? 6. Did she bring wine? 7. Whom did your wife look for? 8. Did she give some milk and coffee to her children? 9. To whom did she give some? 10. Did she give any to her son and to her daughter?

132. Theme. I have no[1] wine; I want none. Waiter, bring some meat, some bread and some butter! Does your son wish soup also, sir? Yes, and have you any milk? No, we have none now. I can bring some coffee and cream. Do you wish any? Yes. Have you apples? Yes, they are very good. Do you wish some? Yes, you can bring some; and bring some water, also; we haven't any. My son, who is the boy whom we met at the school? My friend Peter. Did Peter find some friends there? Yes, he found a boy and his sisters. Did the girls dine at the school? Yes, they ate bread, but when they looked for butter, they did not find any.

133. Exercises. *A*. Conjugate 'I have' with the following words:

butter cream water potatoes.

B. Conjugate 'have I?' with the same words.

C. Conjugate 'I have brought some,' 'I have sold none.'

[1] See p. 50, note.

14. QUATORZIÈME LEÇON [katɔrzjɛm]

LA GARE

I

134. Present Indicative of *être* [ɛːtr], *to be:*

je suis [ʒə syi], I am	**nous sommes** [nu sɔm], we are
(**tu es** [ty ɛ], thou art)	**vous êtes** [vu zɛt], you are
il est [il ɛ], he is	**ils sont** [il sõ], they are

135. Past Indefinite with *être*. The French do not say 'I *have* gone,' they say 'I *am* gone.' Other verbs so conjugated are:

aller [ale], to go	**je suis allé**,[2] I have gone = I went
arriver [arive], to arrive	(**tu es arrivé**, thou hast arrived)
descendre,[1] to descend	**il est descendu**, he descended
entrer, to enter	**elle est entrée**, she entered
monter,[1] to go up	**nous sommes montés**, we went up
partir [partiːr], to depart, go away, leave	**vous êtes parti (s)**,[2] you departed
sortir [sɔrtiːr], to go out	**ils sont sortis**, they went out
venir [vəniːr], to come	**elles sont venues**, they came

[1] Verbs conjugated with **être** are intransitive (that is, they have no direct object). Some may be used also transitively (that is, with a direct object), as in the case of **descendre, monter**: *I descended* (intransitive), and *I descended the stairs* (transitive). In the second case they are conjugated with **avoir**:

Je suis descendu (monté), I went down (went up)
J'ai descendu (monté) l'escalier), I went down (went up) the stairs

[2] The past participle with **être** agrees with the subject like an adjective:

vous êtes parti: **vous** = a single person, masculine
vous êtes partie: **vous** = a single person, feminine
vous êtes partis: **vous** = more than one person, masculine or masculine and feminine
vous êtes parties: **vous** = more than one person, feminine

Similarly, the past participle will take the feminine form of *I* or *we* refer to females:

Je suis partie, I (*a woman*) departed
Nous sommes montées, we (*women*) went up

If there is no reason to the contrary, **je** and **nous**, in these lessons, will be understood to be masculine, and **vous** masculine singular.

NOTE 1. The past participle of verbs conjugated with **être** agrees with the subject; see p. 81, Note 2. This is usually merely a matter of spelling, not affecting the pronunciation. Page 71, note refers to verbs conjugated with **avoir**.

NOTE 2. All verbs to be conjugated with **être** will be followed in vocabularies by an asterisk, e.g., **venir**.*

136. VOCABULARY

les bagages [baga:ʒ], baggage
le billet [bijɛ], ticket
le buffet [byfɛ], lunch-counter
le colis [kɔli], piece of baggage, package
le facteur [faktœ:r], porter
la gare [ga:r], station
le guichet [giʃɛ], ticket-window
la malle [mal], trunk
Paris [pari], Paris
la place [plas], seat, fare
Reims [rɛ̃:s], Rheims
la salle d'attente [sal datã:t], waiting-room
le train [trɛ̃], train
la valise [vali:z], valise
le wagon [vagõ], car

137. DRILL

1. I have given; I have departed	**J'ai donné; je suis parti**
2. Has he dined? she went	**A-t-il dîné? elle est allée**
3. Did you arrive? you lost	**Êtes-vous arrivé? vous avez perdu**
4. They have found; have they (*m.*) entered?	**Ils ont trouvé; sont-ils entrés?**
5. We got down; we gave	**Nous sommes descendus; nous avons donné**
6. Did she sell? he went up	**A-t-elle vendu? il est monté**
7. You came; you finished	**Vous êtes venu; vous avez fini**
8. He sought; she got down	**Il a cherché; elle est descendue**
9. Did we build? we departed	**Avons-nous bâti? nous sommes partis**
10. They came; they heard	**Ils sont venus; ils ont entendu**
11. I did not lose; I have arrived	**Je n'ai pas perdu; je suis arrivé**
12. We did not enter; we seized	**Nous ne sommes pas entrés; nous avons saisi**
13. She sang; she did not go down	**Elle a chanté; elle n'est pas descendue**
14. You did not come; you have spoken	**Vous n'êtes pas venu; vous avez parlé**

15. They (*f.*) chose; she did not go — Elles ont choisi; elle n'est pas allée
16. You went out; did we hear? — Vous êtes sorti; avons-nous entendu?
17. He did not meet; they went up — Il n'a pas rencontré; ils sont montés
18. Did he go? we did not seize — Est-il allé? nous n'avons pas saisi
19. You did not knock; did you arrive? — Vous n'avez pas frappé; êtes-vous arrivé?
20. Did you go out? I did not meet — Êtes-vous sorti? je n'ai pas rencontré

Le facteur

138. Reading. Nous sommes arrivés à Paris. Nous allons à Reims. Nous sommes dans la gare. Nous voulons dîner au buffet. Il est devant la salle d'attente. Est-ce que Pierre n'est pas venu avec sa sœur? Où sont-ils allés? Ah! la petite fille et son frère ne sont pas descendus du wagon. Descendez, mes enfants! Bon! Vous êtes descendus. Est-ce que ma bonne vieille tante est descendue aussi? Ah, oui! elle est arrivée avec Pierre et ils sont entrés au buffet oú ils ont dîné, et ils sont allés maintenant dans la salle d'attente. Mais mon mari, où est-il allé? Est-ce qu'il n'est pas là devant le guichet? Il cherche des billets. Non, il est allé avec le facteur mettre nos valises et nos colis dans le wagon. Il est monté, il est entré dans le wagon; le facteur a trouvé deux places — deux bonnes places — devant la fenêtre. Maintenant où sont nos colis? Voilà nos colis! Mon mari est

sorti du wagon. Il est descendu du train. Mais où sont nos malles, la valise de Pierre, les colis de ma tante? Ils ne sont pas arrivés à la gare. Mais nous pouvons manger maintenant. Voulez-vous manger ici au buffet? Nous sommes entrés. Nous avons dîné. Nous sommes sortis maintenant. Mais nos bagages ne sont pas arrivés! Et où est notre train? Notre train est parti! — et nos colis, nos valises, dans le wagon, là devant la fenêtre? Partis aussi!

139. Résumé. Paris; Reims; gare; dîner; Pierre; où?; wagon; tante, Pierre; mari, billets; facteur; monté, places; colis; malles, valise, colis; manger; buffet; sortis; bagages; train.

140. Oral Drill. 1. We have gone. 2. They have dined. 3. You arrived. 4. He spoke. 5. They departed. 6. She went out. 7. I chose. 8. He came. 9. We got down. 10. We sought. 11. He did not find. 12. We entered. 13. Did he not sell? 14. Did they not get down? 15. They went up. 16. You did not give. 17. He did not eat. 18. Did you come? 19. You did not go up. 20. Did you lose? 21. She arrived at the station. 22. Her aunt entered the car. 23. Did she go to the ticket-window? 24. They sold all the tickets. 25. Have they left the waiting-room?

II

141. DIALOGUE

1. Did you come from Paris?	**Êtes-vous venus de Paris?**
2. We came from Rheims	**Nous sommes venus de Reims**
3. Have you any baggage?	**Est-ce que vous avez des bagages?**
4. Yes, I have some packages, a valise and two trunks	**Oui, j'ai des colis, une valise et deux malles**
5. Didn't your brother come with you?	**Est-ce que votre frère n'est pas venu avec vous?**
6. No, he went to the city	**Non, il est allé à la ville**

7. And your sister? Did she leave with your brother?	Et votre sœur? Est-elle partie avec votre frère?
8. No, she came in the train, too	Non, elle est venue dans le train aussi
9. Where is she?	Où est-elle?
10. She entered the waiting-room or she went to the lunch-counter. No — she has gone to the ticket-window	Elle est entrée dans la salle d'attente ou elle est allée au buffet. Non — elle est allée au guichet
11. Good! Do you wish to leave?	Bon! Voulez-vous partir?
12. We can't leave. We are looking for a porter	Nous ne pouvons pas partir. Nous cherchons un facteur
13. A porter! There is a porter in front of the ticket-window	Un facteur! Il y a un facteur devant le guichet
14. No, he is gone. He has got into the car	Non, il est parti. Il est monté dans le wagon
15. No, he has got down and he has gone into the waiting-room	Non, il est descendu, et il est allé à la salle d'attente
16. Porter, will you get into the train to look for our baggage?	Facteur, voulez-vous monter dans le train chercher nos bagages?
17. In what coach, sir?	Dans quel wagon, monsieur?
18. There's the coach! My packages are in the corner, in front of the window	Voilà le wagon! Mes colis sont dans le coin, devant la fenêtre
19. I got into the train, sir; I entered the coach; I looked in the corner, but I have not found your packages	Monsieur, je suis monté dans le train; je suis entré dans le wagon; j'ai cherché dans le coin, mais je n'ai pas trouvé vos colis

142. Conversation. 1. Have you not come to the station? 2. Where did you dine? 3. Did the children come

with my aunt? 4. Where did the brother and sister go? 5. Did the uncle enter the car? 6. Did he find a good seat? 7. Did he get out of the coach? 8. Did the porter get into the train with his valises and his packages? 9. Did his baggage arrive at the station? 10. Did the train leave?

143. Theme. I have come from Rheims. I have arrived at Paris. I went to the lunch-counter. I met my friend. We dined. We left. We met our friends. They went with us. We arrived at the ticket-window where we asked for tickets. "The train has left!" We found the porter. He went with my friends to look for their packages and their trunk. I found the stairs. I went down. I went out. On the sidewalk I met Peter. We departed. My friends are in the station. Paris is a beautiful city. Its parks are very beautiful.

144. Exercises. *A*. Conjugate:

I entered the house.	I departed.	I went out.
I went down.	I came.	I arrived.
I went up.	I went.	

B. Drill on present indicative of **être**: § 480, *A*.

C. Drill on past indefinite of **aller**, **partir**, **descendre**, **venir**: § 480, *A*.

D. Use the following words in sentences:

ticket	ticket-window	trunk	Rheims
station	seat	porter	Paris

15. QUINZIÈME LEÇON [kɛ̃zjɛm]

145. Review

I

1. Who sells? 2. He sells. 3. We hear. 4. You hear. 5. Who sold? 6. She sold. 7. You heard. 8. I heard. 9. He arrived. 10. We got down. 11. They went. 12. I came. 13. Has he come? 14. She came. 15. Did you go? 16. We did not get down. 17. Don't go! 18. Who came? 19. Some bread. 20. Have you any? 21. Some potatoes. 22. Have you any? 23. Eat soup! 24. I have eaten some. 25. They sold apples. 26. Who brought the potatoes? 27. The porter has arrived. 28. Have you any ink? 29. Who has some? 30. Who has some trunks? 31. Did they arrive with baggage? 32. Their packages arrived. 33. At what station? 34. Who looked for valises here? 35. I arrived, and I looked for my valises and my trunks. 36. Did you go to the waiting-room? 37. We went to the ticket-window. 38. Who sells tickets? 39. They sell some. 40. They have none. 41. There are none.

II

146. 1. Who sells milk? 2. We sell wine. 3. To whom do they sell coffee? 4. He sold apples. 5. Bring some cream! 6. Is there any cream? 7. He ate meat. 8. We ate soup. 9. Eat potatoes! 10. He brought bread. 11. The milk has arrived. 12. The waiter came. 13. Did he sell butter? 14. Did you bring water? 15. We went to the station. 16. Did you bring any baggage? 17. Did the porter find any packages? 18. Did you go to the ticket-window? 19. Whom did you look for? 20. We looked for friends. 21. Did your friends arrive? 22. They went out of the station. 23. Did you find any carriages at the door?

24. We did not look for any. 25. The porter brought our valises and our packages to the railway-coach. 26. We have none. 27. Did you bring some baggage? 28. I brought some. 29. We brought none. 30. With whom did you get down from the carriage? 31. I got down with my son, whom you met in the waiting-room. 32. We went to the ticket-window. 33. Did they sell tickets? 34. They sold some.

16. SEIZIÈME LEÇON [sɛzjɛm]

LA GARE

I

147. Future. To form the future, add to the *whole infinitive* the following endings[1]:

–ai [e][2]	je donner **ai** [ʒə dɔnəre]
–as [a]	(tu finir **as** [ty finira])
-a [a]	il vendr **a**[3] [il vãdra]
–ons [õ]	nous finir **ons** [nu finirõ]
–ez [e]	vous vendr **ez**[3] [vu vãdre]
–ont [õ]	ils donner **ont** [il dɔnərõ]

I. *I shall give*, etc.	II. *I shall finish*, etc.	*I shall sell*, etc.
je donner **ai**	je finir **ai**	je vendr **ai**[3]
(tu donner **as**)	(tu finir **as**)	(tu vendr **as**)
il donner **a**[4]	il finir **a**[4]	il vendr **a**[4]
nous donner **ons**	nous finir **ons**	nous vendr **ons**
vous donner **ez**	vous finir **ez**	vous vendr **ez**
ils donner **ont**	ils finir **ont**	ils vendr **ont**

[1] Note that these are the endings of the present indicative of **avoir** (see § 64).

[2] Note that when **-ai** is a verb-ending it is pronounced [e]; elsewhere it is [ɛ]; see p. 8, § 19, 2.

[3] Note that the final **e** of third conjugation verbs is dropped before the endings are added.

[4] Interrogative third person singular: **donnera-t-il? finira-t-il? vendra-t-il?** Cf. **donne-t-il? a-t-il?** See p. 34, Note 2.

148. Interrogative Pronoun.[1] *Things* (cf. § 102).

Subject: **Qu'est-ce qui?** [kɛs ki], *what?*

Object: **Que?** [kə] *or* **Qu'est-ce que?** [kɛs kə], *what?*

Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table? What is on the table?

Que cherchez-vous?
Qu'est-ce que vous cherchez? } What are you looking for?

NOTE. The last two forms correspond to **que** followed by the alternate interrogative forms **cherchez-vous? est-ce que vous cherchez?** (See § 26, note 1.) When the verb is in the first person singular, or when the subject of the verb is a noun, use the longer form. (See § 27, and note 1.)

Qu'est-ce que je cherche? What am I looking for?

Qu'est-ce que Jean cherche? What is John looking for?

149. VOCABULARY

aimer [ɛme], to like, love
l'amie [lami] (*f.*), friend
appeler[2] [aple], to call
l'argent [larʒɑ̃] (*m.*), money, silver
bientôt [bjẽto], soon
la carte [kart], bill-of-fare
cinq [sẽk][3], five
le cocher [kɔʃe], coachman, cabby
demander [dəmɑ̃de], to ask, ask for
laisser[4] [lɛse], leave
madame [madam], madam, Mrs.
merci [mɛrsi], thanks
parce que [pars kə], because
peu [pø], little (*adverb*)
peut-être [pø tɛːtr], perhaps
porter [pɔrte], to carry
le restaurant [rɛstɔrɑ̃], restaurant
le voyageur [vwajaʒœːr], traveler

150. DRILL

1. We shall like; they (*f.*) will carry	**Nous aimerons; elles porteront**
2. He will finish; she will ask	**Il finira; elle demandera**
3. I shall sell; we shall ring	**Je vendrai; nous sonnerons**
4. She will depart; you will lose	**Elle partira; vous perdrez**

[1] The interrogative adjective is **quel?** (see § 76).

[2] *Present:* j'appelle (tu appelles), il appelle; nous appelons, vous appelez, ils appellent. (Cf. **acheter,** § 160, Note.)
Future: j'appellerai, etc.

[3] Pronounce [sẽ] before a word beginning with a consonant: **cinq voyageurs,** [sẽ vwajaʒœːr]. (See § 234, Note.)

[4] **partir** is intransitive: *to leave, go away;* **laisser** is transitive: *to leave behind, abandon.*

5. We shall descend; I shall dine	Nous descendrons; je dînerai
6. They will ask; he will seize	Ils demanderont; il saisira
7. I shall meet; they will depart	Je rencontrerai; ils partiront
8. We shall hear; I shall breakfast	Nous entendrons; je déjeunerai
9. She will pronounce; he will knock	Elle prononcera; il frappera
10. They (*f.*) will like; you will choose	Elles aimeront; vous choisirez
11. What is? who is?	Qu'est-ce qui est? qui est?
12. Whom do you call? what do you leave?	Qui appelez-vous? que laissez-vous?
13. To whom are you speaking?	À qui parlez-vous?
14. What is there? who is here?	Qu'est-ce qui est là? qui est ici?
15. What have you heard?	Qu'est-ce que vous avez entendu?
16. Whom have they met?	Qui est-ce qu'ils ont rencontré?
17. What has the traveler brought?	Qu'est-ce que le voyageur a apporté?
18. What did your friend sell?	Qu'est-ce que votre ami a vendu?
19. What book did your brother carry?	Quel livre est-ce que votre frère a porté?
20. What did your sister choose?	Qu'est-ce que votre sœur a choisi?

151. Reading. Allez chercher le facteur. Appelez mon[1] amie qui est entrée dans la gare; elle cherchera le facteur avec vous. Nous n'appellerons pas votre amie. Le facteur est arrivé. Facteur, vous porterez mes cinq colis dans le wagon. Voilà de l'argent! Maintenant je veux parler au cocher. Il est sorti de la gare. Il est parti, peut-être. Non, mais il est entré au buffet. Cocher, j'ai laissé un de mes colis dans la voiture. Voulez-vous aller chercher mon colis? Merci! Maintenant nous dînerons. Que voulez-vous manger? Garçon! Vous demandez, madame? Apportez la carte Voilà la carte,

[1] Before feminine nouns or adjectives beginning with a vowel, the masculine forms **mon**, **ton**, **son** are used.

madame! Nous mangerons très peu parce que notre train partira bientôt. Nous descendrons à Chicago et nous trouverons un bon restaurant là. Voilà des voyageurs qui montent dans le train. Le cocher n'est pas venu. Il est allé chercher mon colis, mais il n'est pas arrivé! Le train partira, il arrivera à Chicago, mon mari me cherchera à la gare, je n'arriverai pas, il ne trouvera pas sa femme! Voilà le cocher! Le train n'est pas parti. Merci, cocher! Nous arriverons

Voilà la carte, madame!

bientôt à Chicago. Nous rencontrerons mon mari. Nous ne laisserons pas nos cinq colis dans le wagon. Le cocher mettra notre valise dans la voiture, mais le facteur portera notre malle à la salle des bagages. Nous trouverons tous nos amis à la gare. Nous partirons de Chicago bientôt et nous descendrons du train à Buffalo où il y a un très bon ami de mon mari.

152. Résumé. Facteur; amie; facteur; cinq colis; cocher; voiture; chercher; manger; carte; peu; Chicago; voyageurs; cocher!; mari; Chicago, mari; valise; malle; amis; Buffalo.

153. Oral Drill. 1. They will descend; he will breakfast. 2. We shall depart; will they carry? 3. She will sell; I shall ask. 4. We shall go out; will she give? 5. You will sell; shall we lose? 6. I shall ring; they (*f.*) will like. 7. He will seize; shall I meet? 8. They (*m.*) will leave; you will hear. 9. We shall choose; will she hear? 10. They (*f.*) will bring; you will play. 11. Who is there? 12. Whom is she looking for? 13. What is in the church? 14. What will the girl choose? 15. To whom will they speak? 16. What sentences will the pupil pronounce? 17. What is here? 18. Who speaks of the tickets? 19. Whom do we call? 20. What did the porter bring?

II

154. DIALOGUE

1. Peter, has your aunt arrived?	Pierre, est-ce que votre tante est arrivée?
2. I have not gone up to the waiting-room; she went there, perhaps	Je ne suis pas monté à la salle d'attente; elle est allée là, peut-être
3. Do you want to go to breakfast now? Have you any money?	Voulez-vous aller déjeuner maintenant? Avez-vous de l'argent?
4. Can we not find my aunt? She will not go out of the station. I do not like to leave my aunt here. She is old.	Ne pouvons-nous pas trouver ma tante? Elle ne sortira pas de la gare. Je n'aime pas laisser ma tante ici. Elle est vieille
5. We shall go up to the waiting-room	Nous monterons à la salle d'attente
6. There is my aunt! Now we can go and dine	Voilà ma tante! Maintenant nous pouvons aller dîner
7. What are you looking for?	Que cherchez-vous?
8. I am looking for a good restaurant	Je cherche un bon restaurant

9. Isn't there a good restaurant in front of the station?	**Est-ce qu'il n'y a pas un bon restaurant devant la gare?**
10. No, there isn't any there	**Non, il n'y en a pas là**[1]
11. What are they looking for, the five travelers who entered the store at the corner where the old lady sells the beautiful flowers?	**Qu'est-ce qu'ils cherchent, les cinq voyageurs qui sont entrés dans le magasin au coin où la vieille femme vend les belles fleurs?**
12. They have found a restaurant, perhaps. Ask!	**Ils ont trouvé un restaurant, peut-être. Demandez!**
13. Have you found a restaurant?	**Avez-vous trouvé un restaurant?**
14. We haven't looked for any; we have breakfasted at the lunch-counter, but we have eaten very little. The restaurants here are not good	**Nous n'en avons pas cherché; nous avons déjeuné au buffet, mais nous avons très peu mangé. Les restaurants ici ne sont pas bons**

155. Conversation. 1. Whom did you seek? 2. Who arrived? 3. What language will he speak? 4. What will the traveler carry? 5. To whom do you wish to speak? 6. What is in the carriage? 7. What can you eat? 8. Whom will you meet at Chicago? 9. What will the cabby find in the restaurant? 10. What is on the benches in the station?

156. Theme. Whom will you meet at the station? I shall find my friends there, perhaps. Bring the bill-of-fare, waiter; I shall eat very little because I shall leave soon. What did the porter leave in the car? Ask! I do not speak French. He speaks English, — but very little. With whom did you talk in front of the restaurant? What is in your valise? Where is your husband? Who is at the ticket-

[1] See § 123. Learn:

il y en a, there is (are) some
il n'y en a pas, there is (are) none

window? There is your husband! What package did you leave in the carriage? What is the cabby bringing? The waiter will bring the bill-of-fare soon, perhaps.

157. Exercises. *A.* Conjugate:

I shall build a house. I shall leave my packages.
I shall lose my trunk.

B. Drill on future of **demander, bâtir, entendre:** § 480, *A.*

C. Use *what?* first as subject, then as object, in as many sentences as possible. Other students answer the questions.

17. DIX-SEPTIÈME LEÇON [dis sɛtjɛm]

LE MAGASIN

I

158. Adverbs of Quantity:

beaucoup [boku], { much; many;	**beaucoup de viande,** much meat **beaucoup d'amis,** many friends
peu [pø], { little; few;	**peu de lait,** little milk **peu de voyageurs,** few travelers
assez [ase], enough;	**assez de billets,** enough tickets
trop [tro], { too; too much; too many;	**trop blanc,** too white **trop de vin,** too much wine **trop d'histoires,** too many stories
plus [ply], more;	**plus de colis,** more packages
moins [mwɛ̃], { less; fewer;	**moins d'encre,** less ink **moins de chapeaux,** fewer hats
combien [kɔ̃bjɛ̃], { how much; how many;	**combien de crème,** how much cream **combien de mots,** how many words
tant [tɑ̃], { so much; so many;	**tant de beurre,** so much butter **tant de malles,** so many trunks

159. En = *of it, of them* as well as *some, any* (see § 123). As in the case of *some* (see § 124), **en** must not be omitted in

French even though *of it* or *of them* is omitted in English. Note this particularly when numbers are used:

Combien en avez-vous? How many (of them) have you?
J'en ai deux, I have two (of them)
Je n'en ai pas beaucoup, I haven't much *or* many

160. VOCABULARY

acheter[1] [aʃte], to buy
le bas [ba], stocking
le centime [sãtim], centime (*1/5 of a cent*)
la chose [ʃo:z], thing
cinquante [sɛ̃kã:t], fifty
le coton [kɔtɔ̃], cotton
désirer [dezire], to desire
l'employé [lãplwaje] (*m.*), clerk, employee
le franc [frã], franc (20 *cents*)
le prix [pri], price
que [kə], than, as
répondre [repɔ̃:dr], to reply
la robe [rɔb], dress
la soie [swa], silk
un, une [œ̃, yn], one

161. DRILL

1. Much money; little money	**Beaucoup d'argent; peu d'argent**
2. Many things; too many dresses	**Beaucoup de choses; trop de robes**
3. Too much bread; few apples	**Trop de pain; peu de pommes**
4. Enough butter; so much wine	**Assez de beurre; tant de vin**
5. How many pens; enough stores	**Combien de plumes; assez de magasins**
6. Enough meat; how much milk	**Assez de viande; combien de lait**
7. Less money; fewer apples	**Moins d'argent; moins de pommes**
8. So many dresses; more stores	**Tant de robes; plus de magasins**
9. Much silk; more stockings	**Beaucoup de soie; plus de bas**
10. Too many travelers; few employees	**Trop de voyageurs; peu d'employés**
11. A little money; fewer centimes	**Un peu d'argent; moins de centimes**

[1] *Present:* j'achète, (tu achètes), il achète; nous achetons, vous achetez, ils achètent.
Future: **j'achèterai, etc.** (Cf. **appeler,** § 149, note 2.)

12. I have money; have you any?	**J'ai de l'argent; en avez-vous?**
13. He talks of money; do you talk of it?	**Il parle d'argent; en parlez-vous?**
14. We talk of it; don't talk of it!	**Nous en parlons; n'en parlez pas!**
15. How much money do you ask?	**Combien d'argent demandez-vous?**
16. What will you carry?	**Qu'est-ce que vous porterez?**
17. What price will he ask?	**Quel prix demandera-t-il?**
18. What will they answer?	**Qu'est-ce qu'ils répondront?**
19. Whom will you hear?	**Qui entendrez-vous?**
20. What is in the store?	**Qu'est-ce qui est dans le magasin?**

162. Reading. Une femme est entrée dans beaucoup de magasins de la rue Royale [rwajal]. Tous les magasins de la rue Royale sont très beaux et il y en a tant! Il y a moins de magasins dans la rue à Paris où vous avez acheté votre belle robe de soie. La femme n'a pas tant d'argent que vous; elle en a beaucoup moins. Son mari est l'employé qui vend des billets au guichet à la gare. Il vend beaucoup de billets, mais il a très peu d'argent. Sa femme est entrée dans un des très beaux magasins de la rue. L'employé a demandé: «Que désirez-vous, madame?» Elle a répondu: «Je désire beaucoup de choses, mais j'ai très peu d'argent.» Il a demandé: «Voulez-vous acheter une robe?» Elle a répondu: «Je n'ai pas assez d'argent pour acheter une robe. Je veux acheter des bas. Est-ce que vous vendez des bas ici?» Un employé est allé chercher des bas pour la femme. Le prix est deux francs cinquante. Elle n'en a pas acheté. L'employé ne vendra pas beaucoup de bas à la femme parce qu'elle ne donnera pas tant d'argent pour les choses qu'elle désire. Cinq francs n'est pas trop pour des bas de soie, mais deux francs cinquante est certainement assez pour des bas de coton. Elle ne veut pas en acheter parce qu'elle a trop peu d'argent. Son mari n'en donnera pas à sa femme;

il ne peut pas en donner parce qu'il n'en a pas. L'employé a demandé: «Combien d'argent avez-vous?» Elle n'a pas répondu. Un employé qui demande «Combien d'argent avez-vous?» n'est pas un bon employé.

163. Résumé. Femme; magasins, rue Royale; rue à Paris; argent; mari; entrée; employé; répondu; robe; bas; chercher; pas acheté; ne vendra pas; cinq francs; ne veut pas; mari; employé, combien.

164. Oral Drill. 1. Too much butter. 2. Enough bread. 3. More wine. 4. Less money. 5. Fewer potatoes. 6. So much meat. 7. How much milk? 8. Too many apples. 9. How many things? 10. Much money. 11. Little meat. 12. Few travelers. 13. A little wine. 14. How many pencils? 15. Too much silk. 16. More apples. 17. Enough bread. 18. Many pens. 19. So many things. 20. A little cotton. 21. Many things. 22. Will you talk of it? 23. Will he talk of it? 24. Have you any? 25. I have some. 26. What will you ask? 27. What will they answer? 28. To whom shall we speak? 29. What is in the carriage? 30. Who will call the coachman? 31. Where will you leave so many packages? 32. I will call a cabby perhaps. 33. Have you any silk stockings? 34. We have some. 35. How many do you desire? 36. How many dresses have you? 37. You buy many things.

II

165. DIALOGUE

1. Do you sell stockings here?	**Vendez-vous des bas ici?**
2. Yes, madam, we do (we sell some). Do you want cotton or silk ones?	**Oui, madame, nous en vendons. En voulez-vous de coton ou de soie?**
3. I like (the) silk stockings, but I have very little money	**J'aime les bas de soie, mais j'ai très peu d'argent**

4. The clerk will get some cotton stockings	L'employé cherchera des bas de coton
5. You haven't enough clerks in your store, sir	Vous n'avez pas assez d'employés dans votre magasin, monsieur
6. We haven't too many!	Nous n'en avons pas trop!
7. The store at the corner of the street has more than you	Le magasin au coin de la rue en a plus que vous
8. How many has it?	Combien en a-t-il?
9. It has fifty	Il en a cinquante
10. We have fewer, but our clerks are very good	Nous en avons moins, mais nos employés sont très bons
11. What is the price of the silk stockings?	Quel est le prix des bas de soie?
12. We have some at five francs and at five francs fifty (centimes). I'll get some for you	Nous en avons à cinq francs et à cinq francs cinquante. J'en chercherai pour vous
13. No, thank you, I do not want any	Non, merci, je n'en veux pas
14. There are some cotton stockings!	Voilà des bas de coton!
15. What is the price of them?	Quel en est le prix?
16. Much less than for the silk stockings	Beaucoup moins que pour les bas de soie
17. I did not ask for silk stockings, I want them of cotton	Je n'ai pas demandé des bas de soie, j'en veux de coton
18. But, madam, here are cotton stockings!	Mais, madame, voilà des bas de coton!
19. I do not like your cotton stockings, and the silk stockings are less good for the price than the cotton stockings	Je n'aime pas vos bas de coton, et les bas de soie sont moins bons pour le prix que les bas de coton

166. Conversation. 1. What do the clerks in the stores ask? 2. What is in the store? 3. What do the women buy? 4. What price do the clerks ask? 5. Will the women give

much money? 6. Will the clerks sell cotton stockings perhaps for less money than silk stockings? 7. How many francs will the women give for silk stockings? 8. What will their husbands give for cotton stockings? 9. How much money have they given? 10. Will they give any to their wives?

167. Theme. I haven't much money, but I wish to buy many things. How much have you? I have very little; I have less than you. There are boys who have too much money. There are some who have too little money. They will buy (§160, note 1) fewer things than the boys who have much money. Go into the store and ask for the clerk. You will find there all the things that you are looking for. Are you one of the boys who have a great deal of (=much) money? You can buy all the things that you desire, but there are some which are not good.

168. Exercises. *A.* Use all the adverbs of quantity you can with the following:

things	dresses	potatoes	soup
silk	coffee	cream	hats

B. Fill the following blanks:

Avez-vous du —?
A-t-il de la —?
A-t-elle de l'—?
Avons-nous des —?
Est-ce que j'ai de l'—?
Est-ce que nous avons des —?
Est-ce qu'ils ont du —?

Other students answer the questions using **en.**

C. Dialogue: One student is the clerk in a store, another comes to buy.

D. Drill on *present, past indefinite, future* of **demander, bâtir, répondre:** § 480, *B.*

18. DIX-HUITIÈME LEÇON [di zyitjɛm]

LA GARE

I

169. Conjunctive Pronouns, Direct Object:

me [mə], me	**nous** [nu], us
(**te** [tə], thee)	**vous** [vu], you
le [lə], him, it (*m.*)	**les** [le], them (*m.*)
la [la], her, it (*f.*)	**les** [le], them (*f.*)

170. These pronouns are placed *immediately before* the verb:

Il me cherche, He is looking for me
Le trouvons-nous? Do we find him?
Ils les saisissent, They seize them

171. If used with the past indefinite, or other compound tenses, conjunctive pronouns come before the auxiliary (*have, has*, etc.):

Ils vous ont cherché, They looked for you
Nous l'avons trouvé, We found him
Je les ai saisis, I seized them

172. If the verb is negative, pronouns come between **ne** and the verb:

Vous ne la cherchez pas, You do not look for her
Elle ne me trouve pas, She does not find me
Il ne les saisit pas, He does not seize them

173. Chez [ʃe] = { *at the house of, at the store of*, etc. / *to the house of, to the store of*, etc.

Il est chez votre ami, He is at the house of your friend, at your friend's house, at your friend's
Nous allons chez le tailleur, We are going to the tailor's shop, store, house

174. VOCABULARY

bon marché [bõ marʃe], cheap (*invariable*)
cher [ʃɛːr], dear (*invariable as adverb*)
commander [kɔmãde], to order
le costume [kɔstym], suit
gris [gri], gray
l'habit [labi] (*m.*), coat
la laine [lɛn], wool
mardi [mardi], Tuesday
le pantalon [pãtalõ], trousers
le pardessus [pardəsy], overcoat
porter [pɔrte], to carry (§ 149), to wear
si[1] [si], if
le tailleur [tajœːr], tailor
toujours [tuʒuːr], always
le verre [vɛːr], glass

175. DRILL

1. I leave them; he leaves them	Je les laisse; il les laisse
2. She likes him; he likes her	Elle l'aime; il l'aime
3. We buy it; you buy it	Nous l'achetons; vous l'achetez
4. I carry him; he carries her	Je le porte; il la porte
5. We call you; you call us	Nous vous appelons; vous nous appelez
6. We carry them; they carry us	Nous les portons; ils nous portent
7. Do you bring it? I bring it	L'apportez-vous? je l'apporte
8. He asks for us; we ask for him	Il nous demande; nous le demandons
9. Do you call me? we call her	Est-ce que vous m'appelez? nous l'appelons
10. He asks for her; she asks for him	Il la demande; elle le demande
11. Do we call her? you call me	Est-ce que nous l'appelons? vous m'appelez
12. They like him; he likes them	Ils l'aiment; il les aime
13. He asks it; I ask for him	Il le demande; je le demande
14. You bring it; he carries them	Vous l'apportez; il les porte
15. She leaves them; we buy it	Elle les laisse; nous l'achetons
16. Are you seeking her?	Est-ce que vous la cherchez?
17. We do not find her	Nous ne la trouvons pas

[1] The **i** of **si** is elided before **il** and **ils**: **s'il cherche, s'ils cherchent**; see Introduction, § 56, note 2.

18. You will not find her at my uncle's house	**Vous ne la trouverez pas chez mon oncle**
19. At whose house did they find you?	**Chez qui vous ont-ils trouvé?**
20. At Peter's house	**Chez Pierre**

176. Reading. Mon oncle Pierre arrivera à Paris mardi. Je l'aime beaucoup, mon bon oncle, et il m'aime beaucoup aussi. Voulez-vous aller le chercher à la gare? Vous le

Il commandera un grand verre d'eau

trouverez dans la salle d'attente ou peut-être au buffet. Il portera un pardessus de laine noire — il le porte toujours — un habit de coton gris, un pantalon de coton aussi, et des *bas* de coton blanc! Il porte toujours des bas, et il n'aime pas la soie. Il ne donne pas beaucoup d'argent pour ses costumes. Il les veut bon marché. Il ne les commande pas chez les grands tailleurs qui les vendent très cher, mais chez les tailleurs dans les petites rues qui les vendent très bon marché. Vous monterez dans le tramway; il y en a un dans la rue, là, au coin — m'entendez-vous? Vous descendrez

devant la gare, vous entrerez et vous chercherez mon oncle dans la salle d'attente. Il vous cherchera aussi et si vous ne le trouvez pas, il vous trouvera. Si vous ne le trouvez pas dans la salle d'attente, vous le chercherez devant le guichet où l'employé vend des billets, ou au buffet. Il mange toujours au buffet. Qu'est-ce qu'il demandera au buffet: du pain, de la viande, des pommes de terre? Non, mon ami, il demandera le prix du pain, le prix de la viande et le prix des pommes de terre. Si tout est bon marché, il en commandera. S'il n'aime pas les prix, il commandera un grand verre d'eau. Mais, après tout, il est très bon, mon oncle; il m'aime beaucoup, et je l'aime beaucoup aussi.

177. Résumé. Pierre; aime; chercher; salle d'attente; pardessus, habit, pantalon, bas; soie; costumes; grands tailleurs; tramway, coin; descendrez; chercher; guichet; buffet; pain?; eau; bon.

178. Oral Drill. 1. He seeks her. 2. You find me. 3. We sought her.[1] 4. She found us.[1] 5. We bring it. 6. You brought it. 7. Do you seek her? 8. Will you bring it? 9. Will they look for me? 10. They are not looking for you. 11. We are calling her. 12. You are not calling us. 13. Will he carry them? 14. You do not bring them. 15. He asks for it. 16. We do not ask for them. 17. Do you seek her? 18. We have found her.[1] 19. Has she found them?[1] 20. They do not seek her. 21. Have you any? 22. I have none. 23. We are leaving them. 24. Are you calling me? 25. We have spoken of it. 26. He speaks of it. 27. Go to your tailor's. 28. He has a cotton coat. 29. I don't wish any. 30. He sells cotton suits. 31. If he has money, he gives it. 32. Your overcoat is gray; I like it. 33. There is a glass of water on the table; do you wish it?

[1] See p. 71, footnote 1.

II

179. DIALOGUE

1. Will your uncle arrive Tuesday?	Est-ce que votre oncle arrivera mardi?
2. Yes, my friend, he will arrive at Paris Tuesday	Oui, mon ami, il arrivera à Paris mardi
3. Will you look for him at the station?	Le chercherez-vous à la gare?
4. No, he will get down from the train; he will not look for me; he will go out of the station and will get into a street-car	Non, il descendra du train; il ne me cherchera pas; il sortira de la gare, et il montera dans un tramway
5. But he will lose his way, your uncle! He will not find you	Mais il perdra son chemin, votre oncle! Il ne vous trouvera pas
6. He will find me. He will get down from the street-car at the street-corner in front of the church. He will look for the house and he will find it	Il me trouvera. Il descendra du tramway au coin de la rue devant l'église. Il cherchera la maison et il la trouvera
7. Will he carry his baggage? He always has a great deal	Portera-t-il ses bagages? Il en a toujours beaucoup
8. Yes, he always has enough baggage, too much baggage: a trunk, a valise, and two or three packages; but the porter will carry them to the street-car	Oui, il a toujours assez de bagages, trop de bagages: une malle, une valise et deux ou trois colis; mais le facteur les portera au tramway
9. But who will carry them from the street-car to the house?	Mais qui les portera du tramway à la maison?
10. There are always many boys at the street-corner.	Il y a toujours beaucoup de garçons au coin de la rue. L'oncle

Uncle will give his valise and one of his packages to a boy	donnera sa valise et un de ses colis à un garçon
11. And the boy will carry them?	Et le garçon les portera?
12. He will carry them. (The) little boys have not much money. If my uncle gives enough (of it), they will carry the baggage	Il les portera. Les petits garçons n'ont pas beaucoup d'argent. Si mon oncle en donne assez, ils porteront les bagages
13. Has your uncle a great deal of money?	Est-ce que votre oncle a beaucoup d'argent?
14. He has enough (of it). He has more (of it) than we. But he loves it too much. He will not give much (of it) to the boys. But, 50 centimes, is that not enough?	Il en a assez. Il en a plus que nous. Mais il l'aime trop. Il n'en donnera pas beaucoup aux garçons. Mais, cinquante centimes, n'est-ce pas assez?

180. Conversation. 1. Have you met my uncle and do you like him? 2. Can he not find you at the ticket-window? 3. He has a gray overcoat; will he wear it or will he not wear it? 4. There are some cotton stockings; will you not wear them? 5. How much money have you, and how much of it do you give for your suits? 6. I want to get into a street-car; are there any at the corner? 7. Have you bought a ticket or has my brother bought it? 8. They have bread and meat; will he ask for any? 9. He has a good overcoat; at what tailor's did he buy it? 10. Can he not find me in front of the ticket-window?

181. Theme. We sell overcoats; do you want any? I bought one of them, but I do not like it. There are some cotton stockings; do you want to buy them? I cannot buy them; I have no money. You have no money! To whom have you given it? I gave some to my brother who asked for some. If I want any, I always ask for some. You have a

beautiful suit; at what tailor's did you order it? Those trousers of gray wool are very dear, but I like them. I bought a gray suit very cheap, but I did not wear it much. Your woolen suit is handsome; did you order it at your tailor's? But we have talked enough of suits and trousers — our uncle and our aunt are looking for us. My aunt will find me in the waiting-room. My uncle will find you in the railway-car or at the lunch-counter.

182. Exercises. *A*. Drill on *present, past indefinite, future* of **chercher, choisir, entendre**, with the pronoun objects 'him,' 'you,' 'them' (*m.*), 'us,' 'me,' 'them' (*f.*), 'her': § 480, *B*.

B. Students ask and answer questions, using the object pronouns in the answers.

19. DIX-NEUVIÈME LEÇON [diz nœvjɛm]

LE MAGASIN

I

183. Conjunctive Pronouns (cf. §§ 169–172):

Direct object	*Indirect object*
1. **me** [mə], me	**me** [mə], to me
2. (**te** [tə], thee)	(**te** [tə], to thee)
3. **le** [lə], him, it (*m.*)	**lui** [lyi], to him
3. **la** [la], her, it (*f.*)	**lui** [lyi], to her
1. **nous** [nu], us	**nous** [nu], to us
2. **vous** [vu], you	**vous** [vu], to you
3. **les** [le], them	**leur** [lœːr], to them

NOTE 1. Direct and indirect object pronouns are alike except in the third person.

NOTE 2. In English the preposition *to* before indirect objects *of persons* is omitted after certain verbs: Give him a book = give to him;

Sell him = sell to him. The indirect object pronoun is always used here in French. Of course, as in English, direct object pronouns are also used with these verbs: Give him *it* = give *it* to him; Sell him *it* = sell *it* to him.

Je le donne, I give it
Je lui donne, I give him, her (= to him, to her)
Il l'a montré, He showed it
Il lui a montré, He showed (to) him (*or* her)
Nous le dirons, We shall say it
Nous leur dirons, We shall say to them (tell them)
Elle lui a répondu, She answered him (*or* her)

NOTE 3. **Demander** and **acheter** take indirect objects of persons.

Je le demande, I ask it
Je demande à mon ami, I ask my friend
Je lui demande, I ask him
Nous l'achetons, We buy it
Nous lui achetons, We buy from him *or* for him

184. VOCABULARY

coûter [kute], to cost
la cravate [kravat], necktie
la dentelle [dɑ̃tɛl], lace
le dimanche [dimɑ̃:ʃ], Sunday
dire [di:r], to say, tell
encore [ɑ̃kɔ:r], yet
le faux-col [fo kɔl], collar
la modiste [mɔdist], milliner
montrer [mɔ̃tre], to show
le mouchoir [muʃwa:r], handkerchief
pauvre [po:vr], poor
le ruban [rybɑ̃], ribbon
tout de suite [tu də syit], immediately
le velours [vəlu:r], velvet
le vêtement [vɛtmɑ̃], garment (*pl.*), clothes
vingt [vɛ̃], twenty

185. DRILL

1. We buy it; we bought it — **Nous l'achetons; nous l'avons acheté**
2. We shall tell him; I showed her — **Nous lui dirons; je lui ai montré**
3. He does not answer me; will they choose her? — **Il ne me répond pas; la choisiront-ils?**
4. They will tell you; I find her — **Ils vous diront; je la trouve**

5. Will he carry me? I asked her	Est-ce qu'il me portera? je lui ai demandé
6. You will tell them; I like her	Vous leur direz; je l'aime
7. She showed your brother; we like him	Elle a montré à votre frère; nous l'aimons
8. I shall answer them; they do not like them	Je leur répondrai; ils ne les aiment pas
9. You will tell it; I look for her	Vous le direz; je la cherche
10. I shall not tell your friend; she asked him	Je ne dirai pas à votre ami; elle lui a demandé
11. They answer him; he shows us	Ils lui répondent; il nous montre
12. He showed the boy; will she tell them?	Il a montré au garçon; est-ce qu'elle leur dira?
13. Does she ask me? I shall show them	Est-ce qu'elle me demande? je leur montrerai
14. We shall answer the teachers; we answer them	Nous répondrons aux maîtres; nous leur répondons
15. I am not looking for her	Je ne la cherche pas

186. Reading. Mon mari m'a demandé dimanche: «Ma chère Anne, voulez-vous aller à l'église?» Je lui ai répondu tout de suite: «Non, Pierre, je ne peux pas aller à l'église avec vous. Le chapeau de velours gris que la modiste m'a vendu n'est pas assez beau. J'ai commandé mardi un plus beau chapeau avec des rubans bleus et de la dentelle blanche, pour porter le dimanche. La modiste m'en a vendu un qui me coûte cinquante francs, mais elle ne l'a pas encore fini.» «Et le petit chapeau de soie bleue avec de la dentelle noire et des rubans de velours rouge, que je vous ai acheté, où est-il?» m'a demandé mon mari. Je lui ai répondu: «Une pauvre femme qui a perdu son mari, et qui a cinq petits enfants, est venue ici me demander du travail. Je n'en ai pas trouvé à lui donner, mais je lui ai donné une vieille robe, et comme elle a deux petites filles, je leur ai donné des bas, et le petit chapeau aussi.»

Pierre m'a demandé tout de suite: «Ne lui avez-vous pas donné des cravates et des faux-cols et des mouchoirs de soie?» Je lui ai répondu: «Oh, non, Pierre! Mais je lui ai donné pour ses petits garçons un pantalon de laine noire très vieux et un habit très vieux aussi, votre habit bleu, et un pardessus de laine grise.» — «Voulez-vous me dire une chose?» m'a demandé Pierre. «Où avez-vous trouvé le vieux pantalon de laine noire, l'habit bleu, le pardessus gris?» — «Dans la chambre à coucher.» — «Bon!» m'a répondu Pierre, «dans quelle chambre sont mon oncle et mon cousin?» — «Dans votre petite chambre en haut, Pierre.» — «Dans ma chambre! Les pauvres vous ont demandé un habit et vous leur avez donné l'habit de mon oncle; ils vous ont demandé un pantalon et vous leur avez donné son pantalon, un pardessus et vous leur avez donné le pardessus de mon cousin! Ne voulez-vous pas leur donner maintenant leurs cravates, leurs faux-cols et leurs mouchoirs aussi?»

Mais je lui ai donné une vieille robe

187. Résumé. Pierre demande; Anne répond; chapeau gris; plus beau chapeau; chapeau de soie; pauvre femme, travail; vêtements pour enfants; cravates, etc.; pantalon, habit, pardessus; vêtements de l'oncle et du cousin.

188. Oral Drill. 1. They show him; he showed us. 2. I shall not ask the milliner; she asks me. 3. Will they give

you?; you will give to them. 4. Did we answer them?; they did not answer us. 5. He asked for me; I asked for him. 6. She asked him; he asked her. 7. He sold it; he sold him. 8. Will he not show his friend?; he did not show him. 9. Will you not answer them?; they answered you. 10. They will give him; he gave to them. 11. Will she tell you?; you will tell her. 12. Did you give some?; I gave some. 13. We will speak to them. 14. They will speak to him. 15. She showed him the ribbon. 16. He shows her the handkerchiefs. 17. The milliner gives her the hat. 18. The tailor gave him the collars and neckties.

II

189. DIALOGUE

1. At what price will you sell me an overcoat?	À quel prix me vendrez-vous un pardessus?
2. I have many fine overcoats. I will sell you one of gray wool at 50 francs	J'ai beaucoup de beaux pardessus. Je vous en vendrai un de laine grise à cinquante francs
3. I have not enough money to give you so much. I wish to buy a suit also	Je n'ai pas assez d'argent pour vous donner tant. Je veux acheter un costume aussi
4. I can sell you a black cotton overcoat very cheap. There is one at 25 francs 50 centimes	Je peux vous vendre un pardessus de coton noir très bon marché. En voilà un à vingt-cinq francs cinquante centimes
5. Will you show me some hats now?	Voulez-vous me montrer des chapeaux maintenant?
6. There are some very fine hats of black velvet! Do you want one?	Voilà de très beaux chapeaux de velours noir! En voulez-vous un?
7. What's the price of it?	Quel en est le prix?
8. I will sell you the beautiful hat which you have there at 5 francs	Je vous vendrai le beau chapeau que vous avez là à cinq francs

9. Now you will show me some neckties and some collars, if you have any to show me	**Maintenant vous me montrerez des cravates et des faux-cols, si vous en avez à me montrer**
10. If I have any! Don't ask me if I have any, sir! I have many!	**Si j'en ai! Ne me demandez pas si j'en ai, monsieur! J'en ai beaucoup!**
11. Will you show me some cravats of blue or red silk?	**Voulez-vous me montrer des cravates de soie bleue ou rouge?**
12. There they are, the red (ones) and the blue. Will you choose some, sir?	**Les voilà, les rouges et les bleues! En choisirez-vous, monsieur?**
13. Thanks! You can give me two blue cravats	**Merci! Vous pouvez me donner deux cravates bleues**

190. Conversation. 1. What did the wife ask her husband? 2. What did the husband answer his wife? 3. What hat did the wife order? 4. For whom did the poor woman ask for clothes? 5. Did Anne give any to the poor woman? 6. What clothes did she not give? 7. What did she give? 8. Where did Anne find the clothes that she gave the poor woman? 9. Where are Peter's uncle and cousin? 10. Will they wear their old clothes?

191. Theme. Tuesday I entered a store and asked a clerk to show me some gray suits. He showed me one. I asked him: "What is the price of this suit?" He answered me: "It is not dear; it is very cheap." I answered him: "I have not much money; I have very little. I shall have more money soon, perhaps, but I haven't much yet." He answered me: "You haven't enough money to (**pour**) buy your clothes here." I answered him: "I shall look for a clerk who will sell clothes to a poor school-master." He answered me: "You will not find any." I answered him: "I do not like your store. I bought an overcoat, a hat, some handkerchiefs, collars and neckties here, and I have always bought many things in your store, but I shall not ask you to

(**de**) sell me my clothes now. If I have not enough money to (**pour**) buy my clothes in your store, you will lose a little too. I cannot buy much because I am poor, but I can tell my friends to (**de**) buy their clothes in the store which is at the street-corner. There are fewer clerks there, but they will not ask the poor how much money they have."

192. Exercises. *A.* Use the direct object pronouns 'him,' 'you,' 'them' (*m.*), 'us,' 'them' (*f.*), 'her,' with the following verbs: **montrer, demander, donner** in *present, past indefinite, future:* § 480, *B.*

B. Use the corresponding indirect object pronouns with the same verbs.

20. VINGTIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃tjɛm]

Review

I

193. 1. I shall leave them. 2. You are carrying him. 3. We buy them. 4. You will show her. 5. I answer her. 6. I will answer him. 7. You will ask for some. 8. Are you calling us? 9. We are not calling you. 10. He will say it. 11. Will you say it? 12. We will not buy it. 13. Do you like it? 14. I do not like it. 15. She will like him. 16. He liked her. 17. She did not carry them to the tailor's. 18. He answered her immediately. 19. She answers him always. 20. He ordered some Sunday. 21. They will not order any Tuesday. 22. I am asking for some. 23. We will not carry them to the milliner's. 24. You ask him. 25. We answered them immediately. 26. How many things you will say to them! 27. The clerk speaks to her always. 28. The gray woolen coats cost little money. 29. How much money? 30. Much money. 31. More

money than the trousers. 32. Less money than the overcoats. 33. How many collars, and how many cravats will he sell you? 34. Many collars and enough cravats. 35. Enough collars, but few cravats.

II

194. 1. We will carry them immediately. 2. I will call her Sunday or Tuesday. 3. The coachman will answer him. 4. The travelers perhaps are answering her. 5. The milliner will show her a hat. 6. She has not asked her the price yet. 7. She asks her husband always for a little money. 8. The clerk sells us more woolen suits than the tailor. 9. The traveler brings him many things. 10. What will you say to them? 11. I show her some gray ribbons and some white lace. 12. Show the travelers some cotton handkerchiefs. 13. I have shown them some blue silk cravats and some collars. 14. We call the cabby and give him two francs and fifty centimes. 15. We called the waiter and asked him for the bill-of-fare. 16. The tailor will tell him that the woolen overcoat and the gray cotton trousers are very cheap. 17. If you buy the stockings and dresses very cheaply, you will sell them dear. 18. I have not sent him the five cotton suits yet. 19. She asks him for a big glass of water. 20. I am poor because I have not enough money. 21. If you have not much money you are poor. 22. The tailors have more coats than you, but fewer overcoats. 23. They have enough of them and they do not cost them much.

21. VINGT ET UNIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃ te ynjɛm]

L'ÉGLISE

I

195. Present Participle (endings of the three conjugations):

I. *giving*	II. *finishing*	III. *selling*
donn **ant** [dɔnɑ̃]	fin **iss ant** [finisɑ̃]	vend **ant** [vɑ̃dɑ̃]

196. Present Participle of *avoir* and *être*:

having	*being*
ay **ant** [ɛjɑ̃]	ét **ant** [etɑ̃]

Past Participle of *avoir* and *être*:

eu [y], *had* — **été** [ete], *been*

197. Future of *avoir* and *être*:

I shall have, etc.	*I shall be*, etc.
j'aur **ai** [ʒɔre], etc., as in § 147	je ser **ai** [ʒə sərɛ], etc., as in § 147

198. Prepositions, except **en**, govern the **Infinitive**. The French do not say 'for going,' 'without going,' etc.; they say 'for to go,' 'without to go,' etc. The only preposition which governs the present participle, as all do in English, is **en**, *in*.

pour aller, *for going*
sans partir, *without departing*
après avoir répondu, *after having answered*
avant de finir, *before finishing*

But **en** allant, *in going;* **en** répondant, etc.

199. In English the infinitive is sometimes preceded by *to* and sometimes not. We say 'I dare to go,' but 'you dare not go,' 'he is able to go,' but 'he can go.' In French

(1) the infinitive may stand alone,
(2) may be preceded by **de**,
(3) may be preceded by **à**.

As in English, it is *what goes before*, not the infinitive itself, that determines the presence or absence of a preposition: e.g. **aller** is followed directly by the infinitive, **oublier** by **de**+infinitive, **apprendre** by **à**+infinitive.

(1) **Nous allons partir**, We are going to leave
(2) **Il a oublié de venir**, He forgot to come
(3) **Il apprend à lire**, He is learning to read

Cf. **Il y a peu à voir**, There is little to see.

This usage can be learned only by observation, and is not of great importance for the beginner.

200. VOCABULARY

bonjour! [bɔ̃ʒuːr], good day!
conduire [kɔ̃dyiːr], to conduct, drive
la **dame** [dam], lady
déjà [deʒa], already
dit [di], *past participle of* **dire**
étonner [etɔne], to astonish
de bonne heure [də bɔn œːr], early
le **jour** [ʒuːr], day
mademoiselle [madmwazɛl], Miss
le **matin** [matɛ̃], morning
le **monde** [mɔ̃ːd], world, people
la **musique** [myzik], music
le **plaisir** [plɛziːr], pleasure
presque [prɛskə], almost
puis [pyi], then
le **sermon** [sɛrmɔ̃], sermon
tard [taːr], late
tous les (jours) [tu le], every (day)
voir [vwaːr], to see; *past participle* **vu** [vy]

201. DRILL

1. Being; having been — **Étant; ayant été**
2. Having; having had — **Ayant; ayant eu**
3. I shall have; I have had — **J'aurai; j'ai eu**
4. I shall be; I have been — **Je serai; j'ai été**
5. We shall have; we have said — **Nous aurons; nous avons dit**
6. You shall be; you have been — **Vous serez; vous avez été**
7. In speaking; in finishing — **En parlant; en finissant**
8. Without being; without having — **Sans être; sans avoir**
9. In losing; in building — **En perdant; en bâtissant**
10. She will be; they will have — **Elle sera; ils auront**

11. To have seen; to have said	**Avoir vu; avoir dit**
12. Without having been; without having had	**Sans avoir été; sans avoir eu**
13. Before going; after having spoken	**Avant d'aller; après avoir parlé**
14. Without going out; for departing	**Sans sortir; pour partir**
15. Having gone out; having said	**Étant sorti; ayant dit**
16. Having answered; having come	**Ayant répondu; étant venu**
17. He will not have; she will not be	**Il n'aura pas; elle ne sera pas**
18. Has she had? has he been?	**A-t-elle eu? a-t-il été?**
19. Not having been; not having had	**N'ayant pas été; n'ayant pas eu**
20. You will not have; you will not be	**Vous n'aurez pas; vous ne serez pas**

202. Reading. En allant à l'église dimanche matin j'ai vu beaucoup de magasins. Mais presque tous les magasins sont fermés le dimanche et il n'y a pas beaucoup de monde sur les trottoirs. Il y a très peu à voir dans les rues le dimanche. Je suis montée dans une voiture et j'ai demandé au cocher de me conduire à l'église. La ville n'est pas très grande et je suis arrivée à l'église de bonne heure. Toutes mes amies sont venues plus tard et elles ont été étonnées de me voir déjà arrivée. Après avoir eu le plaisir d'entendre un très beau sermon, je suis sortie de l'église. En allant au parc où il y a toujours de la musique le dimanche, j'ai perdu mon mouchoir. Au coin d'une grande rue j'ai vu un petit magasin où j'ai acheté un mouchoir qui m'a coûté un franc cinquante. Qu'est-ce que ma tante me dira et qu'est-ce que je lui répondrai? Mon oncle, en me donnant le mouchoir que j'ai perdu, m'a dit: «Voilà un très beau mouchoir de soie. Ne le perdez pas parce qu'il est vieux; un de mes parents l'a donné à votre tante. C'est

de la soie française.» J'ai perdu tant de mouchoirs! J'en perds un presque tous les jours.

203. Résumé. Église; magasins; monde; voir; voiture; arrivée; amies; sermon; parc; magasin; tante; oncle; soie; parents; perdre.

204. Oral Drill. 1. Where have you been? 2. What have you had? 3. Having been seen. 4. Having had some ribbons. 5. Not having seen the carriage. 6. They have been seen. 7. Who has been here? 8. You have been there. 9. Who said it? 10. They said it. 11. She was astonished. 12. Have you been at church? 13. We have not been there. 14. Has he had a carriage? 15. In giving her a handkerchief. 16. In finishing the sermon. 17. Have you heard the sermon? 18. In answering her. 19. Where will you be? 20. Shall we have the pleasure? 21. I shall have seen him. 22. Not having lost my handkerchief. 23. Your handkerchiefs will be lost. 24. We shall have lost two of them. 25. Will they have flowers? 26. Will he not be seen? 27. In finishing. 28. Having been almost finished. 29. Without driving the carriage. 30. Before answering them.

II

205. DIALOGUE

1. Good day, sir!	**Bonjour, monsieur!**
2. Good day, Miss!	**Bonjour, mademoiselle!**
3. I saw you at church	**Je vous ai vu à l'église**
4. Yes, I went there to hear the sermon	**Oui, je suis allé là pour entendre le sermon**
5. You astonish me! You did not go to church to see the people?	**Vous m'étonnez! Vous n'êtes pas allé à l'église pour voir le monde?**
6. No, I did not see the fair ladies. I heard a very fine sermon and then I went out (left)	**Non, je n'ai pas vu les belles dames. J'ai entendu un très beau sermon et puis je suis sorti**

7. And then you went to the park?	**Et puis vous êtes allé au parc?**
8. No, I don't like music and there is some there every Sunday	**Non, je n'aime pas la musique et il y en a là tous les dimanches**
9. You will have the pleasure of hearing music at your aunt's later	**Vous aurez le plaisir d'entendre de la musique chez votre tante plus tard**
10. No, I shall not have the pleasure of hearing any at my aunt's. Before leaving the church I said to her: "I shall not be there"	**Non, je n'aurai pas le plaisir d'en entendre chez ma tante. Avant de partir de l'église je lui ai dit: «Je ne serai pas là»**
11. There's my carriage! If you wish to get in, I will ask the coachman to drive us to your aunt's before driving me to my mother's	**Voilà ma voiture! Si vous voulez monter, je demanderai au cocher de nous conduire chez votre tante avant de me conduire chez ma mère**
12. Thanks! There will be too many people there, and too much music!	**Merci! Il y aura trop de monde là, et trop de musique!**

206. Conversation. 1. What did you see in arriving at church? 2. Did you see any ladies in the street who have been at church? 3. Have they been in the stores? 4. Did the coachman go to church? 5. Who arrived at church early and who arrived late? 6. Did you hear the music at the park? 7. What did your aunt say because you lost your handkerchief? 8. What did you answer her? 9. Can you buy handkerchiefs on Sunday? 10. Did you lose a silk or a cotton handkerchief in going to church?

207. Theme. Sunday morning, getting into my carriage with one of my friends, I went to hear the sermon at church. Not having started very early, we arrived late and we did not hear all the sermon. On going out of the church we met some friends who said to us: "Having had the pleasure of

hearing a fine sermon and having heard much good music also, we will have the pleasure now of going with you to see the city. Get into our carriage! You will be astonished! You will find the stores all closed, the people going out of the houses, walking in the street, meeting friends, talking, answering, buying flowers, choosing them, giving them to the ladies, going to the park, hearing the music, losing their way and seeking it, and then arriving at the house and dining, in (**en**) a word having a great deal of (much) pleasure." We got into the carriage, and after having been at the park, and having talked and walked and dined with our friends, we went to the house of my aunt.

208. Exercises. *A.* Use in sentences **en** with the present participle of the following verbs:

go	finish	reply
show	choose	lose

B. Finish the following, using **répondre**, **chercher**, **parler** or **voir**:

Il est monté dans sa chambre pour . . .
Il m'a vu sans . . .
Il est parti après avoir . . .
Elle est sortie avant de . . .

C. Conjugate:

I have had few friends. I have been astonished.

D. Conjugate:

I shall have some milk. I shall be seen.

E. Drill on *present*, *past indefinite*, *future* of **avoir** and **être**: § 480, *B*.

22. VINGT-DEUXIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t døzjɛm]

CHEZ LE MARCHAND DE TABAC

I

209. Conjunctive Pronouns

Direct object	*Indirect object*	**Disjunctive Pronouns**
1 **me** [mə], me	**me** [mə], to me	**moi** [mwa], me
2. (**te** [tə], thee)	(**te** [tə], to thee)	(**toi** [twa], thee)
3. **le** [lə], him, it	**lui** [lyi], to him	**lui** [lyi], him
3. **la** [la], her, it	**lui** [lyi], to her	**elle** [ɛl], her
1. **nous** [nu], us	**nous** [nu], to us	**nous** [nu], us
2. **vous** [vu], you	**vous** [vu], to you	**vous** [vu], you
3. **les** [le] (*m.*), them	**leur** [lœːr] (*m.*), to them	**eux** [ø], them
3. **les** [le] (*f.*), them	**leur** [lœːr] (*f.*), to them	**elles** [ɛl], them

210. Conjunctive pronouns are always *objects of verbs*. Disjunctive pronouns are used:

1. After prepositions: **avec moi, sans lui, chez eux,** etc.
2. After **c'est,** *it is;* **c'est moi, c'est lui,** etc.[1]
3. Where the pronoun is used alone, i.e. neither as subject nor object of a verb:

Qui est là? Moi! Who is there? I!
Moi, je suis allé, *I* went

4. Where the pronoun is used as part of a compound subject:
Son père et lui sont allés, His father and he went

211. VOCABULARY

l'allumette [lalymɛt] (*f.*), match
aujourd'hui [oʒurdyi], to-day
autre [oːtr], other
boire [bwaːr], to drink; *past participle* **bu** [by]

[1] The French say:

c'est moi, it is I
(**c'est toi,** it is thou)
c'est lui, it is he
c'est elle, it is she
c'est nous, it is we
c'est vous, it is you
ce sont eux, it is they
ce sont elles, it is they

But according to a decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction **c'est eux, c'est elles** are not incorrect.

la boîte [bwa:t], box
la bouteille [butɛ:j], bottle
le café [kafe], coffee; café
le cigare [siga:r], cigar
la cigarette [sigarɛt], cigarette
à côté de [a kote də], beside
donc [dõ], therefore, accordingly, then
fumer [fyme], to smoke
le marchand [marʃã], merchant, dealer
la pipe [pip], pipe
près (de) [prɛ], near
seul [sœl], alone, only
souvent [suvã], often
le tabac [taba], tobacco
trois [trwa], three
y[1] [i], there

212. DRILL

1. With him; with them (*m.*)	**Avec lui; avec eux**
2. Without her; without them (*f.*)	**Sans elle; sans elles**
3. For them (*m.*); for him	**Pour eux; pour lui**
4. Of her; of them (*f.*)	**D'elle; d'elles**
5. Beside me; beside us	**À côté de moi; à côté de nous**
6. Near him; near her	**Près de lui; près d'elle**
7. It is he; it is they (*m.*)	**C'est lui; ce sont eux**
8. It is she; it is they (*f.*)	**C'est elle; ce sont elles**
9. At his house; at their (*m.*) house	**Chez lui; chez eux**
10. At her house; at their (*f.*) house	**Chez elle; chez elles**
11. It is we; it is I	**C'est nous; c'est moi**
12. At my house; at our house	**Chez moi; chez nous**
13. Who speaks? he and I	**Qui parle? lui et moi**
14. Who came? she and he	**Qui est venu? elle et lui**
15. Who said it? I!	**Qui l'a dit? moi!**
16. At whose house? at theirs (*f.*)	**Chez qui? chez elles**
17. At your house; at his house	**Chez vous; chez lui**
18. He speaks with her	**Il parle avec elle**
19. She spoke with him	**Elle a parlé avec lui**
20. My brother and I; his sister and he	**Mon frère et moi; sa sœur et lui**

[1] **y** is placed before verbs like conjunctive object-pronouns: **nous y allons,** *we go there.*

213. Reading. Un jour Madame Lefèvre et son mari sont sortis avec leur fils et leur fille pour aller dîner dans un café. En entrant dans la rue Royale ils ont rencontré le frère de Monsieur Lefèvre. Les enfants lui ont demandé de venir avec eux. Leur oncle leur a répondu: "Merci beaucoup, je n'aime pas à manger tout seul; mais venez avec moi au petit café qui est là au coin, à côté de l'église. Aujourd'hui un de mes amis y conduira sa femme, et il m'a demandé d'y venir aussi. Mais ils n'y sont pas encore arrivés. Ils n'y arriveront pas de bonne heure: ils dînent chez des parents. Voulez-vous venir avec moi?" Ils sont donc allés avec lui, mais avant d'arriver au café le frère de Monsieur Lèfevre est entré chez un marchand de tabac. Il y a acheté du tabac pour lui—il fume toujours la pipe—et des cigarettes pour son ami. Il a acheté aussi des cigares pour Monsieur Lefèvre. Le marchand lui a vendu trois boîtes d'allumettes; elles lui ont coûté vingt-cinq centimes la boîte. Au café ils ont trouvé une table près de la porte, devant la fenêtre, dans la grande salle, où il y a toujours beaucoup de familles qui dînent. Le fils de Madame Lefèvre lui a dit: "Voilà un de mes amis! Je l'ai vu tout de suite en entrant. Je veux lui demander de venir manger avec moi." Pierre l'a appelé.

Les enfants ont beaucoup mangé, un peu trop, peut-être. Ils ont aussi bu une bouteille de lait. Pierre a demandé à son ami de venir bientôt jouer chez lui; mais le père de son ami a dit: "Non; il jouera chez nous." Et puis le pauvre petit garçon est sorti avec son père, sa mère et sa soeur sans avoir répondu à Pierre: il a dîné avec lui, mais il jouera tout seul. Monsieur et Madame Lefèvre, leur fille et leur fils sont sortis tard parce que Monsieur Lefèvre a fumé un cigare après avoir bu son café.

214. Résumé. Madame Lefèvre, mari, fils, fille; oncle, demandé, répondu; marchand de tabac; au café. table; ami de Pierre; père de l'ami; enfants, mangé; oncle; jouer.

215. Oral Drill. 1. Without him; with her. 2. For me; for him. 3. With them (*m.*); without him. 4. Beside them (*f.*); near her. 5. It is I; it is he; it is she. 6. Is it we?; is it I? 7. Who spoke, he or she? 8. To whose house?; to our house. 9. At my house; at their (*m.*) house. 10. His mother and he; her father and she. 11. Who spoke — he, she, I, they (*m.*)? 12. She speaks of him. 13. He speaks for me. 14. Who came — he or she? 15. We are near him. 16. It is she who came. 17. Who will be there — he or I? 18. You are not near me. 19. We are not with them (*m.*). 20. Is it he or they (*f.*)?

II

216. DIALOGUE

1. Will you (do you wish to) go to the café with me?	**Voulez-vous aller au café avec moi?**
2. Yes, I will (wish to) go there with you	**Oui, je veux y aller avec vous**
3. Does your uncle want to go there with you and me?	**Est-ce que votre oncle veut y aller avec vous et moi?**
4. He? no. He has already breakfasted.	**Lui? non. Il a déjà déjeuné**
5. That's astonishing! I saw him at the tobacconist's, and he said to me: "Come breakfast with me." He bought a box of cigars	**C'est étonnant! Je l'ai vu chez le marchand de tabac, et il m'a dit: "Venez déjeuner avec moi." Il a acheté une boîte de cigares**
6. That's not for him. He has three brothers: my father and two others. It's for them	**Ce n'est pas pour lui. Il a trois frères: mon père et deux autres. C'est pour eux**
7. He bought also some tobacco. Is that for them also?	**Il a acheté aussi du tabac. Est-ce pour eux aussi?**
8. No, it's for him; he always smokes a pipe. It's they who will smoke the cigars	**Non, c'est pour lui; il fume toujours la pipe. Ce sont eux qui fumeront les cigares**
9. Does he not smoke (smoke no) cigars?	**Est-ce qu'il ne fume pas de cigares?**

10. No, he does not smoke any	Non, il n'en fume pas.
11. There's the café! My brother and I dine here very often	Voilà le café! Mon frère et moi nous déjeunons ici très souvent
12. Who then is that gentleman near the window? Ah! it's Peter. Yes, it's he	Qui est donc ce monsieur près de la fenêtre? Ah! c'est Pierre. Oui, c'est lui
13. And the two men with him?	Et les deux messieurs avec lui?
14. Those are two friends who are breakfasting with him. He is always with them	Ce sont deux amis qui déjeunent avec lui. Il est toujours avec eux
15. I want some coffee. Waiter! Coffee for me	Moi, je veux du café. Garçon! du café pour moi!
16. I'll order some for myself also—no, some milk! We'll drink, you coffee and I a bottle of milk	J'en commanderai pour moi aussi —non, du lait. Nous boirons, vous du café et moi une bouteille de lait

217. Conversation. 1. Where did Mr. and Mrs. Lèfevre go? 2. With whom did they go there? 3. Whom did they meet? 4. What did they ask him? 5. What did he answer them? 6. What did Mr. Lefèvre's brother buy for him? 7. What did Peter say to his mother? 8. Did Peter's friend come to put his chair beside him or beside her? 9. Did Peter's uncle leave with his brother's family or without them? 10. Will Peter's friend play at his house?

218. Theme. My father told me that he met your uncle at a café the other day. One of their friends came in all alone. He came to put his chair beside them and my father and he drank coffee, but your uncle said: "I have not dined yet," and he ordered a bottle of milk and some meat. Then he smoked his pipe. My father often smokes

a pipe at our house, but he likes to smoke cigars at the cafés. Your uncle said to him: "*I* smoke a pipe at the café; but my wife wishes that I smoke cigars if I am with her." My father replied to him: "*I* smoke a pipe if I am at my house; I cannot smoke cigars there because my wife does not like them. It is she that chooses."

219. Exercises. *A*. Use the disjunctive pronouns 'him,' 'us,' 'them' (*m.*), 'me,' 'you,' 'her,' 'them' (*f.*), with the following prepositions: 'for,' 'without,' 'with,' 'after.'

B. Using the same pronouns, fill the following blank: 'It is —!'

23. VINGT-TROISIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t trwazjɛm]

LES JOURS DE LA SEMAINE

I

220. *This, that* before nouns = **ce** [sə] (*m.*) / **cette** [sɛt] (*f.*) / **ces** [se] (*pl.*), *these, those.*

ce livre, this *or* that book
cette encre, this *or* that ink
ces garçons, these *or* those boys
ces dames, these *or* those ladies

Note 1. Before a masculine noun or adjective beginning with a vowel use **cet** [sɛt]: **cet ami,** *this* (or *that*) *friend;* **cet homme,** *this* or *that man* (cf. p. 25, note 3).

Note 2. If it is necessary to distinguish *this* and *that* before nouns, add to the noun **-ci** (*here*) for *this* and **-là** (*there*) for *that.*

ce livre-ci et cette plume-là, *this* book and *that* pen
ces livres-ci et ces plumes-là, *these* books and *those* pens

221. Used *without* a noun *this* = **ceci** [səsi], *that* = **cela** [səla].

Ceci est bon, This is good
Voulez-vous cela? Do you wish that?

222. **Les Jours de la Semaine:**

dimanche [dimɑ̃:ʃ], Sunday
lundi [lœ̃di], Monday
mardi [mardi], Tuesday
mercredi [mɛrkrədi], Wednesday
jeudi [ʒœdi], Thursday
vendredi [vɑ̃drədi], Friday
samedi [samdi], Saturday

223. VOCABULARY

l'après-midi [lapʀɛ midi] (*f.*), afternoon
avant[1] [avɑ̃], before
bien [bjɛ̃], well; **eh** [e] **bien!** well!
derrière [dɛrjɛ:r], behind
écouter [ekute], to listen to
enfin [ɑ̃fɛ̃], finally, at last
la fois[2] [fwa], time; **une—,** once; **deux—,** twice
le gâteau [gɑto], cake
l'heure[2] [lœ:r] (*f.*), hour (time)
l'homme [lɔm], man
joli [ʒɔli], pretty
le légume [legym], vegetable
(le) midi [midi], noon
la note [nɔt], bill
oublier [ublie], to forget
payer [pɛje], to pay, pay for
la semaine [səmɛn], week
seulement [sœlmɑ̃], only
si [si], so
le soir [swa:r], evening

224. DRILL

1. This boy; this girl — **Ce garçon; cette fille**
2. This man; these men — **Cet homme; ces hommes**
3. This bill and that bill — **Cette note-ci et cette note-là**
4. These boys and those girls — **Ces garçons et ces filles**
5. These men and those men — **Ces hommes-ci et ces hommes-là**
6. That is bought; this is sold — **Cela est acheté; ceci est vendu**

[1] **avant** = *before* (of time): *before ten o'clock;* **devant** = *before* (of place), *in front of: before the house.* Note that **avant** is followed by **de** before an infinitive: **avant de partir.**

[2] **heure** = *time* of day: *what time is it?*
fois = *time* in a series: *four times, five times,* etc.
temps = *time* in all other senses; also *weather.*

7. This café and that café	Ce café-ci et ce café-là
8. This is for me; that is for him	Ceci est pour moi; cela est pour lui
9. Behind these houses	Derrière ces maisons
10. Eat these vegetables!	Mangez ces légumes!
11. Sell this tobacco for him!	Vendez ce tabac pour lui!
12. Do you like this or that?	Aimez-vous ceci ou cela?
13. This man speaks of him	Cet homme parle de lui
14. Those ladies came with me three times	Ces dames sont venues avec moi trois fois
15. This lady said that once	Cette dame a dit cela une fois
16. This café has been closed twice	Ce café a été fermé deux fois
17. Do you want this cake or that cake?	Voulez-vous ce gâteau-ci ou ce gâteau-là?
18. This soup is for them (*f.*)	Ce potage est pour elles
19. This meat is not for him	Cette viande n'est pas pour lui
20. He wants that soup, I want this soup	Il veut ce potage-là, je veux ce potage-ci

225. Reading. Cette semaine je suis allé trois fois chez Henri [ãri], sans le trouver. Je suis allé chez lui lundi soir, mercredi matin et mardi à midi. Cet homme est toujours sorti! C'est étonnant, cela! Il est venu aussi trois fois chez moi cette semaine-ci, mais toujours un peu après midi. Il ne m'a pas trouvé. Cela n'est pas étonnant. Je déjeune à cette heure-là. Il est venu jeudi soir et samedi matin, sans me trouver, mais ce matin il m'a enfin trouvé. Il est venu cette fois de très bonne heure. Il m'a demandé: «Où avez-vous donc été tous ces jours-ci?» — «Moi! Écoutez ceci! Vous me trouverez tous les jours dans cette chambre, mais avant midi seulement. N'oubliez pas cela! À cette heure-là je déjeune au café. Vous avez vu cette grande église au coin de la rue? Eh bien! derrière cette église, dans un de ces petits bâtiments, il y a un petit café. Vous l'avez peut-être vu, près de cette autre rue-là. Vous me trouverez toujours à midi dans ce petit café-là, le mardi, le

jeudi et le samedi, mais ces jours-là seulement. Le dimanche je suis chez ma tante. J'y mange très bien: le potage est bon, la viande est bonne, les légumes sont bons, et

Il y a un petit café

quels gâteaux! — et puis, il n'y a pas de note à payer ce jour-là! Le lundi je déjeune encore chez elle; le mercredi, en ville, chez mon oncle Pierre. Et le vendredi? demandez-

vous. Ce jour-là je déjeune à midi avec mon tailleur, ce petit homme qui m'a vendu ce costume-ci, et cet habit, et ces faux-cols, et cette belle cravate, et ce pardessus noir, et ce joli pantalon gris. Je vous dirai pourquoi je déjeune avec lui tous les vendredis. Écoutez ceci! Je n'ai pas assez d'argent pour payer ces beaux costumes, ces belles cravates, cet habit, ce pardessus. Donc, je donne à déjeuner tous les vendredis à ce pauvre homme!»

226. Résumé. Je cherche Henri; Henri me cherche; je déjeune; quand; où; dimanche et lundi; la tante bonne cuisinière; l'oncle; le tailleur; qui paye, et pourquoi?

227. Oral Drill. 1. This afternoon; this morning. 2. These cakes; this vegetable. 3. These vegetables; this cake. 4. This bill and that bill. 5. These cakes and those cakes. 6. Pay this man! 7. Behind this house. 8. He likes this; I like that. 9. At last these boys came. 10. Having paid this man. 11. These bills which you paid.[1] 12. You forgot[1] them this time. 13. I have bought only these cakes. 14. This tobacconist sells only tobacco. 15. Do you want this or that? 16. This cake is for this girl. 17. These vegetables are for this boy. 18. Did she come this evening? 19. This is good; that is not good. 20. These cakes are so good!

II

228. DIALOGUE

1. How do you do, Henry! Always in this room! Always that old book in front of you! At what hour will you dine this afternoon?	**Bonjour, Henri** [ãri]! **Toujours dans cette chambre! Toujours ce vieux livre devant vous! À quelle heure dînerez-vous cette après-midi?**
2. It's Sunday to-day; I dine early	**C'est dimanche aujourd'hui; je dîne de bonne heure**
3. In this café?	**Dans ce café-ci?**

[1] See p. 71, footnote 1.

4. No, in that little café at the street-corner	Non, dans ce petit café au coin de la rue
5. Where then?; in this street?	Où donc?; dans cette rue-ci?
6. No, in that other little street beside that big building	Non, dans cette autre petite rue à côté de ce grand bâtiment-là
7. I'll dine with you, but I cannot wear this coat	Je dînerai avec vous, mais je ne peux pas porter cet habit-ci
8. I like that black coat [very] much with those gray trousers	J'aime beaucoup cet habit noir avec ce pantalon gris
9. I dine three times this week with friends	Je dîne trois fois cette semaine avec des amis
10. With whom will you dine Tuesday?	Avec qui dînerez-vous mardi?
11. Tuesday — no, Wednesday, I shall dine with that young man whom you saw at my house	Mardi — non, mercredi, je dîne avec ce jeune homme que vous avez vu chez moi
12. And Thursday?	Et jeudi?
13. I dine at our home that day; but Friday I dine with John	Je dîne chez nous ce jour-là; mais vendredi je dîne avec Jean
14. Ah! that good John! He's your cousin, isn't he?	Ah! ce bon Jean! C'est votre cousin, n'est-ce pas?[1]
15. That man my cousin! No, he's my tailor	Cet homme-là mon cousin! Non, c'est mon tailleur
16. And with whom do you dine Saturday this week?	Et avec qui dînez-vous le samedi de cette semaine?
17. With my cousin, that pretty cousin who has come to Paris, but for this week only	Avec ma cousine, cette jolie cousine qui est venue à Paris, mais pour cette semaine seulement
18. What day will you dine with me again?	Quel jour dînerez-vous encore avec moi?
19. Tuesday of this week perhaps — no — Monday!	Le mardi de cette semaine peut-être — non — lundi!

[1] **n'est-ce pas?** is widely used in French as a sort of question mark.

C'est lui, n'est-ce pas? It's he, isn't it?
Vous y allez, n'est-ce pas? You are going there, aren't you?

229. Conversation. 1. How many times did you go to your friend's house Tuesday and Wednesday? 2. What days did you go to his house? 3. Did he find you Thursday or Saturday when he came to your house? 4. Did he look for you at your house this morning? 5. Where can your friend find you and at what hour? 6. At what hour do you breakfast Friday? 7. Do you breakfast at home every day? 8. At whose house do you lunch Sundays and Mondays? 9. What do you eat at your aunt's house? 10. Will you dine with me at the little café behind the church?

230. Theme. We went to your house this week three times on Monday, five times on Tuesday and once or twice on Wednesday. You were not in this room Monday evening, you were not in this house Tuesday morning, and we did not find you Wednesday afternoon in that little café behind those two large churches at the corner of this street between this big building and that little building. Where have you been all this week? Have you not breakfasted in this café before Thursday or in that café near the church before Friday? We dined in this café Thursday and Saturday, and in that café Friday. In that café the soup and meat are very good; in this café the vegetables are good. Eat one of these cakes, and I will give you a glass of this good milk. This glass is for you—I have drunk from that glass. And now, with these cakes, this bottle, these glasses and this good milk in front of you, you will tell me where you have been all this week.

231. Exercises. *A*. Put the words for *this* (*that*) and *these* before the following:

cake	house	hour	cigarette
bill	vegetable	week	evening
bottle	café	man	friend (*m.*)

B. Use **ceci** and **cela** with the following verbs:

like	choose	finish
forget	listen to	sell
pay	hear	

C. What are the days of the week?

D. Drill on present, past indefinite, future of **oublier:** § 480, *B.*

24. VINGT-QUATRIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t katriɛm]

L'HEURE

I

232. The French do not say *I am hungry, I am thirsty;* they say *I have hunger, I have thirst.*

J'ai faim [fɛ̃], I am hungry
Il a soif [swaf], He is thirsty

233. **On** [õ] (= Latin *homo*, 'man') is much used in French; it corresponds to the English indefinite *one, people, we, you, they.*

On dit qu'il perd beaucoup, They say he loses a great deal
On ne dit pas cela en anglais, We don't say that in English

234.

1 **un** [œ̃]	5 **cinq** [sɛ̃k]	9 **neuf** [nœf]
2 **deux** [dø]	6 **six** [sis]	10 **dix** [dis]
3 **trois** [trwa]	7 **sept** [sɛt]	11 **onze** [õːz]
4 **quatre** [katr]	8 **huit** [yit]	12 **douze** [duːz]

NOTE. Pronunciation of **cinq, six, sept, huit, neuf, dix:**

1. Used alone:	[sɛ̃k],	[sis],	[sɛt],	[yit],	[nœf],	[dis]
2. Before a word beginning with a consonant	[sɛ̃],	[si],	[sɛ],	[yi],	[nø],	[di]
3. Before a word beginning with a vowel	[sɛ̃k],	[siz],	[sɛt],	[yit],	[nœv],	[diz]

235. The Clock.

Quelle heure est-il? What time is it?
Il est une heure, It is one o'clock
Il est quatre heures, It is four o'clock
Il est huit heures dix, It is 8:10
Il est sept heures un quart, It is 7:15
Il est neuf heures et demie, It is 9:30
Il est neuf heures moins dix, It is 8:50
Il est neuf heures moins le quart, It is 8:45
Il est midi; il est minuit, It is 12 (noon); it is 12 (midnight)
Il est midi dix, It is 12:10 P.M.
Il est minuit et demi, It is 12:30 A.M.
À quelle heure allez-vous? At what time do you go?

236. VOCABULARY

avancer [avãse], to advance, be fast
ensemble [ãsã:bl], together
mal [mal], badly
la montre [mõ:tr], watch
la pendule [pãdyl], clock
quand [kã], when
regarder [rəgarde], to look at
retarder [rətarde], to be slow

237. DRILL

1. What time is it? I'm hungry — **Quelle heure est-il? J'ai faim**
2. It's one o'clock; it's two o'clock — **Il est une heure; il est deux heures**
3. It's five or six o'clock by my watch — **Il est cinq ou six heures à ma montre**
4. It's half past eight or nine — **Il est huit heures et demie ou neuf heures**
5. Are you thirsty? Are you hungry? — **Avez-vous soif? Avez-vous faim?**
6. At what o'clock do you breakfast? — **À quelle heure déjeunez-vous?**
7. At 11 o'clock or at noon — **À onze heures ou à midi**
8. At what hour do you breakfast in the morning? — **À quelle heure déjeunez-vous le matin?**
9. At a quarter before seven — **À sept heures moins un quart**

10. And I at a quarter past seven	**Et moi à sept heures un quart**
11. When does one breakfast?	**Quand est-ce qu'on déjeune?**
12. One breakfasts at nine or ten o'clock	**On déjeune à neuf ou dix heures**
13. When did you finish the book?	**Quand avez-vous fini le livre?**
14. At midnight; at 12:15 A.M.	**À minuit; à minuit un quart**
15. I finished it at nine o'clock	**Je l'ai fini à neuf heures**
16. We finished it at 8:10	**Nous l'avons fini à huit heures dix**
17. And he at ten minutes of eight	**Et lui à huit heures moins dix**
18. Are they hungry or thirsty?	**Ont-ils faim ou soif?**
19. One is not hungry in the morning	**On n'a pas faim le matin**
20. This watch is slow and that watch is fast	**Cette montre-ci retarde et cette montre-là avance**

238. Reading. Jean et moi nous allons dîner ensemble mardi, jeudi, et samedi entre six et sept heures du soir. Ici en ville on dîne entre cinq et sept ou huit heures du soir et on y déjeune entre sept et huit heures du matin. Jean est venu chez moi à six heures un quart. Il m'a dit: «N'avez-vous pas faim? À quelle heure allons-nous dîner?» J'ai répondu: «Il n'est pas encore six heures. Il est seulement cinq heures et demie à ma montre.» «Cette montre-là,» me répond-il, «ne marche pas bien. Est-ce qu'il n'y a pas de pendule dans cette maison-ci?» — «Allez voir dans cette chambre à côté, il y en a deux là.» — «Eh bien! Il est seulement six heures à cette pendule-ci, mais il est déjà sept heures dix à cette pendule-là! l'une retarde, l'autre avance, et les deux marchent mal. Il est sept heures moins un quart à ma montre.» — «Ah! s'il est déjà si tard, je partirai avec vous.»

Nous sommes donc partis ensemble, lui et moi. Arrivés au café, nous avons choisi une table sur le trottoir. Nous avons fini de dîner à huit heures un quart. On a toujours

faim le soir quand on n'a pas mangé depuis onze heures ou midi. Après notre dîner nous avons causé avec deux ou trois de nos amis qui dînent toujours au même café, et qui y arrivent un quart d'heure ou une demi-heure avant nous. Jean a parlé; moi, j'ai écouté. A neuf heures nous sommes partis de là pour aller au parc où il y a toujours de la musique entre neuf heures et demie et dix heures du soir le mardi et le jeudi. Nous sommes sortis du parc à dix heures un quart, mais il a sonné onze heures moins un quart quand je suis arrivé chez moi.

239. Résumé. Nous dînons; quand; et les autres; Jean me dit; la montre; les deux pendules; la table au café; nos amis; Jean, mois; le parc; sorti.

240. Oral Drill. 1. What time is it? Is it noon? 2. It's half past twelve. 3. No, it's a quarter of one. 4. Are you not hungry? 5. Yes, we will dine together at one. 6. Are you thirsty? 7. No, but I am hungry. 8. Where will you be this afternoon? 9. At the store at two o'clock. 10. At this store or that store? 11. At one of these stores. 12. I shall also be at church. 13. When? At half past four or five? 14. No, at six or seven. 15. When does one dine? 16. At my aunt's house? 17. One dines there at eleven o'clock. 18. No, one dines there at twelve o'clock. 19. Where did you go at nine o'clock? 20. I went to your house at 10:20. 21. That is astonishing. Is your watch fast? 22. No, it is fast. 23. I went there before half past ten. 24. Listen to this! 25. At what time do you eat in this café? 26. Look at that clock! 27. It's a quarter past one. 28. That clock is slow. 29. It's 1:20! 30. No, it's 1:30! 31. Shall we have milk? 32. Yes, and we'll have cakes also. 33. These cakes are good. 34. And this coffee? 35. This coffee is good, that coffee is not good.

II

241. DIALOGUE

1. Are you not hungry?	Est-ce que vous n'avez pas faim?
2. Yes, I'm hungry. What time is it?	Oui, j'ai faim. Quelle heure est-il?
3. It's half past seven. One is always hungry at that hour	Il est sept heures et demie. On a toujours faim à cette heure-là
4. It is less late than that. It's only ten minutes after six	Il est moins tard que cela. Il est seulement six heures dix
5. Your watch is wrong	Votre montre marche mal
6. I have a clock there which is not slow. It is fast	J'ai une pendule là qui ne retarde pas. Elle avance
7. Well! We'll look at this clock. Three o'clock? Four? Five?	Eh bien! Nous regarderons cette pendule! Trois heures? Quatre heures? Cinq heures?
8. Twenty-six minutes of eight!	Huit heures moins vingt-six minutes!
9. Yes, *I* breakfasted before noon. I'm hungry	Oui, j'ai déjeuné avant midi, moi. J'ai faim
10. And *I* am thirsty. We'll dine at the café. One dines very well there. We've been there once already, on Monday of this week	Et moi, j'ai soif. Nous dînerons au café. On y dîne très bien. Nous y avons été déjà une fois, le lundi de cette semaine-ci
11. And your brother, where is he this evening?	Et votre frère, où est-il ce soir?
12. He dines at nine o'clock with one of his employees. He will arrive at the café only between eleven and twelve o'clock	Il dîne à neuf heures avec un de ses employés. Il arrivera au café seulement entre onze heures et minuit
13. But what time is it now? Look at your watch. A quarter of eight already! We shall dine late this evening	Mais quelle heure est-il maintenant? Regardez votre montre. Huit heures moins un quart déjà! Nous dînerons tard ce soir
14. No, my watch is five or ten minutes fast	Non, ma montre avance cinq ou dix minutes

242. Conversation. 1. At what hour do you dine Wednesdays? 2. At what hour do people dine on Sunday? 3. What time is it by your watch? 4. Have you a clock at your house? 5. Does this clock go right? 6. Is that clock slow or is this clock fast? 7. At what time did you dine at the café? 8. If you are thirsty, what do you order? 9. How much did the milk cost which you ordered? 10. At what time did you arrive at the café and at what time did you leave?

243. Theme. John and I have often been at the café together Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays. We breakfast sometimes at half past eight and sometimes at nine, or a quarter of nine. When I arrive at John's house at a quarter past eight, he always says to me: "It is not a quarter past eight already! Your watch is fast!" He looks at his watch, once, twice, three times; then he says: "This watch is fast also." We look at his clocks. He has two clocks in his room. It is twenty minutes past eight now on one clock, on the other it is half past seven. John says: "This clock is always fast, that clock is not fast. It runs well. It is only half past seven by that clock. At twenty-five minutes past eight we will breakfast together." I answer him: "Listen to this, John! Our watches and this clock here are not slow. They are not fast. It is nearly half past eight now. That clock which you are looking at is not running!"

244. Exercises. *A*. Conjugate:

I am hungry. I shall be thirsty.

B. Count from 1 to 12.

C. 1. Tell the time by minutes from noon to 12:10. 2. Tell the time by quarters from noon to midnight. 3. Tell the time by minutes from 10:50 to 11.

D. Students ask in French such questions as: 'What time is it?' 'At what time are you going there?' 'At what time do you dine?' Other students answer them.

25. VINGT-CINQUIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t sɛ̃kjɛm]

Review

I

245. 1. He has had. 2. She has been. 3. We shall have. 4. You will be. 5. In buying, selling and building. 6. Having bought, sold and built. 7. Buy, sell and build! 8. Having said, being seen. 9. For having had. 10. Without having been. 11. Will you be? 12. We shall have. 13. After having had. 14. Without coming. 15. Having departed. 16. Having come. 17. Have you had? 18. Has one been? 19. Will they be? 20. Will they have? 21. It is he. 22. Is it I? 23. It is they (*m.*). 24. It is for them (*f.*). 25. At whose house? 26. At his house. 27. At her house. 28. At my house. 29. His sister and he. 30. Her brother and I. 31. She and he. 32. Who? he? 33. Who? I? 34. It is they (*m.*). 35. It is they (*f.*). 36. Who smokes? he or she? 37. One speaks to them. 38. We speak with them. 39. Who came, he or I? 40. Pay this bill. 41. What time is it? 42. It's noon. 43. It's midnight. 44. It's seven o'clock. 45. It's half past eight. 46. It's a quarter past nine. 47. It's eleven twenty. 48. It's five twenty-five. 49. This watch is slow. 50. Look at that clock. 51. Are you not hungry? 52. I am thirsty. 53. We are not hungry. 54. He is not thirsty. 55. He has had some soup. 56. Have you had any vegetables? 57. We drank together. 58. I saw him. 59. He has not been seen. 60. People saw him. 61. Who drank? 62. Have you had any vegetables? 63. Has the cake been sold? 64. This afternoon. 65. These watches. 66. We listened to those ladies. 67. Early this evening. 68. Look at that man. 69. Don't forget this bill! 70. Pay those bills! 71. Listen to this! 72. We listened to that. 73. He has been behind those men.

74. These clocks are fast, and those clocks are slow. 75. He has been here three times.

II

246. 1. Who will be hungry, you or he? 2. We shall be thirsty, he and I. 3. We have been together seven hours today. 4. You came there before noon and you left finally at midnight. 5. This clock is slow, and that clock is fast. 6. My coat arrived only at nine o'clock this morning. 7. It is so pretty, that watch! 8. Listen to this! If you are hungry at eight or at half past eight this evening, go with me to the café. 9. The ladies will be there only at nine o'clock this time. 10. Will he drink another glass of milk or has he already drunk enough? 11. One is not hungry at midnight, if one has dined well and drunk two or three glasses of milk at ten o'clock. 12. Have they smoked cigars and cigarettes or a pipe this evening? 13. Your watch runs badly; it is fast; it is not seven o'clock yet. 14. If the coachman drives me there, I shall be at church early this morning. 15. Where will the lady be this afternoon? 16. I said to her that I often lose my handkerchiefs in coming out of church. 17. He finally went with me to the tobacconist's to buy this box of matches for us this morning. 18. We heard this music in the park with much pleasure this afternoon. 19. Not having seen him near the church, I went to his house. 20. Not being alone this evening, I cannot speak with them (*m.*). 21. This meat is good, but this cake and these vegetables are not so good. 22. We saw many people listening to the music near the church every day. 23. Isn't it astonishing? This man paid this bill. 24. Look at that! He is behind those ladies! 25. Not having been at my school, he does not speak this language well.

26. VINGT-SIXIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t sizjɛm]

LES MÉTIERS

I

247. *A.* The French have no form corresponding to *John's, the maid's;* they say *of John, of the maid* (§ 89):

C'est la maison de Jean, It is John's house
C'est la chambre de la bonne, It is the maid's room

B. When we say *the book is John's* (belongs to John); *it is the man's* (belongs to the man); *it is mine* (belongs to me), etc., the French say *the book is to John, it is to me,* etc.

Le livre est à moi, The book is mine (belongs to me)
Ces livres sont à cet homme-là, These books belong to that man

C. The French say *to whom* for *whose?*

À qui est ceci? À moi, Whose is this? Mine

248. *Some* before a noun = *of the* (see § 123). If the verb is negative, *the* is omitted (see p. 50, Note 1):

Il a des parents, He has relatives
Il n'a pas de parents, He has no relatives

249. Present Indicative of *faire* [fɛir], *to make, do:*

je fais [fɛ], I make	**nous faisons** [fəzɔ̃], we make
(**tu fais** [fɛ], thou makest)	**vous faites** [fɛt], you make
il fait [fɛ], he makes	**ils font** [fɔ̃], they make

250. VOCABULARY

le boucher [buʃe], butcher
le boulanger [bulɑ̃ʒe], baker
la course [kurs], errand
l'épicier [lepisje], grocer
hier [jɛːr], yesterday
le menuisier [mənyizje], cabinet maker, carpenter
le métier [metje], trade
obliger [ɔbliʒe], to oblige
l'ouvrier [luvrie], workman
ouvrir [uvriːr], to open
penser [pɑ̃se], to think
poser [poze], to place
pourquoi [purkwa], why

prier [prie], to beg
la question [kɛstjɔ̃], question
savoir [savwaːr], to know
le sucre [sykr], sugar
le thé [te], tea
travailler [travaje], to work
voici[1] [vwasi], here is, here are

251. DRILL

1. This is John's; that is Mary's	**Ceci est à Jean; cela est à Marie**
2. That is mine; this is ours	**Cela est à moi; ceci est à nous**
3. That is his; this is hers	**Cela est à lui; ceci est à elle**
4. There are no bakers	**Il n'y a pas de boulangers**
5. Whose is this tea?	**À qui est ce thé?**
6. They have no sugar	**Ils n'ont pas de sucre**
7. There is no grocer here	**Il n'y a pas d'épicier ici**
8. Whose is this coat?	**À qui est cet habit?**
9. It is John's; it is mine	**Il est à Jean; il est à moi**
10. Some sugar and no tea	**Du sucre et pas de thé**
11. The workmen make chairs	**Les ouvriers font des chaises**
12. We don't make hats	**Nous ne faisons pas de chapeaux**
13. You make lace	**Vous faites de la dentelle**
14. These cabinet makers make tables	**Ces menuisiers font des tables**
15. Do you make any?	**En faites-vous?**
16. We have no bread	**Nous n'avons pas de pain**
17. These bakers make bread	**Ces boulangers font du pain**
18. It's their trade, isn't it?	**C'est leur métier, n'est-ce pas?**
19. This butcher sells meat	**Ce boucher vend de la viande**
20. We did not sell any	**Nous n'en avons pas vendu**

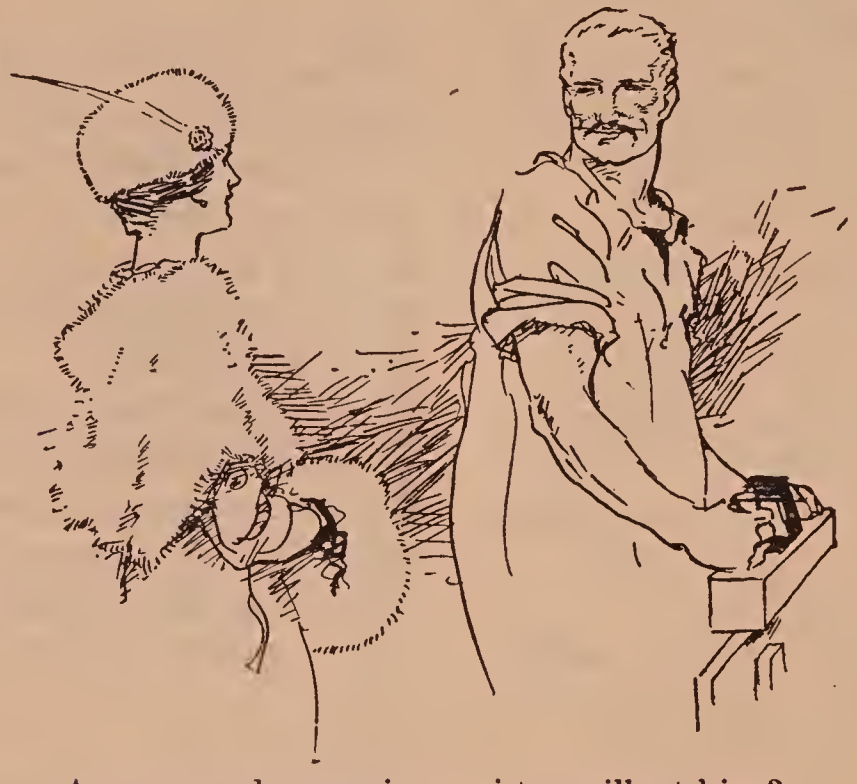
252. Reading. Madame Bertin [bɛrtɛ̃] est allée chez son amie Madame Perrin [pɛrɛ̃]. Elle lui a dit: «J'ai acheté un chapeau de velours chez votre modiste hier.»

Madame Perrin a demandé à Madame Bertin de lui montrer le chapeau.

[1] **voici** = **vois!** (*see!*) + **ici** (*here*).
voilà = **vois!** (*see!*) + **là** (*there*).

These words may take a pronoun object, which precedes: **me voici!** *here I am!;* **les voilà!** *there they are!*

«Le voici! Il m'a coûté très cher. Je ne peux pas vous dire combien, parce que j'ai oublié d'en demander le prix à la modiste. La dentelle est plus chère que la soie, qui est très bon marché. J'ai prié la modiste de mettre de la dentelle sur mon chapeau. La dentelle est peut-être moins belle que la soie; qu'en pensez-vous?»



Avez-vous des ouvriers qui travaillent bien?

Madame Perrin n'a pas répondu à la question de son amie. Elle a dit: «Il sera bientôt quatre heures! Mon mari a commandé un pardessus chez son tailleur, et il m'a prié d'aller le chercher cette après-midi. Mais je n'aurai pas le temps d'aller chez le tailleur, parce que j'ai beaucoup de courses à faire.»

Elle est partie. Elle a dit à son cocher de la conduire chez l'épicier. Elle y a acheté du café, du thé, du sucre et de la crème. Elle y a acheté du vin aussi. En France on peut acheter du vin chez l'épicier.

Après avoir commandé tout cela chez l'épicier, elle est allée chez le menuisier. Elle lui a demandé: «Avez-vous des ouvriers qui travaillent bien?» «Nous n'en avons pas qui

ne travaillent pas bien,» lui a-t-il répondu. Elle lui a commandé une chaise pour la chambre de la bonne. Puis elle est sortie de chez le menuisier. De là elle est allée chez le boulanger où elle a acheté du pain et chez le boucher où elle a acheté de la viande.

253. Résumé. Les amies; le chapeau; le prix; la dentelle et la soie; le pardessus; le cocher; l'épicier; le menuisier; la chaise; le boulanger et le boucher.

254. Oral Drill. 1. This is his; that is mine. 2. That is John's; this is Peter's. 3. This coat is Henry's. 4. Whose is this hat? 5. That hat is Mary's. 6. This grocer has no sugar. 7. Whose is that lace? 8. That lace belongs to me. 9. It belongs to her. 10. It does not belong to this lady. 11. This workman is making a table. 12. These workmen make tables. 13. This grocer's wife sells sugar. 14. She sells no tea. 15. She has no coffee. 16. There are no butchers here. 17. There will be no wine on my table. 18. We shall have no ribbons. 19. She will have no silk. 20. Whose chair is this? 21. This chair is not mine. 22. We shall have some coffee, but we shall have no milk. 23. He will have some tea, but he will have no sugar. 24. Do you make bread? 25. We make no bread. 26. What do you do? 27. I have no trade. 28. Is your friend (a) carpenter or (a) grocer? 29. He is (a) baker. 30. Do not put my watch on that table. 31. Why don't you answer these questions? 32. Are these workmen making chairs? 33. We make tables. 34. You make no chairs.

II

255. DIALOGUE

1. Whose is this book?	**À qui est ce livre?**
2. It's my father's book; no, it's mine	**C'est le livre de mon père; non, il est à moi**
3. What is there in this book?	**Qu'est-ce qu'il y a dans ce livre?**

4. There is the story of Pauline and her friend	Il y a l'histoire de Pauline et de son amie
5. Who is her friend?	Qui est son amie?
6. Her friend is Henriette	Son amie est Henriette
7. What do Pauline and Henriette do?	Que font Pauline et Henriette?
8. Pauline sings and Henriette makes lace	Pauline chante et Henriette fait de la dentelle
9. Why don't you make some?	Pourquoi n'en faites-vous pas?
10. I don't make any, because I don't like to make any	Je n'en fais pas, parce que je n'aime pas à en faire
11. Does Pauline sing well?	Est-ce que Pauline chante bien?
12. No, she sings very badly	Non, elle chante très mal
13. What is on that chair?	Qu'est-ce qui est sur cette chaise?
14. It's a watch	C'est une montre
15. Whose is this watch?	À qui est cette montre?
16. This watch is Henriette's	Cette montre est à Henriette
17. Why has she placed her watch on the chair?	Pourquoi a-t-elle posé sa montre sur la chaise?
18. Because she wants to know the time	Parce qu'elle veut savoir l'heure
19. Why does she want to know that?	Pourquoi veut-elle savoir cela?
20. Because at four o'clock she can sing, and her friend Pauline will be obliged to make lace	Parce qu'à quatre heures elle peut chanter, et son amie Pauline sera obligée de faire de la dentelle
21. It is not their trade	Ce n'est pas leur métier

256. Conversation. 1. Where did you buy your hat? 2. Will you show me the hat that you bought? 3. How much did it cost you? 4. Is it cheap or dear? 5. At what o'clock will you come to my house? 6. Have you asked your husband to go and get your hat at the milliner's? 7. When you have no sugar, to whose shop do you go to get some? 8. Have you no errands to do this afternoon? 9. Whose is the overcoat that you are looking at, is it yours or is it your brother's? 10. Can one drink tea if one has no sugar?

257. Theme. The French lady bought a beautiful hat at the milliner's. All her friends said to her: "Where is your hat? Oh! the lovely hat! How much did it cost you? Is it cheap or dear? Did you ask the milliner to put on this pretty lace? Look at this beautiful velvet! Our milliner has no velvet so beautiful. Did you wear this hat at church Sunday? Did you hear Pauline, the lady who came from Paris? She sang before the sermon. She sings very well." The French lady listens to all this, but she does not answer her friends' questions. She gives them tea, but she gives them no sugar; she brings them bread, but she brings no butter. What do her friends do? They look at her and they are astonished. They look at the little watch which is there on that chair. Whose watch is it? It does not belong to them, to you, to me. It belongs to the French lady. Her friend, a baker, or butcher, or carpenter, or grocer, gave this pretty watch to her yesterday. When she looks at this watch, there is no sugar, there is no butter, there are no friends for her, there is only her friend!

258. Exercises. *A.* Answer the questions:

À qui est cela? À qui est cette maison?
À qui est ce livre? À qui sont ces chapeaux?

B. Fill the following blanks:

Avez-vous du —? Est-ce que cet homme a
Avez-vous eu de la —? de l'—?
Est-ce que votre ami a eu des —?

Answer the questions in the negative.

C. Conjugate:

I do this. I do not do that.

D. Drill on present indicative of **faire**: § 480, *A*.

27. VINGT-SEPTIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t sɛtjɛm]

LE TEMPS — LES SAISONS

I

259. Imperfect Indicative. The imperfect is formed from the *present participle* by dropping the ending **–ant** and adding the endings:

–ais [ɛ]	Cf. the future ending **–ai** [e].
–ais [ɛ]	
–ait [ɛ]	
–ions [jɔ̃]	
–iez [je]	
–aient [ɛ]	

260.

I. **donner**	II. **finir**	III. **vendre**
donn ant	**finiss ant**	**vend ant**
je donn **ais**	je finiss **ais**	je vend **ais**
(tu donn **ais**)	(tu finiss **ais**)	(tu vend **ais**)
il donn **ait**	il finiss **ait**	il vend **ait**
nous donn **ions**	nous finiss **ions**	nous vend **ions**
vous donn **iez**	vous finiss **iez**	vous vend **iez**
ils donn **aient**	ils finiss **aient**	ils vend **aient**

Note that the first, second, third singular and the third plural are pronounced alike. *Remember the* **i** *in the endings of the first and second plural;* also the **–iss–** in the second conjugation.

261.

Infinitive	*Present Participle*	*Imperfect*
être, to be	**étant** [etɑ̃]	**j'étais** [ʒetɛ], etc.
avoir, to have	**ayant** [ɛyɑ̃]	**j'avais**[1] [ʒavɛ], etc.
faire, to make, do	**faisant** [fəzɑ̃]	**je faisais** [ʒə fəzɛ], etc.
pleuvoir [plœvwa:r], to rain	**pleuvant** [plœvɑ̃]	**il pleuvait** [il plœvɛ]

[1] Note that the imperfect of **avoir** is irregular (**ayant** ought to give **j'ayais**). Remember, however, that the *endings* are always the same and that the stem *never* changes after the first person singular; so when you know the first person singular you know all the rest of the tense, *even in the case of the irregular verbs.*

262. Use of the Imperfect. The *past indefinite* is the narrative tense, the most frequently used past tense.

The *imperfect* is the descriptive tense, corresponding roughly to the English past in *-ing*, *I was giving*. It is used:

(1) of an action conceived as continuing in past time, especially when another action takes place during the continuance of the first: *I was walking* (imperfect) *in the garden when I saw* (past indefinite) *him;*

(2) of customary or repeated action: *I used to give, I* (repeatedly, always, usually, etc.) *gave.*

263. Les Saisons:

le printemps [prɛ̃tɑ̃], spring; **au printemps,** in spring
l'été [lete] (*m.*), summer; **en été,** in summer
l'automne [lotɔn] (*m.*), autumn; **en automne,** in autumn
l'hiver [livɛːr] (*m.*), winter; **en hiver,** in winter

264. Note the use of **faire** in expressions relating to the weather:

il fait chaud [ʃo], it's hot
il faisait froid [frwa], it was cold
il faisait du vent [vɑ̃], it was windy
il fait beau, il fait beau temps [tɑ̃], it's fine (weather)
il fait mauvais, il fait mauvais temps, the weather is bad
Quel temps fait-il? How is the weather?

265. VOCABULARY

admirer [admire], to admire
l'année [lane] (*f.*), year
briller [brije], to shine
le ciel [sjɛl], sky
l'éclair [leklɛːr] (*m.*), lightning
la glace [glas], ice
longtemps [lɔ̃tɑ̃], a long time
mauvais [movɛ], bad
le mois [mwa], month
la neige [nɛːʒ], snow
le nuage [nyaːʒ], cloud
ouvert [uvɛːr], open (*past participle of* **ouvrir**)
pendant [pɑ̃dɑ̃], during
pendant que [pɑ̃dɑ̃ kə], while
la pluie [plyi], rain
la saison [sɛzɔ̃], season
le soleil [sɔlɛːj], sun
tomber [tɔ̃be], to fall
le tonnerre [tɔnɛːr], thunder

266. DRILL

1. I used to be; you used to be	J'étais; vous étiez
2. He used to have; we used to have	Il avait; nous avions
3. She used to finish; they used to finish	Elle finissait; ils finissaient
4. I was doing; we were doing	Je faisais; nous faisions
5. He was making; you were making	Il faisait; vous faisiez
6. It was hot; it was cold	Il faisait chaud; il faisait froid
7. It was fine weather in summer	Il faisait beau en été
8. It was bad weather in spring	Il faisait mauvais au printemps
9. The sun shines; it was shining	Le soleil brille; il brillait
10. It is windy; it was windy	Il fait du vent; il faisait du vent
11. He used to hear the thunder	Il entendait le tonnerre
12. We used to like the spring	Nous aimions le printemps
13. The flowers were growing	Les fleurs poussaient
14. The flower grows; it was growing	La fleur pousse; elle poussait
15. It is fine weather; it was fine	Il fait beau; il faisait beau
16. Was it bad weather in winter?	Est-ce qu'il faisait mauvais en hiver?
17. Was it hot or cold in autumn?	Faisait-il chaud ou froid en automne?
18. The season was beautiful	La saison était belle
19. It was not raining; it was blowing	Il ne pleuvait pas; il faisait du vent

267. Reading. Voulez-vous aller avec moi dans mon jardin? Nous sommes au printemps: le soleil brille, le ciel est sans nuages, les belles fleurs poussent.

Non, merci, je suis entré dans votre jardin hier. Il ne faisait pas très chaud, il faisait froid et le soleil ne brillait pas. Il faisait très mauvais temps. Je n'ai pas vu pousser vos belles tulipes; mais n'ayant pas mon pardessus, et étant dans un jardin ouvert à tous les vents pendant qu'il pleu-

vait, — je n'aime pas la pluie — je suis sorti de votre jardin et je n'y entrerai pas aujourd'hui.

Moi, je n'ai pas écouté mon ami, parce que j'aime tant mon beau jardin. Pendant qu'il parlait, je suis parti. Je suis entré dans la maison et j'ai laissé la porte ouverte. Il faisait beau. Pendant longtemps j'ai admiré le ciel bleu. Mais bientôt j'ai entendu le tonnerre et j'ai vu des éclairs. Il faisait du vent. N'aimant pas les éclairs, j'ai fermé ma porte.

Ah! il faisait plus beau pendant l'été. C'est toujours la plus belle saison de l'année, s'il ne fait pas trop chaud. Pendant des mois et des mois on laisse les portes et les fenêtres ouvertes; on joue sur l'herbe verte. On n'est pas obligé de travailler, parce que l'école est fermée. Il n'y a pas de glace et il n'y a pas de neige.

Quand j'étais petit j'aimais beaucoup l'automne. J'allais toujours chez ma vieille tante, qui me donnait beaucoup de bonnes choses à manger. J'aimais beaucoup l'hiver aussi, s'il ne faisait pas trop froid. J'aimais à jouer dans la neige et sur la glace. Souvent, pendant que la pluie tombait, je cherchais mon bon ami, et lui, sa sœur, ma sœur et moi nous allions écouter le tonnerre et admirer les éclairs. Quelle bonne saison de l'année!

268. Résumé. Au jardin; hier; les tulipes; le pardessus; le vent et la pluie; le temps beau, puis mauvais; l'été à la campagne; chez la tante; l'hiver.

269. Oral Drill. 1. You used to be. 2. We used to have. 3. They used to finish. 4. We were making. 5. He was doing. 6. They are doing. 7. Do this! 8. We don't do that. 9. They used to have. 10. She used to do. 11. Is it hot? 12. It is not cold. 13. Was it not hot? 14. It was not cold. 15. The weather was fine this summer. 16. It was cold this winter. 17. Was the sun not shining? 18. It was windy. 19. Do you like the spring? 20. I used to like it. 21. I did not like the autumn. 22. The season was

not fine. 23. The flowers were not growing. 24. It was bad weather. 25. The sun was shining. 26. Do you hear the thunder? 27. I used to hear the thunder. 28. What do you do during the spring? 29. We were in the country during the summer. 30. After having chosen some flowers, we came. 31. We worked in the garden while the sun was shining. 32. During the winter there is snow and ice. 33. It used to rain in spring. 34. Where were you? 35. I was in the garden. 36. The gardens were open. 37. He used to admire this man. 38. The snow was falling. 39. What were they doing? 40. You were making bread.

II

270. DIALOGUE

1. What did you use to do during the spring when you were small?	**Que faisiez-vous pendant le printemps quand vous étiez petits?**
2. We used to call our friends and go to play in the garden, if it did not rain	**Nous appelions nos amis et nous allions jouer dans le jardin, s'il ne pleuvait pas**
3. What do you do during the summer?	**Que faites-vous pendant l'été?**
4. After having finished our lessons, we work in the gardens near our house	**Après avoir fini nos leçons, nous travaillons dans les jardins près de notre maison**
5. Is it cold in summer?	**Est-ce qu'il fait froid en été?**
6. It is very hot when the sun shines and when the sky is blue, but it is cold when it rains	**Il fait très chaud quand le soleil brille et quand le ciel est bleu, mais il fait froid quand il pleut**
7. Was it windy yesterday when you left?	**Est-ce qu'il faisait du vent hier quand vous êtes parti?**
8. It was very fine yesterday for a long time, but later it was less fine because there were clouds	**Il faisait très beau hier pendant longtemps, mais plus tard il faisait moins beau parce qu'il y avait des nuages**

9. What season is it now?
10. It's autumn. The windows and doors are open often during this season. It is not bad weather
11. What season was it when you used to go to your old aunt?
12. It was winter. There was snow and ice, thunder and lightning. We wore woolen clothes. It was very cold every day. We did not like winter very much

Quelle saison est-ce maintenant?
C'est l'automne. Les fenêtres et les portes sont ouvertes souvent pendant cette saison. Il ne fait pas mauvais temps
Quelle saison était-ce quand vous alliez chez votre vieille tante?
C'était l'hiver. Il y avait de la neige et de la glace, du tonnerre et des éclairs. Nous portions des vêtements de laine. Il faisait très froid tous les jours. Nous n'aimions pas beaucoup l'hiver

271. Conversation. 1. How many seasons are there? 2. Was it hot yesterday, or did it rain? 3. Where were you yesterday? 4. Was the sun shining while you were in the garden? 5. Did you use to leave the doors open when you went out of the house? 6. Did you use to close the door of your garden when you heard the thunder? 7. Was it fine weather during a long time this winter? 8. What did you do during the summer? 9. What did your brothers and sisters do during the autumn? 10. Did you go into the garden during the spring, and what did you do there?

272. Theme. When the school was closed during the summer we were not obliged to work. It was fine weather and the sun shone every day. I used to go to my aunt's house. I used to play in her garden where the beautiful flowers grew. When it rained and when it was windy, I played in the house. My sisters were with me. They did not like to hear the thunder and to see the lightning. In autumn the weather was less fine, it rained often and the sky was not so blue as in summer. We came back to school after this, and during the winter and spring we worked

much. In the afternoon at four o'clock we played a little during an hour or two, when there was not too much snow and ice. But often it was very cold. My sisters did not like the winter much.

273. Exercises. *A*. Drill on imperfect of **choisir, rencontrer, entendre, saisir, appeler, finir**: § 480, *A*.

B. Say 'How is the weather?' 'How was the weather?' Answer in as many ways as possible.

28. VINGT-HUITIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃ tyitjɛm]

À LA CAMPAGNE

I

274. Comparison of Adjectives.

Positive: **grand**, great

Comparative:

(*m. s.*) **plus grand**, greater	**moins grand**, less great
(*f. s.*) **plus grande**, greater	**moins grande**, less great
(*m. pl.*) **plus grands**, greater	**moins grands**, less great
(*f. pl.*) **plus grandes**, greater	**moins grandes**, less great

Superlative:

(*m. s.*) **le plus grand**,[1] greatest	**le moins grand**, least great
(*f. s.*) **la plus grande**, greatest	**la moins grande**, least great
(*m. pl.*) **les plus grands**, greatest	**les moins grands**, least great
(*f. pl.*) **les plus grandes**, greatest	**les moins grandes**, least great

275. Comparison of Adverbs.

Positive: **souvent**, often
Comparative: **plus souvent**, oftener, more often
moins souvent, less often
Superlative: **le plus souvent**, oftenest, most often
le moins souvent, least often

[1] Note that when the comparative is preceded by an article, it has the same form as the superlative: *the greater=the greatest.*

276. *Exceptions*

Adjective:	**bon**, good	**meilleur**[1] [mɛjœːr], better	**le meilleur**, best
Adverb:	**bien**, well	**mieux**[1] [mjø], better	**le mieux**, best

277. **aussi grand que** = *as great as*
aussi souvent que = *as often as*

278.

13	**treize** [trɛːz]	17	**dix-sept** [dis sɛt]
14	**quatorze** [katɔrz]	18	**dix-huit** [di zyit]
15	**quinze** [kɛ̃ːz]	19	**dix-neuf** [diz nœf]
16	**seize** [sɛːz]	20	**vingt** [vɛ̃]

279. VOCABULARY

l'animal [lanimal] (*m.*), (*pl.* **animaux** [animo]), animal
à travers [a travɛːr], across
la campagne [kɑ̃paɲ], country
le champ [ʃɑ̃], field
le cheval [ʃəval], (*pl.* **chevaux** [ʃəvo]), horse
le collège [kɔlɛːʒ], school
le commencement [kɔmɑ̃smɑ̃], beginning
la ferme [fɛrm), farm
la fin [fɛ̃], end
moins [mwɛ̃], less, (least)
l'oiseau [lwazo] (*m.*), (*pl.* **oiseaux**), bird
le paysan [pɛizɑ̃], peasant
plus [ply], more, (most)
possible [pɔsibl]], possible
la poussière [pusjɛːr], dust
revenir [rəvəniːr], to come back
salir [saliːr], to soil
les vacances [vakɑ̃ːs] (*f.*), vacation
la vache [vaʃ], cow
le village [vilaːʒ], village

280. DRILL

1. A smaller horse; the smallest horse	**Un plus petit cheval; le plus petit cheval**
2. A smaller cow; the smallest cow	**Une plus petite vache; la plus petite vache**
3. A better girl; the best girl	**Une meilleure fille; la meilleure fille**
4. As good as I; better than I	**Aussi bon que moi; meilleur que moi**
5. He speaks well; you speak better	**Il parle bien; vous parlez mieux**

[1] **meilleur** = *more good;* **mieux** = *in a better manner.*

6. We go oftener; you go oftenest	Nous allons plus souvent; vous allez le plus souvent
7. You go as often as he	Vous allez aussi souvent que lui
8. We go less often than you	Nous allons moins souvent que vous
9. She is larger than he	Elle est plus grande que lui
10. He is not as large as she	Il n'est pas aussi grand qu'elle
11. You do more than they	Vous faites plus qu'eux
12. They do less than I	Ils font moins que moi
13. I give more of it than he	J'en donne plus que lui
14. We sell less of it than they	Nous en vendons moins qu'eux
15. He has a more beautiful farm	Il a une plus belle ferme
16. The peasant is as good as they	Le paysan est aussi bon qu'eux
17. This horse is blacker	Ce cheval est plus noir
18. Those horses are the blackest	Ces chevaux-là sont les plus noirs
19. This cow is the best	Cette vache est la meilleure
20. Those fields are the largest	Ces champs sont les plus grands

281. Reading. Quand j'étais au collège j'allais toujours pendant mes vacances d'été chez mon oncle qui avait une ferme près d'un petit village. Ce n'était pas une grande ferme, mais elle était très belle. À la fin de huit ou neuf mois de travail dans mes classes, j'aimais à partir pour les champs ouverts à tous les vents, parce qu'en été il fait plus chaud dans la ville qu'à la campagne. Il y avait beaucoup d'animaux chez mon oncle, et j'allais avec lui aussi souvent que possible voir les chevaux et les vaches. J'aimais mieux les chevaux que les vaches. Le meilleur cheval était un petit noir, un des plus beaux animaux du monde. J'allais souvent sur cet animal à travers les champs. Les paysans l'admiraient beaucoup, et tout le monde demandait à mon oncle: «Voulez-vous vendre ce petit cheval noir?» Mon oncle leur répondait qu'il ne cherchait pas à vendre un cheval qui donnait tant de plaisir aux petits garçons et aux petites filles.

Les paysans l'admiraient beaucoup

Un jour il faisait très mauvais temps; il pleuvait et il faisait très froid. J'étais sur mon petit cheval noir. Je n'avais pas de pardessus. Mais j'étais près de la maison de mon oncle; mon cheval avait faim, et il m'a porté à la ferme en si peu de temps que la pluie et la poussière n'ont pas sali mes vêtements. Je suis descendu de mon bon petit cheval. Je suis entré dans la maison où j'ai trouvé un bon dîner sur la table. J'avais si faim que j'ai mangé beaucoup trop. On fait cela le plus souvent à la campagne, où le beau ciel bleu, le bon vent, le soleil qui brille, les oiseaux qui chantent, vous font manger plus que dans les villes.

Au commencement de l'hiver nous sommes revenus au collège. Il n'y avait pas de poussière à la campagne. Il y en a beaucoup ici. Tout le monde aime mieux la campagne que la ville. Pour moi le plus grand plaisir, c'est de jouer avec les fils des paysans dans la ferme de mon oncle.

282. Résumé. Chez l'oncle; la ferme; les chevaux et les vaches; le meilleur cheval; vendre; le mauvais temps; le dîner; la campagne et la ville.

283. Oral Drill. 1. A bigger farm. 2. The largest farm. 3. The smallest cows. 4. A better farm. 5. This farm is the best. 6. As small as he. 7. Oftener than that. 8. As often as you. 9. He used to do it well. 10. You used to do it better. 11. We did it oftener. 12. You did it oftenest. 13. We went as often as they (*m.*). 14. They did it less often than we. 15. We are not so good as he. 16. We do less than they (*m.*). 17. This man has the most beautiful wife. 18. His daughter is more beautiful. 19. This girl is less beautiful. 20. She is the smallest. 21. This horse is the best. 22. That cow is the whitest. 23. This cow is redder. 24. That field is larger than this field. 25. Which field is largest? 26. They do it well. 27. You do it better. 28. She is better than he. 29. I am the best man. 30. You are not as good as he. 31. This bird sings better than that

bird. 32. The end was better than the beginning. 33. The peasants all came back across the fields. 34. They were soiling their clothes playing in the dust. 35. This school is as good as that school.

II

284. DIALOGUE

1. Whose horse is this?	À qui est ce cheval?
2. He is mine	Il est à moi
3. There is no animal in the world more beautiful than he	Il n'y a pas d'animal au monde plus beau que lui
4. Thanks! Everybody finds him very pretty	Merci! Tout le monde le trouve très joli
5. That does not surprise me	Cela ne m'étonne pas
6. Whose farm is that?	À qui est cette ferme?
7. It belongs to my friend's uncle. Do you want to go with me across the fields?	Elle est à l'oncle de mon ami. Voulez-vous aller avec moi à travers les champs?
8. What beautiful animals! I like horses better than cows	Quels beaux animaux! J'aime mieux les chevaux[1] que les vaches
9. Everybody likes them better	Tout le monde les aime mieux
10. What beautiful weather! Do you hear the birds (which are) singing?	Quel beau temps! Entendez-vous les oiseaux qui chantent?
11. It's raining. I don't want to soil my clothes. We'll go into the house; we'll find my aunt there perhaps, who will give us (something) to eat	Il pleut. Je ne veux pas salir mes vêtements. Nous entrerons dans la maison; nous y trouverons peut-être ma tante qui nous donnera à manger
12. Don't forget to ask her to give us some milk; I am thirsty	N'oubliez pas de lui demander de nous donner du lait; j'ai soif

[1] Horses as a class, not *some* horses; therefore, les not des.

13. It's the best farm in the world, and there is the best milk in the world!
C'est la meilleure ferme du monde, et voilà le meilleur lait du monde!

14. I want to drink a glass of milk also. Will you give us some bread and butter? We are hungry!
Je veux boire un verre de lait aussi. Voulez-vous nous donner du pain et du beurre? Nous avons faim

15. Here is some milk, some bread and some butter!
Voici du lait, du pain et du beurre!

16. Thanks! You are as good as my mother! We are going to come back later this evening
Merci! Vous êtes aussi bonne que ma mère! Nous allons revenir plus tard ce soir

285. Conversation. 1. Did you use to go to school in the city or in the country? 2. Where were you during your summer vacation? 3. Is it warmer in the city than in the country in summer? 4. Is it as cold in winter? 5. Do your friends go to the country as often as I? 6. Do you like horses (cf. § 284, 8) better than other animals? 7. Why do you like horses the best? 8. When you went to school, which pleasure did you find the greatest? 9. Is the village where you go in summer prettier than the city? 10. Is your father's farm as large as the farm which belongs to the peasant whom you saw yesterday?

286. Theme. While I was going to the farm in the country after ten months of work at school, I met my cousin. He was going to the city. I said to him: "Do you like the city better than the country?" He answered that he went to the city as often as possible because there were no schools, no churches and no stores in the country. "When the peasants do not work, what do they do? They walk through the fields, they look at the cows and horses of the other peasants. They admire the black horse because he is blacker than the gray horse; they like the white horse better than the gray horse because he is larger; they find the red cow

handsomer than the white cow, but they find the black cow the best and the largest of all. They ask: Whose farm is this? Is it as large as our farm? Is this white house as pretty as our house? Is it larger or better? After having said this, they walk across the fields to their house. They enter, they eat, they ask if it is hot or cold, if it is bad weather or if the sun shines. After that they work. Yes, my friend, I like the city better."

287. Exercises. *A.* Fill the following blanks with the positive, comparative and superlative of: 'great,' 'small,' 'white,' 'old,' 'good,' 'beautiful,' first in an ascending comparison (greater, greatest), then in a descending comparison (less great, least great):

1. He is —.
2. She is —.
3. They (*m.*) are —.
4. They (*f.*) are —.

B. Fill the following blanks with the positive, comparative and superlative of: 'well,' 'often,' 'badly,' first ascending, then descending:

1. He works —. 2. They speak —. 3. We choose —.

C. Fill the blanks in *A*, using *as . . . as*, followed by a disjunctive pronoun: **Il est aussi grand que moi**, etc.

D. (1) Count from 1 to 20; (2) count from 1 to 20 omitting the even numbers; (3) count from 1 to 20 omitting the odd numbers.

E. Drill on *present, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect* of **vendre, choisir, arriver**: § 480, *C.*

29. VINGT-NEUVIÈME LEÇON [vɛ̃t nœvjɛm]

LA FAMILLE

I

288. **Quel âge avez-vous?** *How old are you?*
J'ai dix ans, *I am ten years old*

289. **Il y a,** *there is, there are = ago*

Il y a deux ans, Two years ago

290.

21	**vingt et un** [vɛ̃ te œ̃]	72	**soixante-douze** [swasɑ̃:t du:z]
22	**vingt-deux** [vɛ̃t dø]	80	**quatre-vingts** [katrə vɛ̃]
30	**trente** [trɑ̃:t]	81	**quatre-vingt-un** [katrə vɛ̃ œ̃]
31	**trente et un** [trɑ̃:t e œ̃]	82	**quatre-vingt-deux** [katrə vɛ̃ dø]
32	**trente-deux** [trɑ̃:t dø]	90	**quatre-vingt-dix** [katrə vɛ̃ dis]
40	**quarante** [karɑ̃:t]	91	**quatre-vingt-onze** [katrə vɛ̃ õ:z]
50	**cinquante** [sɛ̃kɑ̃:t]	100	**cent** [sɑ̃]
60	**soixante** [swasɑ̃:t]	101	**cent un** [sɑ̃ œ̃]
70	**soixante-dix** [swasɑ̃:t dis]	200	**deux cents** [dø sɑ̃]
71	**soixante et onze** [swasɑ̃:t e õ:z]	201	**deux cent un** [dø sɑ̃ œ̃]

1000 **mille** [mil][1]
2000 **deux mille** [dø mil]
1,000,000 **un million** [miljõ]
1,000,000,000 **un milliard** [miljɑ:r]

Note. Peculiarities in the pronunciation and spelling of numerals should be learned gradually.

291. **Savoir** [savwa:r], *to know;* **sachant** [saʃɑ̃], *knowing;* **su** [sy], *known.*

Present indicative:

je sais [se *or* sɛ], I know	**nous savons** [savõ], we know
(**tu sais** [se *or* sɛ], thou knowest)	**vous savez** [save], you know
il sait [se *or* sɛ], he knows	**ils savent** [sa:v], they know

Imperfect: **je savais,** etc., I used to know, etc.

Past indefinite: **j'ai su,** etc.

Future: **je saurai** [sɔre], etc., I shall know, etc.

[1] **Mille** is written **mil** in dates: **mil neuf cent vingt,** 1920.

292. VOCABULARY

l'âge [lɑːʒ] (*m.*), age
l'avocat [lavɔka], lawyer
demeurer [dəmœre], to live
épouser [epuze], to marry
fiancé [fjãse], fiancé, betrothed
le grand-père [grã pɛːr], grandfather
la grand'mère [grã mɛːr], grandmother
jeune [ʒœn], young
marié [marje], married
le médecin [medsɛ̃], doctor
même [mɛːm], same
au moins [o mwɛ̃], at least
mort [mɔːr], dead; **il est—**, he died
né [ne], born; **il est—**, he was born
le neveu [nəvø], nephew
la nièce [njɛs], niece
pourtant [purtã], however, yet
tous les deux [tu le dø], both
vrai [vrɛ], true

293. DRILL

1. How old are you? — **Quel âge avez-vous?**
2. I am 27 years old — **J'ai vingt-sept ans**
3. How old is your sister? — **Quel âge a votre sœur?**
4. She is 34 years old — **Elle a trente-quatre ans**
5. When was he born? — **Quand est-il né?**
6. I don't know — **Je ne sais pas**
7. Is he older than I? — **Est-il plus vieux que moi?**
8. You are younger than he — **Vous êtes plus jeune que lui**
9. Did he die an hour ago? — **Est-ce qu'il est mort il y a une heure?**
10. He died two hours ago — **Il est mort il y a deux heures**
11. Is his sister as young as he? — **Est-ce que sa sœur est aussi jeune que lui?**
12. She is younger than he — **Elle est plus jeune que lui**
13. How old is she? — **Quel âge a-t-elle?**
14. She does not know — **Elle ne sait pas**
15. I used to know; we know — **Je savais; nous savons**
16. We used to know; they (*f.*) know — **Nous savions; elles savent**
17. You don't know; you used to know — **Vous ne savez pas; vous saviez**
18. We shall know; we have known — **Nous saurons; nous avons su**
19. Have they known? will he know? — **Ont-ils su? saura-t-il?**
20. He knew it ten years ago — **Il l'a su il y a dix ans**

294. Reading. Ma mère est plus jeune que mon père; mon frère est plus jeune que ma sœur. Mon père a quarante-deux ans. — Quel âge a votre mère? — Elle a trente-huit ans, elle n'est pas aussi jeune que sa sœur, ma tante, qui a seulement trente-trois ans. — Mon oncle, le mari de ma tante, que vous avez vu hier au parc, a cinquante-huit ans. Il était déjà vieux quand il a épousé ma tante. — Quel âge a votre cousine? — Elle a seulement dix-huit ans, mais elle est déjà fiancée. — À qui? — Au neveu du médecin. — À lui! Il est trop vieux pour elle! — Non, il a seulement vingt-huit ans; il avait vingt-quatre ans quand son grand-père est mort il y a quatre ans. — Est-ce vrai? Je ne le savais pas. Je pensais qu'il avait au moins trente et un ans. — Vous saviez qu'il demeurait chez son grand-père à Chicago, n'est-ce pas? — Non, je ne savais pas cela; on m'a dit que son grand-père et sa grand'mère étaient morts tous les deux. — Le neveu de l'avocat à qui vous avez parlé chez mon oncle était son ami de collège, son meilleur ami. Ils sont allés à Paris ensemble pour y faire leurs études. — J'ai vu la nièce de l'avocat, ou peut-être était-ce sa femme, chez mon cousin le médecin il y a trois jours. — C'est sa nièce; elle est beaucoup trop jeune pour être sa femme. — Pourtant, elle m'a parlé de son mari. — Elle est mariée; elle a épousé un jeune homme qui est revenu de Paris avec mon cousin il y a deux ans. — C'est vrai; votre cousin m'en a parlé hier. Où demeurent-ils? — Ils demeuraient à Chicago il y a un an, mais ils aiment mieux New-York. Ils y sont allés avec leur fils et leur fille qui sont très jeunes. Cela leur coûtera très cher, et puis ils seront obligés de revenir avant la fin de l'hiver ou le commencement du printemps.

Elle a seulement dix-huit ans

295. Exercise. Ask and answer the questions:

1. How old are you? 2. How old is his mother? 3. — your father? 4. — her aunt? 5. — our uncle? 6. — my friend? 7. — your grandfather? 8. — his grandmother?

296. Oral Drill. 1. How old is he? 2. He is 32 years old. 3. When was she born? 4. I don't know. 5. I was born 20 years ago. 6. How old are you? 7. I am 21 years old. 8. When did he die? 9. He died ten years ago. 10. He was younger than I. 11. When was he born? 12. He was born 35 years ago. 13. Do you know it? 14. I used to know it. 15. Has he known it? 16. He has known it. 17. When will you know it? 18. I shall know it to-day. 19. I know it is true. 20. How old is she? 21. Who? 22. The girl whom your nephew married.[1] 23. I don't know how old she is. 24. She is 21 years old at least. 25. Did she marry a doctor or a lawyer? 26. Her husband is a lawyer. 27. Did you know she was married? 28. I have known it. 29. We have not known it. 30. Is your grandmother dead? 31. You know very well that she is dead. 32. She died the same day as her niece. 33. I did not know it. 34. Both died the same day. 35. How old were they? 36. The one was 73 and the other 31 years old. 37. Where does the doctor live? 38. He lives at the house of his nephew. 39. Didn't you know that? 40. I knew that very well.

II

297. DIALOGUE

1. How old are you?	Quel âge avez-vous?
2. I am eighteen years old	J'ai dix-huit ans
3. You are very young	Vous êtes très jeune
4. I am not as young as you, and yet you are already married!	Je ne suis pas aussi jeune que vous, et pourtant vous êtes déjà marié!
5. You are much younger than I	Vous êtes beaucoup plus jeune que moi

[1] See p. 71, footnote 1.

6. Do you know how old I am? Savez-vous l'âge que j'ai?
7. No, I do not know (it) Non, je ne le sais pas
8. Well, I shall be twenty-one soon. I am much older than you Eh bien, j'aurai bientôt vingt et un ans. Je suis beaucoup plus vieux que vous
9. My sister is eighteen Ma sœur a dix-huit ans
10. She is already engaged at the age of eighteen! Elle est déjà fiancée à l'âge de dix-huit ans!
11. Have you seen her fiancé? Avez-vous vu son fiancé?
12. He lives at his grandfather's, doesn't he? Il demeure chez son grand-père, n'est-ce pas?
13. He lives at his grandmother's. His grandfather is dead Il demeure chez sa grand'mère; son grand-père est mort
14. I didn't know it. When did he die? Je ne le savais pas. Quand est-ce qu'il est mort?
15. At least two years ago, at the age of eighty-three Il y a au moins deux ans, à l'âge de quatre-vingt-trois ans
16. My cousin saw his nephew at Chicago. He married the daughter of a poor lawyer Mon cousin a vu son neveu à Chicago. Il a épousé la fille d'un avocat pauvre
17. I know well who he is. He lives near my aunt, in the same street. She was born the same year as he Je sais bien qui il est. Il demeure près de ma tante, dans la même rue. Elle est née la même année que lui
18. You surprise me! I didn't know it. Is she as old as that? Vous m'étonnez! Je ne le savais pas. Est-ce qu'elle est aussi vieille que cela?
19. But, they are only thirty-five years old; you didn't know it? Mais, ils ont seulement trente-cinq ans; vous ne le saviez-pas?
20. No, that can't be true; he cannot be as young as that. It can't be the same man Non, cela ne peut pas être vrai; il ne peut pas être aussi jeune que cela. Ce ne peut pas être le même homme
21. It's his other nephew, perhaps, who married the lawyer's daughter C'est son autre neveu, peut-être, qui a épousé la fille de l'avocat

298. Conversation. 1. How old are your two brothers and your sister? 2. How old are your father and mother? 3. Who is the youngest of your brothers? 4. When was he born? 5. How old was the grandfather, who lived at your house when he died? 6. Do you know how old I am? 7. Did your uncle know how old your aunt was when he married her? 8. Do you know if she was as young as he, or was she younger? 9. Will you know before long where the doctor lives? 10. When will the lawyer know if these men lived in the same house, or does he know it already?

299. Theme. I used to live in the same house as your cousin thirty or forty years ago. We lived there together; did you not know it? He was not so young as I; he was twenty-two; I was eighteen. You know I am younger than you. He had two sisters: the one was nineteen years old, the other was thirty. If you asked her: "How old are you?" she always answered: "I was twenty-four this summer," or "I shall be twenty-five this winter." But I know now that she was thirty. The smaller sister, who was nineteen, was a very pretty girl. She knew how old her sister was, but I did not know it. I thought she was forty! I begged the pretty sister to walk across the fields with me one day, but she answered that she liked better to be in the house than in the fields when it was raining. The other sister said: "The sun will shine before long; you know that as well as I. Why don't you ask me if I want to walk across the fields with you?"

300. Exercises. *A*. Count from 1 to 100.

B. Drill on present indicative of **savoir**: § 480, *A*.

C. Drill on **savoir**: § 480, *C*.

D. Students ask questions beginning with 'when.' Other students answer them using 'ago.'

30. TRENTIÈME LEÇON [trɑ̃tjɛm]

Review

I

301. *A*. 1. What are you doing? 2. What are they doing? 3. Don't you know that? 4. Don't do that! 5. Whose is this hat? 6. It is mine. 7. It is his. 8. It is theirs. 9. It is hers. 10. Has the baker any bread? 11. He has no bread. 12. Had the grocer any sugar? 13. He had no sugar. 14. Do the carpenters make chairs? 15. They don't make chairs. 16. They don't make any. 17. Do you do errands? 18. We do errands. 19. They do no errands. 20. Did you use to do errands? 21. We did none. 22. You did some. 23. What was he making? 24. Was it hot? 25. It was cold. 26. Was it windy? 27. Do you like the spring? 28. I used to like it. 29. Was it bad weather? 30. It was fine. 31. Was it raining? 32. The sun was shining. 33. Did you see any clouds? 34. We saw no snow. 35. There was thunder and lightning (*plural*). 36. During the summer. 37. After the winter. 38. During the season. 39. Before the autumn. 40. Through the fields. 41. A smaller animal. 42. A larger cow. 43. The biggest horse. 44. The best bird. 45. The red bird. 46. This bird is as large as that bird. 47. It is larger. 48. It is the largest. 49. She was smaller than he. 50. She was as small as I. 51. This field is smaller than that farm. 52. The one is as large as the other. 53. There was much dust. 54. There were no peasants. 55. They used to speak oftener. 56. She knew it as well as he. 57. He lives in the smallest village. 58. He was not as young as I. 59. How old was he? 60. Was she young?

II

302. *B.* 1. Have you no errands to do? 2. I was doing some. 3. Was it raining or was it fine weather? 4. What were you doing while we were finishing our work? 5. During the summer vacation I used to play in the fields. 6. Was it hot, or was it cold, or did it blow during the winter? 7. He died in the little village where he was born. 8. Was he the butcher or the baker? 9. I think he was the doctor or the lawyer, or perhaps the carpenter, but I don't know his trade. 10. Was that Henry's horse? 11. That horse is mine, not his. 12. Why did you use to place that watch on the chair? 13. Because I used to look at it when I did not know what time it was. 14. At what time did you return to school yesterday? 15. If, in making tea, you have no sugar, what do you do? 16. We go across the field to the grocer's in the little village, and we buy some sugar there. 17. Were your clothes soiled by the rain? 18. No, it was not raining in the country. 19. It is fine weather there as often as in the city, or oftener, I think. 20. Do you know if she is twenty years old? 21. I used to think she was more than (**de**)[1] twenty, but she has told me that she will be nineteen this autumn. 22. She is not so young as that! 23. Did you use to answer my questions as well as he? 24. We used to answer your questions at school less badly than the other pupils. 25. Was his niece married, and did she live in the same village as he? 26. She was living there at her grandfather's house when her fiancé, the young lawyer, married the old peasant's daughter. 27. Thirty or forty years ago, I think. 28. I don't know; I prefer (like better) to talk of other things. 29. They are both dead? 30. Yes, ten years ago, at least. 31. The beginning was better than the end.

[1] **de** is used instead of **que** before numerals.

31. TRENTE ET UNIÈME LEÇON [trãıt e ynjɛm]

LA POSTE

I

303. The **Conditional** (which tells what *would* be the case under certain conditions) never offers the slightest difficulty even in irregular verbs: drop the **–ai** of the future and add the endings of the imperfect·

I would or *should give*, etc. (*Fut.* je **donner ai** [dɔnəre][1])	*I would* or *should know*, etc. (*Fut.* je **saur ai**)
je donner **ais** [dɔnərɛ][1]	je saur **ais**
(tu donner **ais** [dɔnərɛ])	(tu saur **ais**)
il donner **ait** [dɔnərɛ]	il saur **ait**
nous donner **ions** [dɔnərjõ]	nous saur **ions**
vous donner **iez** [dɔnərje]	vous saur **iez**
ils donner **aient** [dɔnərɛ]	ils saur **aient**
(je **finirai**) je **finirais**, etc.	(**j'aurai**) **j'aurais**, etc.
(je **vendrai**) je **vendrais**, etc.	(**je serai**) **je serais**, etc.

304. **Aller***[2] [ale], *to go;* **allant** [alã], *going;* **allé** [ale], *gone.*

Present indicative:	je **vais** [vɛ]	nous **allons** [alõ]
	tu **vas** [va]	vous **allez** [ale]
	il **va** [va]	ils **vont** [võ]

Imperfect: (from **allant**) **j'allais, etc.**

Past indefinite: **je suis allé, etc.**

Future: **j'irai** [–e], etc.

Conditional: **j'irais** [–ɛ], etc.

305. **Conditions** follow the normal English forms:

If he speaks, I shall speak, **S'il parle** (*present*), **je parlerai** (*future*)
If he spoke, I should speak, **S'il parlait** (*imperfect*), **je parlerais** (*conditional*)

[1] Note the pronunciation of the endings

[2] Cf. § 135, note 2.

306. VOCABULARY

l'adresse [ladrɛs] (*f.*), the address
la boîte [bwa:t], box
  la boîte aux lettres, the letter-box
la carte postale [kart pɔstal], post-card
  la carte postale illustrée [ilystre], picture post-card
le colis postal [kɔli pɔstal], postal package
à droite [a drwat], to the right
écrire [ekri:r], to write
envoyer [ãvwaje], to send; *future*, **j'enverrai** [ʒãvɛre], etc.
le facteur [faktœ:r], porter, letter-carrier
à gauche [a goʃ], to the left
heureux [œrø] (*f.* **heureuse** [œrø:z]), happy
la lettre [lɛtr], letter
le mandat [mãda], money-order
la moitié [mwatje], half
ouvrir [uvri:r], to open
la poste [pɔst], post-office
quelque [kɛlkə], some
quelquefois [kɛlkəfwa], sometimes
le temps [tã], time
le timbre [tɛ̃:br], stamp

307. DRILL

1. I am going; I will go — **Je vais; j'irai**
2. They go; they would go — **Ils vont; ils iraient**
3. I shall write; I would write — **J'écrirai; j'écrirais**
4. We will send; they would send — **Nous enverrons; ils enverraient**
5. She goes; he would go — **Elle va; il irait**
6. Would you buy? you will buy — **Achèteriez-vous? vous achèterez**
7. We would not put; he will not put — **Nous ne mettrions pas; il ne mettra pas**
8. He will open; she would finish — **Il ouvrira; elle finirait**
9. He would send a letter — **Il enverrait une lettre**
10. He will not write letters — **Il n'écrira pas de lettres**
11. I would not answer him — **Je ne lui répondrais pas**
12. I will not answer her — **Je ne lui répondrai pas**
13. Would he have answered? — **Aurait-il répondu?**
14. They will have answered — **Ils auront répondu**
15. She will be happy — **Elle sera heureuse**
16. He would not be happy — **Il ne serait pas heureux**
17. I will write if he goes there — **J'écrirai s'il y va**

18. He would write if I went — **Il écrirait si j'y allais**
19. If we paid, would you pay? — **Si nous payions, payeriez-vous?**
20. You would be happy, if you chose them — **Vous seriez heureux, si vous les choisissiez**

308. Reading. En hiver, quand il fait si froid qu'on ne peut pas sortir, j'aimerais à écrire des lettres du matin au soir, si j'en avais le temps. Si seulement ma sœur, en allant à la campagne, m'avait donné son adresse, je lui écrirais tous les jours deux ou trois lettres au moins. Je lui en écrirais une tout de suite après avoir déjeuné; puis je sortirais, j'irais à la poste, j'irais au premier guichet dans la grande salle, j'achèterais un timbre à quinze centimes, je chercherais la boîte aux lettres, et dans cinq minutes ma lettre partirait. Ma sœur l'aurait dans trois ou quatre heures, elle y répondrait le même jour, et avant le soir le facteur m'apporterait une lettre de Marie. Ce serait beau! Elle me dirait si la saison est belle à la campagne, si les fleurs poussent, s'il fait froid ou chaud, s'il pleut ou s'il fait beau temps. Et moi, le même soir je lui répondrais, et Pierre lui écrirait une carte postale illustrée, et Henriette lui enverrait un beau livre. Marie nous enverrait aussi des colis postaux — toujours des fleurs. Elle choisirait les plus beaux œillets et les plus belles roses de son jardin, elle les mettrait dans une boîte, et elle écrirait notre adresse sur la boîte. Puis elle irait à la gare, chercherait le guichet à gauche, achèterait des timbres, les payerait, et donnerait son colis postal à l'em-

J'aimerais à écrire des lettres

ployé. Le même jour nous l'aurions, nous l'ouvririons, nous admirerions les belles fleurs, nous demanderions au facteur s'il n'y a pas aussi une lettre ou une carte postale, quelque chose enfin, et il dirait quelquefois oui et quelquefois non. On chercherait dans la boîte, on y trouverait une carte postale illustrée, ou un beau livre ou quelque autre chose. Et tout le monde demanderait: «Que dit Marie?» Et nous serions si heureux — si nous savions son adresse!

309. Résumé. Hiver, lettres; ma sœur, son adresse; à la poste; on répond; facteur; ma sœur dirait; moi, Pierre et Henriette; colis-postal; œillets et roses; ma sœur à la gare; le colis arrive; on cherche; on demande; heureux.

310. Oral Drill. 1. He goes; he would go. 2. They go; we will go. 3. Will you write?; would you write? 4. I do not go; I would not go. 5. They will put; they would put. 6. He would have finished. 7. They will be finished. 8. Would they send?; they will send. 9. He will open; I should choose. 10. Will you sell?; would you sell? 11. At last I will answer him. 12. He would not answer her. 13. Will she be happy at last? 14. Would she not be happy? 15. Will his letter be finished? 16. Would he write her sometimes? 17. Would you sell half of the stamps? 18. Will they send a postal-parcel sometimes? 19. Would you have had the time? 20. She would write her (**son**) address on the postal-card if she had the time. 21. Would you go to the stamp-window or to the letter-box? 22. The letter-carrier, if he had a money-order, would go to the room on the left. 23. Would she send something, a money-order or a picture-postal? 24. You will go to the window at the right. 25. I would go, if I had time.

II

311. DIALOGUE

1. I am going to the post-office. Do you want to go there with me?	Je vais à la poste. Voulez-vous y aller avec moi?
2. I would go with pleasure, if I had (the) time (for it)	J'irais avec plaisir, si j'en avais le temps
3. It is not late	Il n'est pas tard
4. What are you going to do at the post-office?	Qu'est-ce que vous allez faire à la poste?
5. I shall buy some stamps: 12 stamps at 15 centimes, and 16 stamps at 25	J'achèterai des timbres: douze timbres à quinze centimes, et seize timbres à vingt-cinq
6. I would buy 10 francs' worth at the same time, if I had some money	J'en achèterais pour dix francs en même temps, si j'avais de l'argent
7. I would give you 10 francs, if I had enough money; but I have only 13 or 14 francs. I will give you half, if you wish	Je vous donnerais dix francs, si j'avais assez d'argent; mais j'ai seulement treize ou quatorze francs. Je vous en donnerai la moitié, si vous voulez
8. Thank you! Where does one buy the stamps?	Merci! Où est-ce qu'on achète les timbres?
9. At the window in the large room at the right	Au guichet dans la grande salle à droite
10. I would also write some postal-cards, if there were any here	J'écrirais aussi quelques cartes postales, s'il y en avait ici
11. Picture-postals? Ask for some in the store next door	Des cartes illustrées? Demandez-en dans le magasin à côté
12. Where is the letter-box?	Où est la boîte aux lettres?
13. Near the windows at the left	Près des guichets à gauche
14. I would write to my sister, if I knew her address. I	J'écrirais à ma sœur si je savais son[1] adresse. Je lui aurais en-

[1] See § 134, Note.

would have sent her a postal-parcel also	**voyé un colis postal aussi**
15. Oh yes! we would sometimes send her money-orders with our letters	**Ah oui! nous lui enverrions quelquefois des mandats avec nos lettres**
16. And she would answer us and would tell us how much pleasure that gives her	**Et elle nous répondrait et nous dirait combien cela lui fait plaisir**

312. Conversation. 1. How many letters would you write to your friends, if you had time? 2. If you left for Paris, to whom would you give your address? 3. If one had written a letter, where would one go to put it in the letter-box? 4. Where would one buy stamps? 5. How much would one pay for the stamps? 6. If you gave a postal-parcel to the employee, what would that cost? 7. If my sister left for Paris, would you sometimes send her some picture-postals? 8. Who would bring the letters to your house? 9. Whom will you ask for stamps, and where? 10. If the postman had brought you anything, would you give him some money?

313. Theme. We should like to write letters all the time, if our friends answered us immediately. We would write a letter every day; we would go to the post-office, we would ask for some fifteen-centime stamps. After having paid for our stamps, or our postal-cards, we would put the letters or cards in the box and in three minutes they would leave for Chicago. Then we would go to the store beside the post-office and would buy some pretty picture-postals or some good book which we would send to our friends. They would be so happy when the postman would bring the cards or the book. They would say to him "Thank you." Then they would immediately open our letters, or look in our box, because they would be so happy if we had sent them something

which they would like. And they would ask the postman, if some day he did not bring them something: "Have you not a letter or a postal-package or something for us?"

314. Exercises. *A.* Conjugate: 'If I go, I shall know'; 'If I knew, I should go.'

B. Drill on conditional of **savoir, aller:** § 480, *A.*

C. Drill on **aller:** § 480, *C.*

32. TRENTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON [trãːt døzjɛm]

L'HÔTEL

I

315. Je ne cherche pas, *I do not seek.*

In place of **pas:** for *nothing* put **rien** [rjɛ̃]
for *nobody* put **personne** [pɛrsɔn]
for *never* put **jamais** [ʒamɛ]
for *no more* put **plus** [ply]
for *only* put **que** [ke]

Do not omit **ne.**

Je ne cherche rien, I seek nothing (=I do not seek anything)
Je n'enverrai personne, I shall send nobody (=I shall not send anybody)
Il ne va jamais, He never goes (=He does not ever go)
Il ne cherche plus, He seeks no more (=He does not seek any more)
Je ne sais que cela,[1] I know only that (=I don't know (any more) than that)

[1] Position with *past indefinite* or with complementary infinitive:

Same as **pas** (**je n'ai pas cherché**):	
rien: Je n'ai **rien** cherché	Je ne peux **rien** comprendre
jamais: Je n'ai **jamais** cherché	Je ne peux **jamais** comprendre
plus: Je n'ai **plus** cherché	Je ne peux **plus** comprendre
Same as in English:	
personne: Je n'ai cherché **personne**	Je ne peux chercher **personne**
que: Je ne l'ai trouvé **qu'**après avoir cherché	Je ne peux chercher **que** mes amis

316. If these negative words begin the sentence, don't forget **ne**:

Personne n'est venu, Nobody came
Rien n'est arrivé, Nothing arrived

317. If the verb is omitted, **ne** is omitted also:

Qui est là? Personne, Who is there? Nobody
Irez-vous? Jamais!, Will you go? Never!
Qu'avez-vous? Rien!, What have you? Nothing

318. *Some* (*any*) before a noun = *of the.*

1. If the verb is negative, *the* is omitted (§ 248):

Il n'a pas de chevaux, He has no horses
Il n'a plus de chevaux, He has no more horses

2. If an adjective *precedes* the noun, *the* is omitted:

Il a de bons chevaux, He has good horses
But **Il a des chevaux blancs**, He has white horses

NOTE. According to a decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction, this exception may be ignored: **des bons chevaux** is not incorrect.

319. *In* and *to* = 1. with cities, **à**: **à Paris.**
2. with feminine countries, **en**: **en France.**
3. with masculine countries, **au**: **aux États-Unis.**

Je suis à Paris (**en France, aux États-Unis**), I am in Paris (in France, in the United States)
Je vais à Paris (**en France, aux États-Unis**), I am going to Paris (to France, to the United States)

320. Pouvoir [puvwaır], *to be able;* **pouvant** [puvã]; **pu** [py].

Present:

je peux [pø], I can	**nous pouvons** [puvõ], we can
(**tu peux** [pø], thou canst)	**vous pouvez** [puve], you can
il peut [pø], he can	**ils peuvent** [pœ:v], they can

Imperfect: **je pouvais, etc.**
Past indefinite: **j'ai pu, etc.**
Future: **je pourrai** [–e], etc.
Conditional: **je pourrais** [–ɛ], etc.

321. If the student will make careful note of the following he will be greatly aided in learning irregular verbs: In the *present indicative* and the *present subjunctive* the first, second, third singular and the third plural have the same stem (**peu**–), *the first and second plural have the stem of the present participle* (**pouv**–). The consonant which follows the stem of the third plural (**peu**–) is that which precedes the ending (–**ant**) of the present participle (–**v**):

je *peux* gives the stem of the third plural: **ils peu–;**
pou*v*ant gives the consonant: **ils peuv–;**
–ent (*unpronounced*) is the regular ending: **ils peuvent.**

From now on irregular forms of the irregular verbs will be italicized; the student ought to know all other forms without learning them. In **pouvoir** he should have to learn only **pu, je peux** and **je pourrai.**

322. Prendre [prɑ̃ːdr], *to take; **prenant*** [prənɑ̃]; ***pris*** [pri].

Present:	**je prends** [prɑ̃]	**nous prenons** [prənɔ̃]
	(**tu prends** [prɑ̃])	**vous prenez** [prəne]
	il prend [prɑ̃]	***ils prennent*** [prɛn]

Imperfect: **je prenais,** etc.
Past indefinite: **j'ai pris,** etc.
Future: **je prendrai** [–e], etc.
Conditional: **je prendrais** [–ɛ], etc.

323. Like **prendre** conjugate:

apprendre [aprɑ̃ːdr], *to learn*
comprendre [kɔ̃prɑ̃ːdr], *to understand*

324 VOCABULARY

l'**Amérique** [lamerik] (*f.*), America
assis [asi], seated
attendre [atɑ̃:dr], to wait, wait for
brosser [brɔse], to brush
cirer [sire], to black (shoes)
comme [kɔm], how, as, like
dernier [dɛrnje] (*f.* **dernière** [dɛrnjɛ:r], last
deuxième [døzjɛm], second
Les États-Unis [le zeta zyni] (*m.*), United States
l'**étranger** [letrɑ̃ʒe] (*m.*) foreigner *or* foreign country
l'**hôtel** [lotɛl] (*m.*), hotel
le **lit** [li], bed
le **numéro** [nymero], number
Parisien [parizjɛ̃] (*f.* Parisienne [parizjɛn]), Parisian
poli [pɔli], polite
le **pourboire** [purbwa:r], tip
premier [prəmje] (*f.* première [promjɛ:r]), first
le **rez-de-chaussée**[1] [re də ʃose], the ground-floor
le **soulier** [sulje], shoe

325. DRILL

1. Take; we have taken	Prenez; nous avons pris
2. He understood; we understood	Il a compris; nous avons compris
3. Do you learn? have you learned?	Apprenez-vous? avez-vous appris?
4. Have you been able? will he be able?	Avez-vous pu? pourra-t-il?
5. You used to be able; he is able	Vous pouviez; il peut
6. Would you be able? I was able	Pourriez-vous? je pouvais
7. He never understands; he never will be able to understand	Il ne comprend jamais; il ne pourra jamais comprendre
8. We understood nothing; nobody learned	Nous n'avons rien compris; personne n'a appris
9. We understand nobody; nobody has learned	Nous ne comprenons personne; personne n'a appris
10. Nobody used to understand us	Personne ne nous comprenait

[1] The *ground-floor* = **rez-de-chaussée**; *second floor* = **le premier**; *third floor* = **le deuxième.**

11. We used to understand nobody	Nous ne comprenions personne
12. I understood only two words	Je n'ai compris que deux mots
13. He would not be able to learn anything	Il ne pourrait rien apprendre
14. Don't take any shoes!	Ne prenez pas de souliers!
15. I have taken some fine clothing	J'ai pris de beaux vêtements
16. Have you been able to understand?	Avez-vous pu comprendre?
17. I have never understood	Je n'ai jamais compris
18. Would you be able to do it?	Pourriez-vous le faire?
19. He will no longer be able to go	Il ne pourra plus aller
20. We no longer took any lessons	Nous ne prenions plus de leçons

326. Reading. Je ne suis arrivé qu'aujourd'hui à Paris. Je n'y suis encore jamais venu. Je suis né à Chicago, aux États-Unis, et je ne suis sorti de cette ville qu'une ou deux fois. Je n'ai pas pu trouver mes amis à la gare. Personne n'y est venu. Qu'est-ce que je vais faire maintenant? Sortir seul? Je pourrais perdre mon chemin. Attendre? Personne n'arrivera. Ah! voilà! Je vais appeler un cocher. Non — il y a un grand hôtel tout près. J'irai là. Je ne parlerai que le français. Je ne parlerai plus un mot d'anglais en France. Aux États-Unis on ne parle que très peu le français. Ici je pourrai le parler tout le temps. On me prendra pour un Français. On m'a tout de suite pris pour un Français, quand je suis arrivé en France. Le garçon à l'hôtel me prenait pour un Parisien. Il m'a dit qu'il n'avait jamais entendu un meilleur français et que c'était étonnant comme il me comprenait. Il a tout compris! Je lui ai donné un bon cigare parce qu'il me prenait pour un Parisien. Il m'a dit qu'on ne me prendrait jamais pour un Américain, si je ne fumais pas de si bons cigares, et si je ne portais pas de si

beaux vêtements. Je lui ai donné un deuxième cigare — comme je n'avais pas d'argent sur moi je n'ai pas pu lui donner le pourboire qu'il attendait.

Plus tard la femme de chambre qui faisait mon lit m'a dit aussi que personne ne parlait le français comme moi. Je pense que c'est vrai. En brossant mon pardessus elle m'a dit: «Vous avez de bons tailleurs en Amérique qui font de très beaux vêtements. Je n'en ai jamais vu de plus beaux. Est-ce en Amérique que vous avez appris le français? Vous comprenez si bien! Nous n'apprenons pas si bien l'anglais à Paris.» Je lui ai donné un petit pourboire parce qu'elle était si polie. En m'apportant mes souliers cirés, elle m'a dit: «Vous avez là de très bons souliers, monsieur. On ne fait pas d'aussi bons souliers à Paris qu'aux États-Unis. Où les Américains ont-ils appris à faire des souliers si beaux? Nous ne faisons rien de si bon ici.» Autre pourboire! Si elle avait pu dire encore de si belles choses sur les Américains elle m'aurait pris mon dernier centime.

327. Résumé. Paris, Chicago; à la gare; sortir, attendre; cocher, hôtel; Américain ou Parisien; garçon, cigares; femme de chambre; vêtements, souliers; pourboires.

328. Oral Drill. 1. You are taking; we took nothing. 2. They have been able; they will be able. 3. Do you no longer understand?; nobody understands. 4. Did you take; I was taking. 5. We took; they take. 6. They never used to understand; they understand nobody. 7. They are able; they have been able. 8. He would no longer be able; he used to be able. 9. We never understand; I understand nothing. 10. Nobody understood; I used to understand nobody. 11. Have you learned it? 12. I was learning nothing. 13. We are learning nothing. 14. He will no longer be able to wait. 15. Would you be able to wait? 16. I have learned nothing. 17. Have you been able to brush my clothes? 18. I was not able to black your shoes.

19. Have you never had rooms on the (au) ground-floor? 20. The chambermaid has not been able to make the bed. 21. Nobody would desire a room on the second floor, if the waiters could find a good room on the ground-floor. 22. These foreigners are not able to find the hotel. 23. They used to live at Chicago, in the United States. 24. The polite waiter blacks their shoes. 25. If he brushes their clothes, they give him a tip. 26. The Parisian lives on the second floor, number 37. 27. He is seated near the door.

II

329. DIALOGUE

1. At last I am in Paris! Who will be able to tell me where I shall find a good hotel?	**Enfin, je suis à Paris! Qui pourra me dire où je trouverai un bon hôtel?**
2. Do you want a carriage, sir?	**Monsieur désire une voiture?**
3. Yes. Take these packages and put this trunk in the carriage. I have no other baggage	**Oui. Prenez ces colis et mettez cette malle dans la voiture. Je n'ai pas d'autres bagages**
4. You are a stranger, perhaps, sir?	**Monsieur est étranger peut-être?**
5. Yes, I have never been in Paris. Is there a hotel near the depot, where they talk English? I no longer talk the French language very well	**Oui, je n'ai jamais été à Paris. Est-ce qu'il y a un hôtel près de la gare, où on parle anglais? Je ne parle plus très bien la langue française**
6. You might stop at the English Hotel, sir. There are never any Frenchmen there. You will be able to talk English with everybody. Nobody talks French there	**Monsieur pourrait descendre à l'hôtel des Anglais. Il n'y a jamais de Français là. Vous pourrez parler anglais avec tout le monde. Personne n'y parle français**

7. Nobody?	Personne?
8. No, sir, never. They talk only English there	Non, monsieur, jamais. On n'y parle que l'anglais
9. Good! As I talk only a very poor French, I will go to that hotel	Bon! Comme je ne parle qu'un très mauvais français, j'irai à cet hôtel
10. There's the hotel, sir!	Voilà l'hôtel, monsieur!
11. There's your tip! Waiter, take my packages! I have only those two. Have you a nice room on the ground-floor?	Voilà votre pourboire! Garçon, prenez mes colis! Je n'ai que ces deux-là. Avez-vous une belle chambre au rez-de-chaussée?
12. There are no more	Il n'y en a plus
13. On the second floor?	Au premier?
14. Nothing. Everything is taken. But there is nobody in number 30, on the third floor	Rien. Tout est pris. Mais il n'y a personne dans le numéro trente au deuxième
15. I'll take it. I'll go up at once	Je le prendrai. Je monterai tout de suite
16. You desire nothing, sir?	Monsieur ne désire rien?
17. No — nothing	Non — rien
18. There are your packages. I was not able to carry your trunk	Voilà vos colis. Je n'ai pas pu porter votre malle
19. Where is the waiter that I saw seated in front of the door?	Où est le garçon que j'ai vu assis devant la porte?
20. He is not there any longer. There is nobody downstairs	Il n'y est plus. Il n'y a personne en bas
21. All right! Brush that overcoat and black my shoes!	Bon! Brossez ce pardessus et cirez mes souliers!

330. Conversation. 1. Have you been at Paris only once or twice? 2. Were your friends able to find you at the station? 3. Will you never be able to find your way, if you go out alone? 4. Have you been able to find nobody at

the hotel? 5. If you speak French in the United States, do the Americans take you for a Parisian? 6. Did people take you for a Frenchman immediately when you arrived in France? 7. Did the waiters at the hotels understand you? 8. Did nobody understand that you were (an) American? 9. Why have you not been able to give tips to the waiters? 10. What did the chambermaid say to you?

331. Theme. I have learned the French language at Paris. There are beautiful things to see at Paris. I have not been in France very long. I live in the United States. After Sunday, I shall no longer be in Paris; I shall go to the country for two or three days, and then I shall leave for Chicago. There are good hotels in America. In Chicago I will go to a big hotel where they have only French waiters. I will speak only French with them. The French waiters never speak English to travelers who know French, even if they speak it only very little. In France, I never talked English; I talked only French at Paris. In the United States, I will never talk English at the hotel. After having learned French so well, I shall talk only French. I will say nothing in English. Here at Paris the waiters all understand me. Nobody takes me for an American. I talk French to everybody; I talk English to nobody. It is astonishing how all the waiters and chambermaids have always understood me. They never take me for an American. They always ask me where I learned French, because they have never heard a foreigner talk so well. Nothing is difficult for me. Nobody talks better than I.

332. Exercises. *A*. Use 'nothing,' 'nobody,' 'never,' 'no more,' 'only,' with the present and past indefinite of **chercher**, **trouver**, **choisir**.

B. Fill the following blanks: 'He has no —,' 'He has small —,' 'He has white —,' 'He has no more —,' using the appropriate words among the following:

flower	cow	time	tea	nephew
horse	letter	watch	shoe	niece

C. Drill on present indicative and conditional of **pouvoir** and **prendre**: § 480, *A*.

D. Drill on **pouvoir** and **prendre**: § 480, *C*.

33. TRENTE-TROISIÈME LEÇON [trɑ̃ːt trwazjɛm]

LE MAGASIN

I

333. Imperative=indicative with pronoun omitted (§ 53):

vous donnez, you give; **donnez!** give!
nous donnons, we give; **donnons!** let us give!
nous finissons, we finish; **finissons!** let us finish!

334. With the *positive* imperative, pronoun-objects *follow* in violation of the rule stated in § 170.

Cherchez-le! Look for him! (*Note the hyphen*)
Donnez-lui! Give (to) him *or* her!
Trouvons-les! Let us find them!

NOTE. With the positive imperative **moi** is used instead of **me**.

Cherchez-moi! Look for me!

335. With the *negative* imperative the regular rules are followed:

Ne le cherchez pas! Do not look for him!
Ne me cherchez pas! Do not look for me!

336. To form *adverbs* from adjectives:

1. If the masculine ends in a *vowel*, add **–ment** [mɑ̃] to it:

poli, polite; **poliment**, politely; **vrai**, true; **vraiment**, truly

2. If the masculine ends in a *consonant*, add **–ment** to the feminine:

certain (*f.* **certaine**), certain
certainement, certainly
naturel (*f.* **naturelle**), natural
naturellement, naturally
heureux (*f.* **heureuse**), happy
heureusement, happily

337. Venir* [vənir], *to come; venant* [vənɑ̃], *venu* [vəny].

Present:
je viens [vjɛ̃] **nous venons** [vənɔ̃]
tu viens [vjɛ̃] **vous venez** [vəne]
il vient [vjɛ̃] ***ils viennent*** [vjɛn]

Imperfect: **je venais**, etc.
Past indefinite: **je *suis* venu**, etc. (See § 135.)
Future: ***je viendrai*** [vjɛ̃dre], etc.
Conditional: **je viendrais** [vjɛ̃drɛ], etc.

NOTE. Compounds of **venir** (e.g. **revenir*** [rəvənir], *to come back, return*) and **tenir** [tənir] and its compounds are conjugated like **venir**.

338. VOCABULARY

l'achat [laʃa] (*m.*), purchase
certain [sɛrtɛ̃] (*f.* **certaine** [sɛrtɛn]), certain
clair [klɛːr], light (*of colors*)
le **client** [kliɑ̃], customer
la **couleur** [kulœːr], color
envelopper [ɑ̃vəlɔpe], to wrap up
essayer [ɛseje], to try
foncé [fɔ̃se], dark (*of colors*)
le **gant** [gɑ̃], glove
jaune [ʒon], yellow
le **mètre** [mɛːtr], meter, yard
à la mode [a la mɔd], fashionable
naturel [natyrɛl] (*f.* **naturelle**), natural
la **paille** [paːj], straw
la **paire** [pɛːr], pair
le **paquet** [pakɛ], package
passer [pase], to pass
s'il vous plaît [sil vu plɛ], if you please
la **qualité** [kalite], quality
tenir [tənir], to hold
il vaut [vo], it is worth

339. DRILL

1. Look! let us look! **Regardez! regardons!**
2. Let us choose! choose! **Choisissons! choisissez!**
3. Don't come! let us come! **Ne venez pas! venons!**

4. In coming; in finishing	En venant; en finissant
5. She has chosen; she has come	Elle a choisi; elle est venue
6. They will return; they would hold	Ils reviendront; ils tiendraient
7. Show me that! don't show them that!	Montrez-moi cela! ne leur montrez pas cela!
8. Make your purchases! don't make them!	Faites vos achats! ne les faites pas!
9. Let us make them! let us not make them!	Faisons-les! ne les faisons pas!
10. Show me some gloves! don't show them!	Montrez-moi des gants! ne les montrez pas!
11. He will hold that easily	Il tiendra cela facilement
12. Wrap them! don't wrap them!	Enveloppez-les! ne les enveloppez pas!
13. Hold this dress! don't hold it!	Tenez cette robe! ne la tenez pas!
14. In holding; having held	En tenant; ayant tenu
15. He would hold certainly	Il tiendrait certainement
16. He will come, truly	Il viendra, vraiment
17. Give me my package! don't forget it!	Donnez-moi mon paquet! ne l'oubliez pas!
18. Let's buy this ribbon! let's not buy it!	Achetons ce ruban! ne l'achetons pas!
19. In holding them; we have held it	En les tenant; nous l'avons tenu
20. Let us hold him! let's not hold them!	Tenons-le! ne les tenons pas!

340. Reading. Une lettre venant de Paris! De qui vient-elle? De mon fiancé! Il vient passer quelques semaines ici — chez nous, naturellement. Un mois — quatre semaines seulement! C'est peu! Il viendra par le train de midi et demi. Je vais tout de suite en ville faire des achats: quelques rubans, des gants jaunes ou gris, un chapeau de paille, une robe blanche. Venez, mes sœurs! Allons au magasin faire nos achats! Notre cousin vient ici aujourd'hui!

Il viendra à midi! Allons chez la modiste! Regardons les chapeaux de paille! Achetons nous quelque chose de joli — des chapeaux à la mode! Choisissons-les avec de belles fleurs et des rubans blancs! Et ne les prenons pas s'ils ne sont pas à la mode! Voici une voiture! Prenons-la! Mais où est le cocher? Appelez-le! Ah! le voici! Montons! Enfin, voilà le magasin! Descendons! Entrons! Achetons nos gants et nos rubans ici! Regardez donc ces beaux rubans! Montrez-nous ces rubans, s'il vous plaît! Apportez-en de jaunes et de blancs! N'en apportez pas de rouges! En avez-vous de plus foncés? Ne les apportez pas, s'ils ne sont pas plus foncés que les rubans que je tiens ici! Cherchez-moi une meilleure qualité! Et ne me montrez plus de ces rubans bon marché! Montrez-moi les plus beaux! Il vaut combien le mètre, ce ruban blanc? Quatre francs! c'est cher. Donnez-moi trois mètres de ce ruban-ci, et ne me donnez qu'un demi-mètre de ce ruban-là. Montrez-nous maintenant des robes blanches! Cette robe-ci est très jolie. Prenons-la, n'est-ce pas, mes sœurs? Elle est venue de Paris, peut-être? Oui, vraiment? Ces autres sont très jolies, aussi. Prenons-en pour toutes les trois, n'est-ce pas? Elles sont très à la mode, naturellement? Les robes qui viennent de Paris (le) sont toujours, certainement. Enveloppez-les! Vous les enverrez tout de suite. Autrement, ne les envoyez

Cette robe-ci est très jolie

pas! Si elles ne sont pas venues à onze heures, je n'en veux pas. Ce matin, avant onze heures — ne l'oubliez pas! Oubliez-le — et vous perdrez certainement un bon client!

341. Résumé. Visite du fiancé; train; faire des achats; chapeaux à la mode; voiture; cocher; magasin; rubans, couleurs; qualité, prix; robes, de Paris; enveloppez, envoyez; oublier, client perdu.

342. Oral Drill. 1. Pass!; let us choose! 2. Don't come!; return! 3. In returning, in choosing. 4. We have finished; he has come. 5. You will not come; he would hold. 6. Would they come?; will they hold? 7. Do it!; don't do it! 8. In holding them; having held him. 9. I was holding him; I will hold her. 10. Certainly they will hold. 11. Naturally he holds them. 12. Will he come, truly? 13. Forget it!; don't forget it! 14. Let us not forget it!; let's forget it! 15. Will you return? I shall not return. 16. Wrap this package!; don't wrap it! 17. Give them some gloves! 18. Don't give him the straw hat! 19. Show her this dress! 20. Don't send her these dresses! 21. Choose this dark color!; don't choose it! 22. We choose the light color; let us choose it! 23. Show her some hats, if you please! 24. How much is this silk worth? 25. It is worth only two francs a (the) yard; buy it! 26. Those yellow gloves are not fashionable; don't buy them! 27. This dark yellow is certainly pretty. 28. I like this dress; wrap it up! 29. Send it to my address, please! 30. Choose this quality! 31. Don't show me those gloves; they are certainly too light.

II

343. DIALOGUE

1. I am going to make some purchases. Come with me!	Je vais faire des achats. Venez avec moi!
2. Naturally I would come with pleasure, if I could return early	Naturellement je viendrais avec plaisir, si je pouvais revenir de bonne heure
3. You will be able to easily. There is a cabby coming! Let's get in!	Vous le pourrez facilement. Voilà un cocher qui vient! Montons!
4. Here's the store! Come! Let's go in!	Voici le magasin! Venez! Entrons!
5. Show us some gloves, please!	Montrez-nous des gants, s'il vous plaît!
6. Of what color do you wish them?	De quelle couleur les désirez-vous?
7. Show us some yellow ones and some gray ones!	Montrez-nous des jaunes et des gris!
8. Try on this pair!	Essayez cette paire-ci!
9. Yes, let's put them on! No — let's not put them on! Show me another pair, please, but do not show me so dark a color!	Oui, mettons-les! Non — ne les mettons pas! Montrez-moi une autre paire, s'il vous plaît, mais ne me montrez pas une couleur si foncée!
10. The pair that I hold here is very pretty. These gloves come from Paris	La paire que je tiens ici est très jolie. Ces gants viennent de Paris
11. But gloves coming from Paris will be very dear, won't they?	Mais des gants venant de Paris seront très chers, n'est-ce pas?
12. Naturally they are a little dearer. But I know that this pair is worth more than the others	Naturellement ils sont un peu plus chers. Mais je sais que cette paire vaut plus que les autres
13. Give me that pair!	Donnez-moi cette paire-là!
14. You will not easily find any	Vous n'en trouverez pas facile-

cheaper. This color is really fine	ment à meilleur marché. Cette couleur est vraiment belle
15. That's true. Only don't give me that first pair! Give me the others! Wrap them up and send them to my address! To-day, don't forget it!	C'est vrai. Seulement, ne me donnez pas cette première paire! Donnez-moi les autres! Enveloppez-les et envoyez-les à mon adresse! Aujourd'hui, ne l'oubliez pas!
16. Certainly, madam! I will send your packages immediately	Certainement, madame! J'enverrai vos paquets tout de suite
17. Now let us look at the straw hats! Let us choose one of the prettiest!	Maintenant, regardons les chapeaux de paille! Choisissons un des plus jolis!
18. Here is one of very good quality and very fashionable! Put it on!	En voici un de très bonne qualité et très à la mode! Mettez-le!
19. Good! Let us take it!	Bon! Prenons-le!

344. Conversation. 1. By what train did your cousin come? 2. You are going to the store; what will you buy? 3. What did you buy at the milliner's? 4. Do you always take a carriage when you go to make purchases? 5. At what time will your cousins come to your house? 6. That is very pretty ribbon; how much is it worth a yard? 7. Have I shown you my beautiful white dresses which came from Paris? 8. Have you taken the yellow gloves or the white ones? 9. Are those hats which your sisters chose fashionable? 10. Will you send me before ten o'clock the packages which you have wrapped up?

345. Theme. At last I have returned home (to my house). Let's enter the living-room! Where is the maid? Will she never come? I thought certainly that she would come immediately. Five years ago, when I returned from Paris, she always used to come to bring me my letters. She used 5

to hold my horse while I was getting down. But truly, she is not so young as she was (it). Marie! come here! Bring me my letters! Thank you! Ah! a letter coming from Paris! My cousin is coming to pass some weeks with us. She will come certainly to-day; by the four o'clock train (train of four o'clock), naturally. My sister, come here! Let's go to the store! Let's make some purchases, a straw hat for me and a pair of gloves of a dark color for me. Let's buy some beautiful flowers for my cousin! Choose them for me! But if you find fashionable dresses in the store, don't look at them; if you find pretty hats, don't buy them! Let's make our purchases and come back! Wait! What time is it? Three o'clock already! We cannot arrive there easily before half past three. Let's get into the carriage!

346. Exercises. *A*. Fill the following blanks: '— it!' 'Do not — it!' 'Let us — it!' 'Let us not — them!' using the verbs:

send	finish	learn	build	wait for

B. 'Give —!' 'Let us give —!' Fill the blanks with the following pronouns, when possible both direct and indirect:

him	them (*f.*)	her	you
me	us	them (*m.*)	

C. Form adverbs from the following adjectives:

great	open	happy	certain
polite	true	natural	

D. Drill on present indicative of **venir**, **tenir**, **revenir**: § 480, *A*.

E. Drill on **venir** and **tenir**: § 480, *D*.

34. TRENTE-QUATRIÊME LEÇON [trɑ̃ːt katriɛm]

I

347. Les Mois de l'Année:

janvier [ʒɑ̃vje], *January*	**juillet** [ʒyijɛ], *July*
février [fevrie], *February*	**août** [u], *August*
mars [mars], *March*	**septembre** [sɛptɑ̃ːbr], *September*
avril [avril], *April*	**octobre** [ɔktɔbr], *October*
mai [mɛ], *May*	**novembre** [nɔvɑ̃ːbr], *November*
juin [ʒyɛ̃], *June*	**décembre** [desɑ̃ːbr], *December*

Note 1. **le premier janvier** (**mars**, etc.), January 1
But **le deux** (etc.) **janvier**, January 2, etc.[1]

Note 2. The French in speaking of the months often prefix **le mois de** to the name:

au mois d'avril (= **en avril**), in April
J'y vais au mois de mai, I am going there in May

348. Combien de temps = *how long*.

Depuis combien de temps est-il ici?
Depuis quand est-il ici? } How long has he been here?
Il est ici depuis longtemps, He has been here a long time

349. Faire [fɛːr], *to do, make;* ***faisant*** [fəzɑ̃], ***fait*** [fɛ].

Present:	**je fais** [fɛ]	**nous faisons** [fəzɔ̃]
	(**tu fais** [fɛ])	***vous faites*** [fɛt]
	il fait [fɛ]	***ils font*** [fɔ̃]

Imperfect: **je faisais** [fəzɛ], **etc.**
Past indefinite: **j'ai fait** [fɛ], **etc.**
Future: ***je ferai*** [fəre], etc.
Conditional: **je ferais** [fərɛ], **etc.**

350. Dire [diːr], *to say;* ***disant*** [dizɑ̃], ***dit*** [di].

Present:	**je dis** [di]	**nous disons** [dizɔ̃]
	(**tu dis** [di])	***vous dites*** [dit]
	il dit [di]	**ils disent** [diːz]

[1] For the use of **mil** in dates, see p. 160, footnote 1.

Imperfect: **je disais**, etc.
Past indefinite: **j'ai dit**, etc.
Future: **je dirai** [–e], etc.
Conditional: **je dirais** [–ɛ], etc.

351. VOCABULARY

absolu [apsɔly], absolute
amuser [amyze], to amuse
l'anniversaire [laniversɛːr] (*m.*), birthday
le cadeau [kado], present
commencer [kɔmɑ̃se], to begin
demain [dɔmɛ̃], to-morrow
depuis [dəpyi], since, from
la fête [fɛːt], holiday
le jour de l'an [ʒur də lɑ̃], New Year's Day
joyeux [ʒwajø] (*f.* **joyeuse** [ʒwajøːz]), joyous, merry
jusqu'à [ʒyska], up to, until
le Noël [nɔɛl], Christmas
le Pâques [pɑːk], Easter
le temps [tɑ̃], time, weather
la visite [vizit], visit

352. DRILL

1. I was doing; he will do	**Je faisais; il fera**
2. They are doing; they would do	**Ils font; ils feraient**
3. She was saying; they say	**Elle disait; ils disent**
4. Say it! don't do it!	**Dites-le! ne le faites pas!**
5. Do it! don't say it!	**Faites-le! ne le dites pas!**
6. One used to say; one says	**On disait; on dit**
7. Let us say it! let us not do it!	**Disons-le! ne le faisons pas!**
8. We say it; we do not do it	**Nous le disons; nous ne le faisons pas**
9. Are you doing it? you say it	**Le faites-vous? vous le dites**
10. Have you done it? I have said it	**L'avez-vous fait? je l'ai dit**
11. They used to do it; we used to say it	**Ils le faisaient; nous le disions**
12. I will do it; I said it	**Je le ferai; je l'ai dit**
13. What were you doing? what was he saying?	**Qu'est-ce que vous faisiez? que disait-il?**

14. Since January; until July	Depuis janvier; jusqu'à juillet
15. How long, tell! since when?	Combien de temps, dites! depuis combien de temps?
16. Since yesterday; until tomorrow	Depuis hier; jusqu'à demain
17. What do you do in summer?	Qu'est-ce que vous faites en été?
18. What will you do this winter?	Qu'est-ce que vous ferez cet hiver?
19. I would do it before fall	Je le ferais avant l'automne
20. Tell me, when will spring come?	Dites-moi quand viendra le printemps?

353. Reading. *Jean:* Voilà le cinq août arrivé! L'école est ouverte depuis le trente juillet. Les élèves reviennent tous les jours. En voilà un! Bonjour, Pierre! Depuis quand êtes-vous ici?

— *Pierre:* Je suis en ville depuis le trente et un juillet.

— *Jean:* Que faites-vous ici?

— *Pierre:* Je ne fais rien encore. Je ferai un peu d'anglais cette année-ci. Je parlerai poliment aux maîtres, j'apprendrai mes leçons, je jouerai — et j'attendrai les vacances de Noël qui heureusement commencent le vingt décembre cette année-ci.

— *Jean:* Je ferai absolument la même chose. Où avez-vous passé vos vacances d'été?

Pierre: Je suis allé chez mes parents à la campagne le trente et un mai — non, le premier juin.

— *Jean:* Qu'est-ce que vous faites d'amusant à la campagne au printemps et en été, depuis le mois de mai jusqu'au mois d'août?

— *Pierre:* Nous ne faisons absolument rien d'amusant — toujours du travail! Mais dites-moi donc, qu'est-ce que vous faisiez? Où avez-vous été à Noël? Qu'est-ce qu'on fait en ville pendant les vacances d'hiver, depuis Noël jusqu'au jour de l'an, et après, pendant tout l'hiver?

Je suis allé à la campagne

— *Jean:* Comme il fait très froid en janvier — et en février, et en mars aussi quelquefois — nous faisons peu de visites. Nos amis arrivent chez nous à Noël et disent «Joyeux Noël» et nous leur disons la même chose.

— *Pierre:* Et le jour de l'an, que faites-vous?

— *Jean:* Le jour de l'an nous faisons des visites depuis le matin jusqu'au soir.

— *Pierre:* Et que dites-vous à vos amis?

— *Jean:* Nous leur disons «Bonne Année» et ils nous disent «Bonne Année.»

— *Pierre:* Est-ce qu'ils vous font des cadeaux?

— *Jean:* Oui, et nous leur faisons des cadeaux aussi. On m'a fait cadeau d'un Shakespeare!

— *Pierre:* Hm! Mes parents me font de ces cadeaux-là aussi! Ils m'ont fait revenir chez nous pour les fêtes de Pâques. Mais ils m'ont fait travailler tout le temps: samedi, dimanche, et le jour de mon anniversaire!

354. Résumé. L'école; Pierre; maîtres, leçons, vacances de Noël; vacances d'été, parents, campagne, travail; Noël en ville; jour de l'an; cadeaux; Shakespeare; fêtes de Pâques, travail, anniversaire.

355. Oral Drill. 1. What are you doing? 2. What will they do? 3. He would do it. 4. She will do nothing. 5. Let us do it! 6. Do not say that! 7. What were we saying? 8. They say nothing. 9. Nobody has done it. 10. They do nothing. 11. Don't tell that to anybody! 12. I would never do that. 13. One says it. 14. Does one do that? 15. People used to do that. 16. We say that. 17. We used to do it. 18. People used to do it. 19. What will you do? 20. We have done nothing. 21. We no longer do it. 22. Nobody will do it. 23. I have never done it. 24. When will you do it? 25. Don't do it! 26. Let us do that! 27. We have done it. 28. I would not do it. 29. What were you saying? 30. I was not saying anything. 31. Nobody said

that. 32. You will do that certainly. 33. Since when have you lived here? 34. I have lived here since February. 35. How long will you live here? 36. I shall live here till April or May. 37. From Christmas till New Year's Day. 38. What will you do New Year's Day? 39. I shall make many visits. 40. What were you doing at Christmas? 41. We made presents to our friends. 42. What will you do in spring? 43. I will do nothing till summer vacation. 44. What do you do in autumn and winter? 45. I do nothing.

II

356. DIALOGUE

1. My dear friend (*f.*), since when have you been in town, and for how long?	**Ma chère amie, depuis quand êtes-vous en ville, et pour combien de temps?**
2. I have been here since the 16th of April, and I shall only leave on the 31st of July. And since when have you been here?	**Je suis ici depuis le seize avril, et je ne partirai que le trente et un juillet. Et depuis quand êtes-vous ici?**
3. I have been here since January, since New Year's Day. I love the city in winter and spring	**Je suis ici depuis janvier, depuis le jour de l'an. J'aime la ville en hiver et au printemps**
4. But you will pass the summer in the country, won't you?	**Mais vous passerez l'été à la campagne, n'est-ce pas?**
5. Yes, from the month of June until the month of August or September	**Oui, depuis le mois de juin jusqu'au mois d'août ou de septembre**
6. But, tell me, what are you doing now?	**Mais, dites-moi, que faites-vous maintenant?**
7. My husband and I make visits at our friends', and our friends make some at our home	**Mon mari et moi nous faisons des visites chez nos amis, et nos amis en font chez nous**

8. And that amuses you a great deal?	Et cela vous amuse beaucoup?
9. No, it is always the same thing, naturally, from the first of the month till the last, and from morning till night	Non, c'est toujours la même chose, naturellement, depuis le premier du mois jusqu'au dernier, et depuis le matin jusqu'au soir
10. What do you say to them, and what do they say to you?	Qu'est-ce que vous leur dites, et qu'est-ce qu'ils vous disent?
11. We say "Good-day" to them on coming to their house, and they say "Good evening" to us in departing from our house	Nous leur disons «Bonjour» en venant chez eux, et eux ils nous disent «Bonsoir» en partant (§ 392) de chez nous
12. Tell me, you will make us a visit before starting for the country, won't you? Make us a visit to-morrow!	Dites-moi, vous nous ferez une visite avant de partir pour la campagne, n'est-ce pas? Faites-nous une visite demain!
13. I would do it with pleasure, if I could find time for it, but all my time is taken since last Sunday till Friday. But I will make you a visit Saturday evening	Je le ferais avec plaisir, si je pouvais en trouver le temps, mais tout mon temps est pris depuis dimanche dernier jusqu'à vendredi. Mais je vous ferai une visite samedi soir
14. Thank you, do so! Don't forget it!	Merci, faites-le! Ne l'oubliez pas!

357. Conversation. 1. Since when have you been at school? 2. How long will you be in town? 3. When will the Christmas vacation come this year? 4. Will you go to the country this summer? 5. How long will you be at your relatives' home? 6. What are you doing, what have you done, and what will you do at school? 7. Tell me, what were the pupils doing yesterday? 8. What were you saying to your friends New Year's Day? 9. Did Peter tell John that he would come to his house at Easter? 10. Do your relatives

say Merry Christmas and Happy New Year to you during the holidays of December and January?

358. Theme. The pupils are coming back to (the) school after the summer vacation. My friend John has come back already. He returns early, the thirty-first of August or the first of September. I have been here since yesterday. The master always asks us if we will do more work this year. We always say that we would do more work, if we had more time. "Yes," says the professor, "you say that you will do that, but very often you do nothing at (the) school. I know that you do nothing; you wait for the Christmas vacation! When Christmas comes, you say 'Merry Christmas and Happy New Year' to me and you go home. What do you do during the vacation? Nothing! At Easter? Nothing! Tell me: are you doing something to-day? Did you do anything (something) yesterday? Will you do anything to-morrow? No! my pupils do nothing, they have done nothing, they will do nothing. You pass all your time without doing anything (**rien**). Tell me: what have you done to-day? You say nothing. I understand: you have done nothing, and you are doing nothing!"

359. Exercises. *A.* Form adverbs from the following adjectives:

absolute last joyous

B. What are the months of the year?

C. Give the dates from January 1 to January 31.

D. Students ask and answer the question 'How long have you been here?'

E. Drill on present indicative of **faire** and **dire**: § 480, *A*.

F. Drill on **faire** and **dire**: § 480, *D*.

35. TRENTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON [trɑ̃:t sɛ̃kjɛm]

Review

I

360. 1. He will go. 2. He goes. 3. Were you going? 4. Would you go? 5. They go. 6. She would be. 7. You shall have it. 8. We should not be. 9. We should send them. 10. Would you write it? 11. Will you have the time? 12. Who would choose it? 13. Will she be happy? 14. Would he open it? 15. I should not answer. 16. Would he go? 17. I will send them. 18. Will he write, if I go? 19. If we went, would they write? 20. Take them! 21. I have taken it. 22. Do they learn? 23. They were learning. 24. Have you been able? 25. Nobody used to be able. 26. They are able. 27. Having been able. 28. Being taken. 29. We never take. 30. I no longer understand. 31. I used to understand nothing. 32. Nobody has taken it. 33. He used to take only that. 34. Will you be able to do it? 35. We learn only this. 36. She understood nobody. 37. He was seated. 38. She will be seated. 39. We have good beds. 40. Are you waiting for some strangers? 41. There are no Americans here. 42. Make your purchases! 43. We are making them. 44. Let us make them! 45. Do not hold it! 46. Will they come, truly? 47. Wrap that! 48. Do not wrap it! 49. Will you come? 50. Let us finish! 51. Let us buy them! 52. Let us not hold them! 53. Have you held it? 54. Let's hold them! 55. He is in France. 56. They make them in Paris. 57. Show me the road! 58. Do it! 59. Don't say it! 60. In doing it. 61. Having done it. 62. They say it. 63. Do you say it? 64. Let us say it! 65. Since June. 66. Till July. 67. Tell me where? 68. Since when? 69. He used to learn it. 70. She used to do it. 71. That is done. 72. What do you

say to that? 73. Until to-morrow. 74. Since yesterday. 75. I will go this winter. 76. She came this spring. 77. She comes in summer. 78. She goes this autumn.

II

361. 1. Would you go to the post-office? 2. I would send my letter, if I had some stamps. 3. She would write a card and send it to my address. 4. I would put them in the mail-box. 5. You send (the) half of the money-orders from this window. 6. She will send him some picture-cards to-morrow. 7. Will you answer me sometimes? 8. They will send us some postal-parcels. 9. The letter-carrier would never bring the money-order. 10. The foreigners used to understand me easily. 11. The chambermaid was making the bed on (à) the ground-floor. 12. As I was saying to you, I am going to the United States. 13. Brush my coat and black my shoes! 14. We never do that in America. 15. The waiter took the tip. 16. We don't understand which number you desire. 17. Where was he seated? 18. He used to answer me very politely. 19. He used to do nothing. 20. We no longer do that. 21. Who did it? Nobody. 22. What was he doing? Nothing. 23. Naturally, I would no longer do that. 24. He was telling me that there were only two rooms on the second floor. 25. Since when have you been here? 26. *I* have been here since yesterday. 27. Will you be here until to-morrow? 28. I shall not make any purchases. 29. Truly, this color is too dark, and that color is too light. 30. Come back! Tell me how long you will be there! 31. Send them to my house, but don't wrap them! 32. They used to make straw hats. 33. The customers never take those dark gloves. 34. How much is a yard worth? 35. Send me these packages, if you please. 36. That has never been fashionable. 37. Where did you pass your summer vacation? 38. It (ce) will be my birthday to-morrow. 39. The last holiday will come at Easter.

40. Nobody makes me beautiful presents. 41. I shall make no visits this month. 42. Merry Christmas and Happy New Year!

36. TRENTE-SIXIÊME LEÇON [trãɪt sizjɛm]

LE THÉÂTRE

I

362. Agreement of Past Participles:

1. If the verb is conjugated with **avoir,** the participle agrees with the direct object *when the object precedes* (*order:* object; verb; participle: page 71, footnote 1):

Quelle *leçon* avez-vous *apprise?* What lesson have you learned?

Other wise no agreement (*order:* verb; participle; object):

J'ai *appris* la *leçon,* I have learned the lesson

2. If the verb is conjugated with **être** (§ 135), the participle agrees with the *subject* (§ 135, note 1):

Elle* est *venue, She has come
Elles* sont *aimées, They are loved

363. The French do not say *I am hungry, I am thirsty, I am right,* etc.; they say *I have hunger, I have thirst, I have reason,* etc. (see § 232):

J'ai **chaud** [ʃo], I am hot
Il a **froid** [frwa], He is cold
Vous avez **raison** [rɛzɔ̃], You are right
Nous avons **tort** [tɔːr], We are wrong
Ils ont **peur** [pœːr], They are afraid (they have fear)
Elle a **besoin de** [bəzwɛ̃ də] cela, She needs that (she has need of that)

364. When *what = that which,* use:

Subject, **ce qui** [sə ki]: **Je sais ce qui est ici,** I know what is here
Object, **ce que** [sə kə]: **Je sais ce que vous avez,** I know what you have

365. **Lire** [liːr], *to read;* ***lisant*** [lizɑ̃], ***lu*** [ly].

Present:	**je lis** [li]	**nous lisons** [lizɔ̃]
	(**tu lis** [li])	**vous lisez** [lize]
	il lit [li]	**ils lisent** [liːz]

Imperfect: **je lisais**, etc.
Past indefinite: **j'ai lu**, etc.
Future: **je lirai** [–e], etc.
Conditional: **je lirais** [–ɛ], etc.

366. **Écrire** [ekriːr], *to write;* ***écrivant*** [ekrivɑ̃], ***écrit*** [ekri].

Present:	**j'écris** [ekri]	**nous écrivons** [ekrivɔ̃]
	(**tu écris** [ekri])	**vous écrivez** [ekrive]
	il écrit [ekri]	**ils écrivent** [ekriːv]

Imperfect: **j'écrivais**, etc.
Past indefinite: **j'ai écrit**, etc.
Future: **j'écrirai** [–e], etc.
Conditional: **j'écrirais** [–ɛ], etc.

367. VOCABULARY

attrapèr [atrape], to catch
l'automobile [lotɔmɔbil] (*f.*), automobile
bête [bɛːt], stupid
le chauffeur [ʃofœːr], chauffeur
le cinéma [sinema], moving-picture show
clair [klɛːr], clear
la comédie [kɔmedi], comedy
drôle [droːl], funny
lent [lɑ̃], slow
la nuit [nyi], night
la pièce [pjɛs], play
le pied [pje], foot; **à—**, on foot
le rhume [rym], cold (*malady*)
la scène [sɛn], stage
le taxi [taksi], taxicab
le théâtre [teɑːtr], theater
la tragédie [traʒedi], tragedy
vite [vit], quickly, fast

368. DRILL

1. Am I wrong? You are right! — **Est-ce que j'ai tort? Vous avez raison**
2. Who is afraid? We are cold — **Qui a peur? Nous avons froid**
3. Are you reading? We are writing — **Lisez-vous? Nous écrivons**
4. Was she reading? She was writing — **Lisait-elle? Elle écrivait**

5. Would you read? I would write	Est-ce que vous liriez? J'écrirais
6. Let us read! Do not write!	Lisons! N'écrivez pas!
7. Do you know what I have written?	Savez-vous ce que j'ai écrit?
8. I need the books that I have read	J'ai besoin des livres que j'ai lus
9. What ladies have you seen?	Quelles dames avez-vous vues?
10. We saw two old ladies	Nous avons vu deux vieilles dames
11. We read what is amusing	Nous lisons ce qui est amusant
12. I know what I wish	Je sais ce que je veux
13. What you say is stupid	Ce que vous dites est bête
14. Did you write the letter that I have read?	Avez-vous écrit la lettre que j'ai lue?
15. Are you afraid of this man?	Avez-vous peur de cet homme?
16. I have read the play; it is well written	J'ai lu la pièce; elle est bien écrite
17. Write to me! don't write to her!	Écrivez-moi! ne lui écrivez pas!
18. He will read the books you have read	Il lira les livres que vous avez lus
19. That's what he desired	Voilà ce qu'il désirait
20. You are wrong and I am right	Vous avez tort et j'ai raison

369. Reading. Je vais très souvent au cinéma et au théâtre, et je pense que j'ai raison. Ce qui serait bête, ce serait de demeurer dans une grande ville sans y aller aussi souvent que possible. On aurait tort, vraiment. Je prends toujours de bonnes places pour ma femme et moi. En haut nous aurions chaud, ce que je n'aime pas; en bas nous aurions froid près des fenêtres, ce que ma femme n'aime pas. Et nous avons peur aussi d'attraper un rhume. Nous sommes donc obligés de prendre les meilleures places près de la scène. Cela coûte cher, mais j'ai assez d'argent. Il est vrai que nous ne prenons jamais de taxi pour aller au théâtre; nous

y allons à pied. On n'a qu'à partir de bonne heure ou à marcher un peu vite pour arriver à temps. On a tort d'arriver quand la pièce est commencée, comme beaucoup le font. On ne commence qu'à huit heures un quart; on ne finit le plus souvent qu'à onze heures et demie, ou à minuit. On donne quelquefois des tragédies, ce qui n'est pas très amusant, quelquefois des comédies. Voilà ce que j'aime! Je n'aime pas les pièces de Shakespeare. Je les ai vues toutes au théâtre, et je les ai lues un peu il y a quarante ans. C'est un peu vieux, tout cela. On dit qu'il les a écrites il y a très longtemps. On écrivait comme cela au temps de Shakespeare, mais nous n'écrivons plus comme lui aujourd'hui. On écrit clairement maintenant. Ces vieilles pièces ne sont pas bien écrites; quand je les ai lues je les ai trouvées très difficiles à comprendre. Je ne les ai jamais finies. Et puis, vous savez, ce sont des tragédies, ce qui ne me fait pas plaisir. Je ne les ai plus lues depuis. J'ai tort peut-être, mais je ne les ai jamais aimées, les tragédies. Un beau jeune homme épouse une belle jeune fille, et on ne les trouvera jamais heureux à la fin de la pièce! Vous les avez lues aussi, je pense, ces vieilles pièces. Nous les lisions à l'école—parce que Shakespeare les a écrites.—Je ne les ai jamais lues depuis. Nous en écrivons de beaucoup meilleures aujourd'hui. Ce que je trouve très drôle, c'est que ma femme lisait encore ces pièces cet hiver. Elle les a trouvées assez amusantes — seulement, après les avoir finies, elle avait toujours peur de sortir la nuit. Nous ne voulons donc voir que des pièces vraiment amusantes. Une petite comédie bien écrite, voilà ce que je demande après avoir travaillé du matin jusqu'au soir!

370. Résumé. Aller au théâtre; raison ou tort; places; chaud, froid, rhume; cher; taxi; arriver à temps, arriver tard; commencer et finir; tragédies, comédies; lu Shakespeare, vieux; pièces bien écrites, claires, difficiles; tragédies, jeune

homme et jeune fille; à l'école, depuis; ma femme, elle a peur; pièces amusantes, après le travail.

371. Oral Drill. 1. Do you need this? 2. I need that. 3. Read this book. 4. I have read those plays. 5. What plays have you read? 6. I was reading your letters. 7. Are the letters well written? 8. We have not read them. 9. Will you read them? 10. I have read the letters that you wrote. 11. You were wrong. 12. No, I am always right. 13. Do you need your pens? 14. Have you found her? 15. She is lost. 16. She has lost her sister. 17. We know what they wish. 18. What is done is done. 19. Are you warm? 20. He was wrong. 21. We have written to them. 22. The plays are well played. 23. They played badly. 24. She has caught a cold. 25. Those men will be caught. 26. The automobiles will go fast. 27. I am not afraid of the taxicabs. 28. They go more slowly. 29. Are you afraid to go on foot? 30. The play that I saw was very funny. 31. She knew what she was writing. 32. She was reading a tragedy on the stage. 33. I have seen, read and written plays. 34. There are the letters that I have read or written.

II

372. DIALOGUE

1. Will you come to the park with me?
2. No, I shall go to the theater this evening — or to the moving-pictures. I am always cold in the park
3. You are right. You will be warm at the theater. But what are you reading, eh?
4. I was reading the play that they gave yesterday evening

Est-ce que vous viendrez au parc avec moi?

Non, j'irai au théâtre ce soir — ou au cinéma. J'ai toujours froid au parc

Vous avez raison. Vous aurez chaud au théâtre. Mais que lisez-vous donc?

Je lisais la pièce qu'on a donnée hier soir

5. I have not read it. Who wrote it?
Moi je ne l'ai pas lue. Qui est-ce qui l'a écrite?

6. It's the play that you saw Wednesday, and which you found so pretty
C'est la pièce que vous avez vue mercredi, et que vous avez trouvée si jolie

7. You are wrong — it's another play that they played Wednesday
Vous avez tort — c'est une autre pièce qu'on a jouée mercredi

8. Do read it! It's two of my friends who wrote it. All that they write is pretty. It's they who wrote the comedy that they played Monday. They wrote it in a single week!
Lisez-la donc! Ce sont deux de mes amis qui l'ont faite. Tout ce qu'ils écrivent est joli. Ce sont eux qui ont écrit la comédie qu'on a donnée lundi. Ils l'ont écrite en une seule semaine!

9. They write fast, truly. Shakespeare didn't write as fast as they
Ils écrivent vite, vraiment. Shakespeare n'écrivait pas aussi vite qu'eux

10. He! no — he wrote very slowly. And then, he wrote only tragedies. Have you read them?
Lui! non — il écrivait très lentement. Et puis, il n'a écrit que des tragédies. Est-ce que vous les avez lues?

11. No, I never read any. I used to read some at school
Non, je n'en lis jamais. J'en lisais au collège

12. You didn't find them very amusing, those tragedies?
Vous ne les avez pas trouvées très amusantes, ces tragédies?

13. No, I never liked them. Why does one read those things? That's what I don't understand. What I ask for is a good, amusing comedy, like the little play that I saw Saturday. But tragedies, no! There are so many of them every
Non, je ne les ai jamais aimées. Pourquoi lit-on ces choses-là? Voilà ce que je ne comprends pas. Ce que je demande c'est une bonne comédie amusante, comme la petite pièce que j'ai vue samedi. Mais des tragédies, non! Il y en a tant tous les jours: les taxis, les auto-

day: the taxicabs, the autos, the chauffeurs that go so fast!	**mobiles, les chauffeurs qui vont si vite!**
14. That's true — one does not need any tragedies	**C'est vrai — on n'a pas besoin de tragédies**

373. Conversation. 1. We go every day to the moving-pictures; are we right? 2. We never go to the theater; are we wrong? 3. Do you always get (**prendre**) good seats? 4. Are you warm or cold at the theater? 5. If you have seats near the stage, are you afraid of catching a cold? 6. Have you seen the plays that Shakespeare wrote? 7. Did your friends find them easy to understand when they read them? 8. Do you read now the same books that you used to read at school? 9. Your wife has read the play that I wrote; did she finish it and did she understand it? 10. Did Shakespeare use to write slowly or fast?

374. Theme. We have never gone to the moving-pictures, and we do not often go to the theater. Upstairs one is hot; downstairs one is cold. And one easily catches a cold in the theater. I am always afraid of that. And then the comedies of to-day are badly written. We have almost always found them very stupid. We have seen some good plays that we have liked and that we found well written also. When they played them well, we have seen them with pleasure. But forty years ago one wrote better. We write too fast now. We read too fast also. If you read fast, you are wrong. We used to read slowly. We were right. We understood what we were reading. One needs much time to (**pour**) understand a good book. I have nearly always understood the books that I have read. I think in reading. Does one think much to-day in reading or in writing? No. The men and women of to-day read and write much; what they do not do is to (**c'est de**) think. They are wrong, truly. What they do is easy: they read and write; but they

are afraid to think. Or, perhaps, they do not need to think! And also, we do not read the best books. Shakespeare has written many beautiful plays. Have you bought them? have you read them? have you understood them?

375. Exercises. *A.* Use past indefinites with each of the following: quelle, *to arrive, to go,* quels, *to go out, to come back; to learn, the men whom, the men who, the thing which,* quelles, quel.

B. Conjugate:

I am right. I shall be afraid.
I was (*imperfect*) wrong. I needed (past indefinite) that.

C. Conjugate:

I know what is here. I shall know what you will have.

D. Drill on **lire** and **écrire**: § 480, *D.*

37. TRENTE-SEPTIÈME LEÇON [trɑ̃ːt sɛtjɛm]

LA TOILETTE

I

376. Reflexive Verbs : se laver* [sə lave], *to wash oneself.*

Present:

je **me** lave [laːv], I wash myself	nous **nous** lavons [lavɔ̃], we wash ourselves
(tu **te** laves [laːv], thou washest thyself)	vous **vous** lavez [lave], you wash yourself *or* yourselves
il **se** lave [laːv], he washes himself	ils **se** lavent [laːv], they wash themselves

Imperfect: **je me lavais**, etc.

Past indefinite:

je me suis lavé	**nous nous sommes lavés**
(tu t'es lavé)	**vous vous êtes lavé(s)**
il s'est lavé	**ils se sont lavés**
elle s'est lavée	**elles se sont lavées**

NOTE 1. The auxiliary with reflexive verbs is **être**; but the past participle agrees not with the *subject* but with a *preceding direct object* as in the case of verbs conjugated with **avoir**; cf. § 362.

Future: **je me laverai**, etc.

377. Some verbs which are not reflexive in English are reflexive in French: **se dépêcher**,* *to hurry;* **se lever***, *to get up;* **se promener***, *to take a walk*, etc.

378. As in English so in French some verbs may be reflexive or non-reflexive:

tromper, *to deceive*, but **se tromper***, *to be mistaken*
habiller, *to dress* (*somebody else*), but **s'habiller***, *to dress* (*oneself*)

379. **Conduire** [kɔ̃dyiːr], *to conduct;* ***conduisant*** [kɔ̃dyizɑ̃], ***conduit*** [kɔ̃dyi].

Present indicative:	**je conduis** [kɔ̃dyi]	**nous conduisons** [kɔ̃dyizɔ̃]
	(**tu conduis** [kɔ̃dyi])	**vous conduisez** [kɔ̃dyːze]
	il conduit [kɔ̃dyi]	**ils conduisent** [kɔ̃dyiːz]

380. **Croire** [krwaːr], *to believe;* ***croyant*** [krwajɑ̃], ***cru*** [kry].

Present indicative:	**je crois** [krwa]	**nous croyons** [krwajɔ̃]
	(**tu crois** [krwa])	**vous croyez** [krwaje]
	il croit [krwa]	**ils croient** [krwa]

(All forms of these verbs, except the present participle and the past participle, follow the rules.)

381. VOCABULARY

la blanchisseuse [blɑ̃ʃisøːz], laundress
le bras [bra], arm
la chaussette [ʃɔsɛt], sock
la chemise [ʃəmiːz], shirt
comment [kɔmɑ̃], how?[1]
se dépêcher* [sə depɛʃe], hurry
fatiguer [fatige], to tire
habiller [abije], to dress

[1] Cf. **comme**, *how . . . !*
Comment savez-vous cela? How do you know that?
Comme elle est belle! How beautiful she is!

lever[1] [ləve], to raise
se lever,* to get up, rise
le linge [lɛ̃:ʒ], linen
se marier* [sə marje], to get married
se promener*[1] [sə prɔmne], to take a walk
propre [prɔpr], clean, neat
raccommoder [rakɔmɔde], to mend
se reposer* [sə rəpoze], to rest
sale [sal], dirty
le savon [savɔ̃], soap
la serviette [sɛrvjɛt], towel
sous [su], under
tromper [trɔ̃pe], to deceive
se tromper*, to be mistaken

382. DRILL

1. I tire you; I tire myself — Je vous fatigue; je me fatigue
2. She deceives him; she deceives herself — Elle le trompe; elle se trompe
3. We hurry; we rested — Nous nous dépêchons; nous nous sommes reposés
4. They hurried; they are not resting — Ils se sont dépêchés; ils ne se reposent pas
5. Hurry up! let's get married! — Dépêchez-vous! marions-nous!
6. Don't tire yourself! you tired yourself — Ne vous fatiguez pas! vous vous êtes fatigué
7. Get up! let's dress ourselves! — Levez-vous! habillons-nous!
8. He dressed himself; he takes a walk — Il s'est habillé; il se promène
9. She took a walk; I am mistaken — Elle s'est promenée; je me trompe
10. I was mistaken; I led her — Je me trompais; je l'ai conduite
11. He was hurrying; let's hurry! — Il se dépêchait; dépêchons-nous!
12. I have believed it; don't believe it! — Je l'ai cru; ne le croyez pas!
13. Believe me! we were not conducting her — Croyez-moi! nous ne la conduisions pas
14. How was he conducting himself? — Comment se conduisait-il?
15. Have the ladies not lost themselves? — Est-ce que les dames ne se sont pas perdues?
16. How has she conducted herself? — Comment s'est-elle conduite?

[1] Like **acheter**, § 160.

17. Have you not believed her? **Est-ce que vous ne l'avez pas crue?**
18. We conduct ourselves well **Nous nous conduisons bien**
19. Conduct yourselves well! **Conduisez-vous bien!**
20. You never used to believe that **Vous ne croyiez jamais cela**

383. Reading. Je me suis levée à neuf heures ce matin — non, je me trompe — à neuf heures et demie. Je me lève de meilleure heure que cela les autres jours, mais je me suis beaucoup fatiguée hier soir en me promenant au parc. Je me suis donc reposée ce matin. Ma sœur m'a conduite à travers tout ce grand parc! Nous nous sommes promenées pendant trois grandes heures! Comme nous nous sommes fatiguées! Mais comme nous nous sommes amusées aussi! Quand j'étais à l'école il y a vingt ans, je me promenais beaucoup avec ma sœur. Nous nous promenions ensemble tous les jours pendant des heures. Elle choisissait toujours le chemin. Elle me conduisait à travers les champs, à droite, à gauche, ne prenant jamais une seule minute pour se reposer. Non, elle ne se reposait jamais, cette fille! Elle prenait le premier chemin venu; elle se trompait; elle s'y perdait; elle revenait; elle en prenait un autre. Elle ne se fatiguait jamais! Quand je disais: Reposons-nous un peu! elle répondait: Non, dépêchons-nous! On aurait cru qu'elle me conduisait à travers la France et qu'elle se dépêchait pour arriver avant le soir! Vous croyiez hier que ma sœur me conduirait chez vous? Non — mais où m'a-t-elle donc conduite, croyez-vous? Chez la blanchisseuse! Pendant tout le temps que nous nous promenions, elle avait un petit paquet sous le bras. L'auriez-vous cru? C'était du linge sale: des chemises, des faux-cols, des chaussettes, des mouchoirs de son mari! Vous savez, n'est-ce pas, que ma sœur s'est mariée au mois d'août? Elle m'a donc conduite jusqu'à la porte de la blanchisseuse. Elle a frappé et une vieille femme, assise près de la fenêtre, s'est levée et s'est montrée à la porte. Elle nous a conduites à travers toute la

maison. Enfin nous nous sommes trouvées dans la cuisine. Ma sœur a dit à la blanchisseuse: «Pouvez-vous laver mon linge pour demain?» La vieille femme s'est dépêchée de répondre qu'elle ne travaillait jamais les jours de fête et qu'elle se reposerait jusqu'à mercredi. «Mais non!» a dit

Une vieille femme s'est montrée à la porte

ma sœur. «Vous vous êtes reposée dimanche; vous vous reposerez encore jeudi, si vous voulez, mais vous laverez mon linge mardi — et bien proprement! Voici du savon! Et n'oubliez pas de raccommoder les chaussettes, si elles en ont besoin. Maintenant, dépêchons-nous!»

384. Résumé. Se lever; se fatiguer, se reposer; sœur; parc; à l'école; se promener; choisir le chemin; le perdre; se reposer ou se dépêcher; à travers la France; chez qui; chez la blanchisseuse; paquet; linge du mari; frapper; ouvrir, conduire; cuisine; laver; fête; dimanche, jeudi; raccommoder.

385. Oral Drill. 1. We tire them. 2. You deceive us. 3. He deceives himself. 4. Let's hurry up! 5. Do not get married! 6. Rest! 7. We never rest. 8. You are mistaken.

9. Are they not taking a walk? 10. Get up and dress yourself! 11. We have dressed ourselves already. 12. He was dressing himself. 13. She has dressed herself. 14. She has dressed the little girl. 15. You have deceived yourself. 16. You have not deceived me. 17. Let us not make a mistake! 18. She was taking a walk. 19. They were hurrying. 20. Where did you lead her? 21. Are you conducting yourself well? 22. Are you fatigued? 23. Have you fatigued yourself? 24. Do not believe him! 25. I never have believed her. 26. I believe she conducts herself well. 27. He used to believe that we were conducting ourselves well. 28. Where were they conducting her? 29. We have brought some soap. 30. The laundress has washed the shirts and the towels. 31. Where are the socks? has she not mended them? 32. She was carrying a package of dirty towels under her (le) arm. 33. If I am not mistaken, this is clean linen.

II

386. DIALOGUE

1. Good-day, Henry! Tell me, what are you doing?
2. Nothing — I am resting
3. You're resting? How have you tired yourself then, you who never tire yourself?
4. I walked a long time with my friend John. That's what has tired me. He came to my house this morning at five o'clock to take a walk with me!
5. How! he gets up so early?
6. Yes, we get up, he and I, between five and six o'clock.

Bonjour, Henri! Dites-moi, qu'est-ce que vous faites?

Rien — je me repose

Vous vous reposez? Comment vous êtes-vous donc fatigué, vous qui ne vous fatiguez jamais?

Je me suis promené très longtemps avec mon ami Jean. C'est ce qui m'a fatigué. Il est venu chez moi ce matin à cinq heures, pour se promener avec moi!

Comment! il se lève de si bonne heure?

Oui, nous nous levons, lui et moi, entre cinq et six heures. J'ai

I believed it was the laundress with my clean linen who was knocking at my door, believing that I had not yet got up	cru que c'était la blanchisseuse avec mon linge propre qui frappait à ma porte, croyant que je ne m'étais pas encore levé
7. You were mistaken!	Vous vous êtes trompé!
8. I was mistaken. It was John	Je me suis trompé. C'était Jean
9. And you took a walk with him?	Et vous vous êtes promené avec lui?
10. Yes — he knocked a second time saying: Get up! Hurry!	Oui — il a frappé une deuxième fois en disant: Levez-vous! Dépêchez-vous!
11. Had you not got up already?	Est-ce que vous ne vous étiez pas levé déjà?
12. No, I had not yet got up, but I got up immediately. After having washed and dressed myself, I made a package of dirty linen to carry to the laundress: shirts, towels, handkerchiefs, socks. She not only washes them well, but she mends them also	Non, je ne m'étais pas encore levé, mais je me suis levé tout de suite. Après m'être lavé et habillé, j'ai fait un paquet de linge sale pour le porter chez la blanchisseuse: des chemises, des serviettes, des mouchoirs, des chaussettes. Non seulement elle les lave bien, mais elle les raccommode aussi
13. Where did you walk? Where did John lead you?	Où est-ce que vous vous êtes promenés? Où Jean vous a-t-il conduit?
14. Into the park. And, believe me, we got tired. John kept leading me into all the corners!	Dans le parc. Et, croyez-moi, nous nous sommes fatigués. Jean me conduisait dans tous les coins!

387. Conversation. 1. Tell me, my friends, at what time did you get up to-day? 2. Did you tire yourself, taking a walk across the fields? 3. Did you rest after walking? 4. With whom did you use to walk every day when you lived in the city? 5. When you used to say: Hurry up! how

did your sister answer you? 6. What did she have under her arm while she was leading you through the city? 7. Who brought the soap and towels to the laundress's house? 8. During how many days did you rest after working (=after having worked)? 9. The laundress said she had not rested a minute since Sunday; do you believe it? 10. Why do you not hurry when you wash yourself?

388. Theme. I (*f.*) took a walk yesterday with John — no, I am mistaken, it was Peter who took a walk with me. We got up early, we dressed and we departed. I said to Peter: "Lead me; I should lose myself in this big city, if I led you." He led me then through the streets, to the left, to the right, without end. He kept hurrying, he never rested. You believe that he rested sometimes, don't you? You are mistaken. How he hurried! and how we tired ourselves! You would never have believed it. How I tired myself! I have rested from this morning till this evening, and I am still tired now. Would you have believed it? Peter led me to the door of a little house. He knocked and a young woman showed herself. She was mending some linen — some towels, I believe. You will not believe me — but she is Peter's wife! They got married this summer! I got married a month ago, but all my friends knew it. Peter has said nothing of it to his friends. That's very funny, isn't it? She is very beautiful, and a very good girl, I believe. She conducted herself very well with me, she took a walk in the garden with me, and she said to me that she believed herself the friend of all Peter's friends. We walked twenty minutes together — and then she and Peter walked an hour while I amused myself in the house.

389. Exercises. *A.* Drill on the past indefinite of **se dépêcher, se lever, se promener**: § 480, *A*.

B. Drill on **se laver, se fatiguer, se marier**: § 480, *D*.

C. Drill on **conduire, croire**: § 480, *D*.

38. TRENTE-HUITIÈME LEÇON [trɑ̃ɪt yitjɛm]

LA TOILETTE

I

390. Elle s'est lavé les mains,[1] *She washed her hands*
Elle s'est cassé le bras,[1] *She broke her arm*
Cf. **Elle s'est lavée,** *She washed herself*

In the sentence **Elle s'est lavée,** *She washed herself,* **s'** (**se**) is the direct object; since it *precedes* the participle, the participle agrees with it (see § 376, Note 1). In the sentences **Elle s'est lavé les mains, Elle s'est cassé le bras, s'** (**se**) is the indirect object (*She washed the hands to herself; She broke the arm to herself);* the direct objects are **mains, bras,** and since they *follow* the participles, the participles do not agree with them, but are invariable.

391. Sentir [sɑ̃tiːr], *to feel;* ***sentant*** [sɑ̃tɑ̃], **senti** [sɑ̃ti].

Present indicative:	**je sens** [sɑ̃]	**nous sentons** [sɑ̃tɔ̃]
	(**tu sens** [sɑ̃])	**vous sentez** [sɑ̃te]
	il sent [sɑ̃]	**ils sentent** [sɑ̃ːt]

(The remaining forms follow the rules.)

392. Conjugate like **sentir: dormir,** *to sleep* (***je dors,*** etc.)
partir*, *to depart, go away* (***je pars,*** etc.)
sortir*, *to go out* (***je sors,*** etc.)

393. VOCABULARY

s'arrêter* [sarɛte], to stop
le bain [bɛ̃], bath
blesser [blɛse], to wound, hurt
les cheveux [ʃəvø] (*m.*) hair
se coucher* [sə kuʃe], to go to bed

[1] The definite article (*the*) is ordinarily used, instead of a possessive adjective (*my, his, her,* etc.), with parts of the body.

la dent [dɑ̃], tooth
se déshabiller* [se dezabije], to undress
la figure [figy:r], face
la glace [glas], mirror
le journal [ʒurnal] (*pl.* **journaux** [ʒurno]), newspaper
parfait [parfɛ], perfect
peigner [pɛgne], to comb
quelqu'un [kɛlkœ̃], some one
se rappeler*[1] [sə raple], to member
la salle de bains [sal də bɛ̃], bathroom

394. DRILL

1. He gets up; we go to bed	Il se lève; nous nous couchons
2. She got up; they went to bed	Elle s'est levée; ils se sont couchés
3. Let's go to bed! get up!	Couchons-nous! levez-vous!
4. Don't get up! let's not get up!	Ne vous levez pas! ne nous levons pas!
5. Stop! let us stop!	Arrêtez-vous! arrêtons-nous!
6. We stop; he was stopping	Nous nous arrêtons; il s'arrêtait
7. We dress ourselves; he undresses himself	Nous nous habillons; il se déshabille
8. Wash your face! let's brush our hair!	Lavez-vous la figure! brossons-nous les cheveux!
9. He wounds himself; she seated herself	Il se blesse; elle s'est assise
10. She has combed herself; she brushed her hair	Elle s'est peignée; elle s'est brossé les cheveux
11. Do you remember? I don't depart	Vous rappelez-vous? je ne pars pas
12. Brush my hair; brush your teeth	Brossez-moi les cheveux; brossez-vous les dents
13. She broke her arm; she stopped	Elle s'est cassé le bras; elle s'est arrêtée
14. I say to myself; she said to herself	Je me dis; elle s'est dit
15. She was going out; we were sleeping	Elle sortait; nous dormions
16. She washed her face; she departs	Elle s'est lavé la figure; elle part

[1] Like **appeler**, § 149.

17. She remembered; I used to remember — **Elle s'est rappelée; je me rappelais**
18. She wounded her hand; I don't sleep — **Elle s'est blessé la main; je ne dors pas**
19. I feel it; he used to feel it — **Je le sens; il le sentait**
20. Is she sleeping? we are going out — **Est-ce qu'elle dort? nous sortons**

395. Reading. Je me sens très mal aujourd'hui, je ne sais pas pourquoi. Je me sentais parfaitement bien en me couchant hier soir. Je m'étais dit, en me déshabillant, qu'après avoir dormi neuf heures je me lèverais ce matin avant ma sœur, mais c'est elle pourtant qui s'est levée la première. Elle était toute joyeuse en se levant. Elle dort si bien qu'elle se lève toujours en chantant comme un oiseau. Elle se lave, elle s'habille, elle se brosse, elle sort de sa chambre, elle vient voir à ma porte si je dors encore, et tout le temps elle chante! Elle est entrée dans ma chambre ce matin, elle s'est assise à côté de mon lit, et elle m'a demandé comment je me sentais. J'ai répondu: «Je me sens très mal. J'ai mal dormi.» Elle m'a répondu: «Ne sortons donc pas aujourd'hui comme nous allions le faire! Lisons ensemble ce journal qu'on m'a apporté il y a presque une demi-heure. Ou, si vous aimez mieux, rappelons-nous le bon temps que nous avons passé ensemble à l'école. Est-ce que vous vous rappelez l'école?» «Je me suis rappelé cette école bien-aimée pas plus tard qu'hier en parlant avec ma mère, cette école où nous nous sommes si bien amusées et si mal conduites.» Nous nous sommes rappelé tout ce que nous y faisions et tout ce que nous y disions. Ma sœur se rappelait avec le plus de plaisir le jour où nous sommes sorties de là pour la dernière fois. «Ce jour-là,» disait-elle, «je m'étais levée de bonne heure, je m'étais lavé la figure et la main droite, mais pas la main gauche — je m'étais blessé cette main en jouant — je m'étais habillée, je m'étais brossé les dents, et je sortais de ma chambre, un petit livre à la

main, que je m'étais acheté en partant de chez nous. Arrivée à la porte, je me suis arrêtée. Je ne me rappelais plus si je m'étais peignée après m'être brossé les cheveux. Je me suis donc regardée dans la glace. Je me rappelle que je me suis trouvé la figure assez jolie ce matin-là, et je me suis dit, non sans un certain plaisir: «Mademoiselle, vous vous êtes si bien brossé les cheveux, et vous vous êtes si bien lavé la figure, et vous vous êtes si bien habillée que je vous trouve la plus belle fille du monde! Vous vous marierez bientôt, je crois!» «Pas aujourd'hui, au moins!» a dit quelqu'un derrière moi! C'était la maîtresse! Elle était entrée sans frapper, elle s'était assise derrière moi, et elle avait entendu toutes les jolies choses que j'avais dites! Comme je me suis sentie bête ce matin-là!»

396. Résumé. Se sentir mal ou bien; dormir, se lever; sœur, chanter; sortir, lire; se rappeler l'école; s'amuser, se conduire; dernier jour; se laver; main blessée; se brosser, dents, cheveux, se peigner; glace, jolie fille, se marier; maîtresse assise.

397. Oral Drill. 1. He is sleeping; he gets up. 2. Let us stop!; stop! 3. They are sleeping; we go to bed. 4. Comb yourself!; undress! 5. I was sleeping; she goes out. 6. We do not remember that. 7. They were departing. 8. Some one will remember that. 9. He washes himself. 10. She has seated herself. 11. She has washed her hands. 12. He has said to himself. 13. She got up. 14. She seated herself. 15. She brushed her hair. 16. Is he sleeping? 17. He was not sleeping. 18. I have not slept. 19. Let us go out! 20. She broke her arm. 21. She brushed her teeth. 22. I sleep when he goes out. 23. They were departing. 24. She has bought herself a book. 25. The girls have remembered that. 26. The women have conducted themselves badly. 27. Conduct yourselves well! 28. She stopped while I was

going out. 29. Go to bed and sleep! 30. Let's go to bed! 31. She got up. 32. She has broken her arm. 33. They were saying to themselves. 34. We feel nothing. 35. Nobody feels it. 36. She has bought herself a newspaper.

II

398. DIALOGUE

1. Good-day, Mary! At what hour did you get up?	**Bonjour, Marie! À quelle heure vous êtes-vous levée?**
2. I got up at five o'clock	**Je me suis levée à cinq heures**
3. They rise early at your house!	**On se lève de bonne heure chez vous!**
4. We always get up before six o'clock	**Nous nous levons toujours avant six heures**
5. And at what time do you go to bed?	**Et à quelle heure est-ce que vous vous couchez?**
6. We went to bed yesterday evening at ten o'clock	**Nous nous sommes couchés hier soir à dix heures**
7. What have you done since you got up?	**Qu'est-ce que vous avez fait depuis que vous vous êtes levée?**
8. I took a bath in the bathroom; I washed my face; I dressed; I combed myself, and I brushed my teeth	**J'ai pris un bain dans la salle de bains; je me suis lavé la figure; je me suis habillée; je me suis peignée, et je me suis brossé les dents**
9. You brushed yourself, — I believe it — but have you really washed your face? I should never have believed it. Have you not looked at your face in the mirror?	**Vous vous êtes brossée — je le crois — mais est-ce que vous vous êtes vraiment lavé la figure? Je ne l'aurais jamais cru. Est-ce que vous ne vous êtes pas regardé la figure dans la glace?**
10. I have not looked at my face — no — I have not looked at myself in the mirror	**Je ne me suis pas regardé la figure — non — je ne me suis pas regardée dans la glace**
11. You have your face all red!	**Vous avez la figure toute rouge!**

12. Ah, I know! I fell in coming out of my room
13. You hurt yourself?
14. I hurt my foot and I almost believed that I had broken my arm
15. How did you hurt yourself?
16. I did not remember that there was a staircase in front of my door. I fell and I only stopped downstairs. That is how I hurt my foot

Ah, je sais! Je suis tombée en sortant de ma chambre
Vous vous êtes fait mal?
Je me suis blessé le pied et je croyais presque que je m'étais cassé le bras
Comment vous êtes-vous blessée?
Je ne me suis pas rappelé qu'il y avait un escalier devant ma porte. Je suis tombée et je ne me suis arrêtée qu'en bas. Voilà comment je me suis blessé le pied

399. Conversation. 1. How do you feel now, and how did you feel when you went to bed? 2. What had the lady said to herself in going to bed? 3. When do you go to bed and when do you get up? 4. What did the sister do when she got up? 5. If you remember how you used to pass the time at school, tell it to my sister. 6. Do the girls remember what they used to say and do? 7. Has Mary washed her hands, and has her sister washed herself? 8. Have the little girls brushed their teeth? 9. When did she buy herself the newspapers? 10. Have you heard the things which we have said, or were you sleeping?

400. Theme. As Mary was not feeling very well, she said to herself: "I will go to bed at half past eight this evening, and if I sleep well I shall get up early to-morrow and take a walk in the park." She had washed her hands, she had brushed her teeth and she had gone to bed, when she remembered that she had not read the newspaper. She got up, she dressed herself and she brushed her hair. She looked at herself in the glass and said to herself: "I have not dressed myself very well, and I have not brushed my hair very well, but I am going out only to buy myself a

newspaper. I shall come back immediately." She departs and goes to the store. As she was going out of the store where she had bought herself the newspaper, she fell on the sidewalk. She wounded her head and she nearly broke her left arm. Poor Mary! She called a cabby, the carriage stopped in front of the store, she got in and seated herself. On arriving home, she washed her face and looked at herself in the glass. She was no longer very pretty! She brushed herself, she washed her hands and she went to bed.

401. Exercises. *A*. Drill on **se coucher, s'arrêter:** § 480, *D*.

B. Drill (on blackboard) on the past indefinite of **se laver, se laver les mains:** § 480, *A*.

C. Drill on **sentir, dormir, partir:** § 480, *D*.

39. TRENTE–NEUVIÈME LEÇON [trɑ̃:t nœvjɛm]

LA CASERNE

I

402. Order of Personal Pronouns:

me, te, se, nous, vous	precede	le, la, les	precede	lui, leur	precede **y**	precede(s) **en**

Il me le dit, He says it to me
Il le lui dit, He says it to him
Il se le dit, He says it to himself
Il nous les a donnés, He gave them to us
Il les leur a donnés, He gave them to them
Il m'en a donné, He gave me some
Il ne leur en donne pas, He does not give them any
Il n'y en a pas, There are none

EXCEPTION: After a positive imperative, the direct object pronoun always comes first—and **en** and **y** always come last.

403. Voir [vwaːr], *to see;* ***voyant*** [vwajɑ̃], ***vu*** [vy].

Present indicative: ***je vois*** [vwa] — **nous voyons** [vwajõ]
(**tu vois** [vwa]) — **vous voyez** [vwaje]
il voit [vwa] — **ils voient** [vwa]
Future: ***je verrai*** [vɛre], etc.

(The remaining forms follow the rules.)

404. Vouloir [vulwaːr], *to wish;* ***voulant*** [vulɑ̃], ***voulu*** [vuly].

Present indicative: ***je veux*** [vø] — **nous voulons** [vulõ]
(**tu veux** [vø]) — **vous voulez** [vule]
il veut [vø] — **ils veulent** [vœl]
Future: ***je voudrai*** [vudre], etc.

(The remaining forms follow the rules.)

405. VOCABULARY

l'arme [larm] (*f.*), arm, weapon
l'armée [larme] (*f.*), army
la bataille [bataːj], battle
se battre* [sə batr], to fight
le capitaine [kapitɛn], captain
la caserne [kazɛrn], barracks
le drapeau [drapo] (*pl.* **drapeaux**), flag
l'épée [lepe] (*f.*), sword
le fusil [fyzi], gun
gagner [gaɲe], to win
le général [ʒeneral] (*pl.* **généraux**), general
la guerre [gɛːr], war
le lieutenant [ljœtnɑ̃], lieutenant
la mort [mɔːr], death
la paix [pɛ], peace
rendre [rɑ̃ːdr], to give back
le soldat [sɔlda], soldier
tuer [tye], to kill
il vaut mieux [vo mjø], it is better
vouloir dire [vulwaːr diːr], to mean

406. DRILL

1. He will wish; she was wishing — **Il voudra; elle voulait**
2. She sees; they were seeing — **Elle voit; ils voyaient**
3. We have wished; we shall see — **Nous avons voulu; nous verrons**

4. Show me them! they wish	**Montrez-les-moi! ils veulent**
5. I give him them; do you wish?	**Je les lui donne; voulez-vous?**
6. They say it to him; do you see?	**Ils le lui disent; voyez-vous?**
7. I say it to them; let us see!	**Je le leur dis; voyons!**
8. He will give it back to us; I shall see him	**Il nous le rendra; je le verrai**
9. Say it to him! he has wished	**Dites-le-lui! il a voulu**
10. He gave me them; she used to wish	**Il me les a donnés; elle voulait**
11. There are some; they would wish	**Il y en a; ils voudraient**
12. What did that mean?	**Qu'est-ce que cela voulait dire?**
13. She speaks to him of it	**Elle lui en parle**
14. Let us give it back to her!	**Rendons-le-lui!**
15. We do not wish to give him them	**Nous ne voulons pas les lui donner**
16. What does he mean?	**Qu'est-ce qu'il veut dire?**
17. Do not give them back to them!	**Ne les leur rendez pas!**
18. We used to say it to her	**Nous le lui disions**
19. This means nothing	**Cela ne veut rien dire**
20. She has not wished to say it to him	**Elle n'a pas voulu le lui dire**

407. Reading. Mon frère est soldat. Il demeure à la caserne, où vous voyez ce drapeau. Moi, je voudrais être soldat aussi. Je le lui dis toujours quand je le vois et il me répond toujours: «Nous verrons.» Il n'a jamais voulu apprendre un métier. Je me rappelle bien qu'il n'avait que huit ans quand il disait déjà qu'il voulait être capitaine. Moi — je n'avais que quatre ans — je voulais être général, au moins. Mon frère avait un fusil. C'est mon oncle qui le lui avait donné. Moi, j'avais une épée. C'est ma tante qui me l'avait donnée. Mais avec son fusil, mon frère ne pouvait tuer personne. Voilà pourquoi on le lui avait

donné! Et moi, je n'aurais pu blesser personne avec mon épée. Voilà pourquoi on me l'avait donnée! On nous les a donnés, ce fusil et cette épée, à Noël, pendant une visite que nous faisions chez notre oncle. Quand nous sommes revenus chez nous, le fusil au bras, l'épée à la main, ma mère en nous voyant, a demandé tout de suite: «Qu'est-ce que cela

Mon frère est soldat

veut dire? Qui donc vous a donné ces choses-là?» Nous lui avons répondu que notre oncle et notre tante nous les avaient données, et que cela voulait dire que nous allions être soldats. «Mais ils vont se battre, ils vont se tuer avec ces armes-là!» a dit ma mère. «Je ne comprends pas mon frère qui les leur a données! Je le lui dirai quand je le verrai! Je le trouve joliment (=*very*) bête!» «Attendez!» a dit mon père. «Voyons ce fusil! Montrez-le-moi!» «Le voilà!»

a répondu mon frère en le lui donnant. Mon père l'a regardé un peu, puis il le lui a rendu en disant: «Avec cette arme-là vous ne pourrez tuer personne. C'est un vieux fusil cassé qui ne vaut plus rien. Votre oncle vous l'a donné parce qu'il n'en voulait plus. Maintenant nous verrons si l'épée vaut mieux que le fusil. Voyons-la! Donnez-la-moi! — La voici! — C'est tout? — Comment tout? — Mais ce n'est que la moitié d'une épée! Il y a longtemps qu'elle est cassée, cette épée-là! Ne voyez-vous pas? Je vous la rendrai avec plaisir. Avec ces armes-là vous ne donnerez la mort à personne, mes enfants!»

Pourtant, pendant des mois on nous voyait faire la guerre dans la cour derrière la maison. Les autres garçons n'étaient que soldats; mon frère et moi, nous étions lieutenants, capitaines, généraux. Nous commandions toujours l'armée. Nous avions bâti une caserne dans la cour, nous nous battions tous les jours sous le drapeau rouge, blanc et bleu, nous gagnions cinquante batailles, et puis, la guerre bien finie, nous faisions la paix. Et maintenant, comme vous voyez, mon frère est vraiment soldat.

408. Résumé. Être soldat, métier; huit ans, quatre ans; fusil, épée; tuer, blesser; Noël; mère; qui a donné; se tuer; bête; montrer; vieux fusil; épée cassée; cour, caserne; armée; drapeau; la paix.

409. Oral Drill. 1. They see. 2. They wish. 3. We wish. 4. Don't you see? 5. He wished. 6. What do you wish? 7. I wish to give him them. 8. We see them. 9. They have not wished it. 10. Let us see! 11. He says it to us. 12. We do not see him. 13. We wish it. 14. Say it to me! 15. Will you see any? 16. Is there any? 17. Do you wish it? 18. What do they see? 19. Has he given them to her? 20. What does that mean? 21. Give me a flag! 22. Do not give me it! 23. Give me it! 24. Say it to her! 25. Do they wish to say it to them? 26. I wished

to know what he meant. 27. Will you see the captain? 28. I wished to see the lieutenant. 29. Do the generals wish to be with the army? 30. The soldier would wish it. 31. Do you see the swords? 32. I wished to give them to him. 33. Have you wished to see the guns? 34. Will you see the soldiers coming from the barracks? 35. When the war will be finished, the generals will wish to make (the) peace. 36. If he fought, they would wish to kill him. 37. He is not afraid of death. 38. What does this word mean?

II

410. DIALOGUE

1. Do you sometimes see my brothers?
Est-ce que vous voyez quelquefois mes frères?
2. I see them quite often pass in (a) taxicab before my window
Je les vois assez souvent passer en taxi devant ma fenêtre
3. Have you never gone to see them? You asked me for their address, and I gave it to you. You remember it, don't you?
Est-ce que vous n'êtes jamais allé les voir? Vous m'avez demandé leur adresse, et je vous l'ai donnée. Vous vous le rappelez, n'est-ce pas?
4. I remember it perfectly, but your brothers are never at home. What are they doing in town?
Je me le rappelle parfaitement, mais vos frères ne sont jamais chez eux. Qu'est-ce qu'ils font en ville?
5. They are carrying on their studies. The one wishes to be a doctor, the other would like to be a lawyer. Only, as he has never wanted to work hitherto, I do not see how he will begin to work now. He would like to be a lawyer, but he doesn't wish to work
Ils font leurs études. L'un veut être médecin, l'autre voudrait être avocat. Seulement, comme il n'a jamais voulu travailler jusqu'ici, je ne vois pas comment il se mettra à travailler maintenant. Il voudrait être avocat, mais il ne veut pas travailler

6. We shall see! The boys who do not wish to work can arrive at nothing in this world	Nous verrons! Les garçons qui ne veulent pas travailler ne peuvent arriver à rien dans ce monde
7. Yes, there is only work! I have said so to them a hundred times, but my brothers don't want to listen to me	Oui, il n'y a que le travail! Je le leur ai dit cent fois, mais mes frères ne veulent pas m'écouter
8. And you, what would you wish to be?	Et vous, qu'est-ce que vous voudriez être?
9. I should wish to be a soldier	Je voudrais être soldat
10. I also should have wished it, but my parents did not wish it	Moi aussi, je l'aurais voulu, mais mes parents ne le voulaient pas
11. I have always wished it. When I saw the soldiers come out of the barracks, with their guns on their arms, the general on his fine horse, the captains and lieutenants, sword in hand, when I heard the music and saw the flags, I always wanted to be a captain	Moi je l'ai toujours voulu. Quand je voyais les soldats sortir de la caserne, le fusil au bras, le général sur son beau cheval, les capitaines et les lieutenants, l'épée à la main, quand j'écoutais la musique et voyais les drapeaux, je voulais toujours être capitaine, moi
12. Yes, that would be fine! To fight, to make war, to win battles, and then, peace (being) made, to come back to live here in the country! That is what I should wish!	Oui, ce serait beau! Se battre, faire la guerre, gagner des batailles, et puis, la paix faite, revenir demeurer ici à la campagne! Voilà ce que je voudrais!

411. Conversation. 1. Where do the soldiers live? 2. Who gave the sword and the gun to the two brothers? 3. Could one hurt anybody or kill anybody with these weapons? 4. Where were the boys when they gave these

weapons to them? 5. Did the brothers give their sword and their gun to their father? 6. Did he give them back to them? 7. What did he say, in giving them back to them? 8. Where did one see the boys every day? 9. Where did they fight? 10. Did they win battles and did they make peace?

412. Theme. Do you see those boys who carry red, white and blue flags in the garden in front of the house? You do not know what they are doing? I will tell it to you. The two boys that one sees at the left are generals, the boys behind them at the right wish also to be generals, or captains or lieutenants, but to-day they are only soldiers. When one of the generals sees a soldier with sword in hand he says: "Give it to me!" and the soldier gives it to him. When they see one of the soldiers with his gun on his arm, they ask him for it and the soldier gives it to them. The general says: "I will give them back to you when the battle shall begin." If their weapons are old or broken, the general says to the captain: "What does that mean? This soldier has a broken sword; give it back to him! Those soldiers have old guns; give them back to them! These soldiers need good guns and good swords. Do you wish to fight with those weapons? Do you not wish to win the battle? You will be able to kill nobody with those weapons. There are some in the barracks which are not so old and broken. Go to the captains at the barracks and ask them for them. Say: 'You have good guns; give them to us. You have good swords; give some to us.' If they do not wish to give you them, tell them that if they do not give you them immediately the generals will come and they will no longer be captains in our army! Now, march!"

413. Exercises. *A*. Fill the following blanks each with all the possible conjunctive pronouns:

Il — le donne. Il — en donne.
Il nous — donne. Il la — donne.
Il — lui donne. Il — leur donne.
Il me — donne. Il vous — donne.

B. Replace the above verbs, *where possible,* first by **a donné**, secondly by **a donnés.**

C. Fill the following blanks each with two pronouns:

Il — donne. Il — a donnés.
Il — a donné. Il ne — a pas donné.
Il ne — a pas donnés.

D. Drill on present indicative of **voir, vouloir:** § 480, *A.*

E. Drill on **voir, vouloir:** § 480, *D.*

40. QUARANTIÈME LEÇON [karãtjɛm]

Review

I

414. 1. They wish to be loved. 2. He is right. 3. We need that. 4. They used to wish what we wished. 5. You are wrong. 6. We read what you write. 7. He used to read what she wrote. 8. Read more slowly! 9. He has read too fast. 10. What plays have they written? 11. She got up. 12. She went to bed. 13. She washed her hands. 14. We dressed ourselves. 15. She broke her left arm. 16. I am not mistaken. 17. He deceived her. 18. Hurry! 19. He led her. 20. She fought with him. 21. I remember it. 22. She remembered them. 23. Believe me! 24. I have never believed it. 25. She conducted herself. 26. We used to believe that. 27. He feels it. 28. We feel nothing. 29. She sleeps. 30. We were going out. 31. They do not sleep. 32. Let us not go out. 33. Are you departing?

34. She combed herself. 35. We stopped. 36. She bought herself a newspaper. 37. She brushed her hair. 38. She wounded her hand. 39. He remembered her. 40. Stop! 41. Let us take a walk! 42. He gives me it. 43. We give it back to him. 44. Tell me it! 45. They wish to give me them. 46. Give them back to her! 47. They sold them to us. 48. We would have sold them to them. 49. Brush your teeth! 50. Have you looked at yourselves in the glass? 51. The generals have no horses. 52. They have given them to them. 53. There are none of them. 54. Let us fight! 55. We have fought. 56. We wish to win the battle. 57. What do you see? 58. I see nothing. 59. We shall see. 60. He will wish to make (the) war. 61. We have wished to make peace.

II

415. 1. Which newspapers have you read? 2. How many letters has the captain written? 3. Has the lieutenant's wife come? 4. Are the generals right or wrong? 5. Has she washed herself? 6. Had she brushed her teeth? 7. Where are you leading the soldier? 8. How has she conducted herself? 9. We believe what they believe. 10. I believe that you are mistaken. 11. We have believed that she was mistaken. 12. The laundress got up early and washed the dirty linen. 13. The handkerchiefs are not clean. 14. These socks and shirts belong to me. 15. She tired herself. 16. She got married. 17. If she does not hurry, she will never be dressed. 18. She went to bed late and she got up early. 19. How do you wish to go to the theater, in a taxicab or on foot? 20. She has hurt her foot. 21. She has caught a cold. 22. They wish to see that stupid moving-picture show. 23. Get out of the automobile quickly! 24. This play begins badly. 25. Are you hot or cold? 26. Are you reading the play that I have written? 27. I have read it already. 28. Do not hurry; go slowly! 29. Stop in front of the stage! 30. She washed her face. 31. She

brushed her hair. 32. She has not washed herself yet. 33. Are the soldiers wounded? 34. Have they built the barracks? 35. Some one remembered it. 36. Let us see those weapons. 37. These swords are more broken than those old guns. 38. Would you wish to be a captain? 39. Do you see the flags? 40. Give them back to him! 41. They are not afraid of death. 42. When the war is (=will be) finished, we shall have (the) peace. 43. They are fighting, but they do not wish to be killed. 44. We shall not see the laundress. 45. The girl broke her arm and wounded her foot.

41. QUARANTE ET UNIÊME LEÇON [karãːt e ynjɛm]

CHEZ LE MÉDECIN

I

416. Present Subjunctive:

Endings added to the stem of the present participle:

–e (silent)
–es (silent)
–e (silent)
–ions [–jõ]
–iez [–je]
–ent (silent)[1]

I. donn ant	**II. finiss ant**
I may give, etc.	*I may finish*, etc.
je donn **e** [dɔn]	je finiss **e** [finis]
(tu donn **es** [dɔn])	(tu finiss **es** [finis])
il donn **e** [dɔn]	il finiss **e** [finis]
nous donn **ions** [dɔnjõ]	nous finiss **ions** [finisjõ]
vous donn **iez** [dɔnje]	vous finiss **iez** [finisje]
ils donn **ent** [dɔn]	ils finiss **ent** [finis]

[1] Compare these endings with the endings of the present indicative of the first conjugation. Compare the present indicative and the present subjunctive of **donner**.

III. vend ant
I may sell, etc.
je vend **e** [vã:d]
(tu vend **es** [vã:d])
il vend **e** [vã:d]
nous vend **ions** [vãdjõ]
vous vend **iez** [vãdje]
ils vend **ent** [vã:d]

417. Present Subjunctive of Irregular Verbs: In the following verbs the student need learn only one form, the first person singular, if he remembers what was said in § 321: that the first and second plural have the stem of the present participle. Note that, as in the case of the regular verbs, the first, second, third singular, and the third plural are pronounced alike.

avoir, **ayant:**	*j'aie* [ʒɛ]	nous ayons [ɛjõ]
	(tu aies [ɛ])	vous ayez [ɛje]
	il ait [ɛ]	ils aient [ɛ]
aller, **allant:**	*j'aille* [ʒa:j]	nous allions [aljõ]
	(tu ailles [a:j])	vous alliez [alje]
	il aille [a:j]	ils aillent [a:j]
prendre, **prenant:**	*je prenne* [prɛn]	nous prenions [prənjõ]
(apprendre)	(tu prennes [prɛn])	vous preniez [prənje]
(comprendre)	il prenne [prɛn]	ils prennent [prɛn]
venir, **venant:**	*je vienne* [vjɛn]	nous venions [vənjõ]
(tenir)	(tu viennes [vjɛn])	vous veniez [vənje]
	il vienne [vjɛn]	ils viennent [vjɛn]
vouloir, **voulant:**	*je veuille* [vœ:j]	nous voulions [vuljõ]
	(tu veuilles [vœ:j])	vous vouliez [vulje]
	il veuille [vœ:j]	ils veuillent [vœ:j]
voir, **voyant:**	*je voie* [vwa]	nous voyions [vwaijõ]
	(tu voies [vwa])	vous voyiez [vwaije]
	il voie [vwa]	ils voient [vwa]
croire, **croyant:**	*je croie* [krwa]	nous croyions [krwaijõ]
	(tu croies [krwa])	vous croyiez [krwaije]
	il croie [krwa]	ils croient [krwa]

418. Uses of the Subjunctive:

1. In the third person corresponding to English *Let him —!* *Let them —!*

Qu'il finisse! Let him finish!
Qu'ils finissent! Let them finish!

2. After the conjunctions:

afin que [afɛ̃ kə], **pour que** [puːr kə], } *in order that*
quoique [kwak], **bien que** [bjɛ̃ kə], } *although*
avant que [avɑ̃ kə], *before*
à moins que [a mwɛ̃ kə], *unless*

Il nous a dit cela *afin que* (*pour que*) nous le sachions, He has told us that *in order that* we should know it

***Quoique* (*Bien que*) vous sachiez tout, je ne vous aime pas,** *Although* you know everything, I don't like you

Je ferai cela *avant que* vous y alliez, I shall do that *before* you go there

Vous ne pourrez pas vous lever de bonne heure, *à moins que* vous (ne[1]) vous couchiez tout de suite, You will not be able to get up early *unless* you go to bed right away

419. Comment allez-vous? *How are you?*

Je vais bien, I am well
Je vais mieux, I am better
J'ai mal à la tête, I have a head ache
Les dents lui font mal, Il a mal aux dents, } He has a tooth ache = His teeth hurt him

420. VOCABULARY

la bouche [buʃ], mouth
faible [fɛbl], weak
fort [fɔːr], strong
le mal [mal] (*pl.* **maux** [mo]), ache
malade [malad], sick
la maladie [maladi], sickness
le pays [pɛi], country
la santé [sɑ̃te], health
la tête [tɛːt], head

[1] Regularly this redundant **ne** is required after **à moins que** and verbs of fearing (§ 429), but according to a decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction it may be omitted.

421. DRILL

1. Let him sell them! let them finish it!	Qu'il les vende! qu'ils le finissent!
2. Let him have it! let them go there!	Qu'il l'ait! qu'ils y aillent!
3. Let him take it! let them hold!	Qu'il le prenne! qu'ils tiennent!
4. Let him wish it! let them believe it!	Qu'il le veuille! qu'ils le croient!
5. Before you see it; that we may have it	Avant que vous le voyiez; pour que nous l'ayons
6. Although I come; unless she learns	Quoique je vienne; à moins qu'elle (n')apprenne
7. That we may believe it; before I wish	Afin que nous le croyions; avant que je veuille
8. Unless you build; although we go	À moins que vous (ne) bâtissiez; bien que nous allions
9. Let them rest! although he hurries	Qu'ils se reposent! quoiqu'il se dépêche
10. That you may get up; unless you go to bed	Pour que vous vous leviez; à moins que vous (ne) vous couchiez
11. Let them get married! unless we remember	Qu'ils se marient! à moins que nous (ne) nous rappelions
12. Although he deceives; unless I am mistaken	Quoiqu'il trompe; à moins que je (ne) me trompe
13. That we may take a walk; although you see him	Afin que nous nous promenions; bien que vous le voyiez
14. Let them choose it! let him choose them!	Qu'ils le choisissent! qu'il les choisisse!
15. Although you are better; so that you may rest	Quoique vous alliez mieux; pour que vous vous reposiez
16. Unless you take a walk; although you believe it	À moins que vous (ne) vous promeniez; quoique vous le croyiez
17. Let him tire himself! before he undresses	Qu'il se fatigue! avant qu'il se déshabille

18. Unless he has a tooth ache; let them get up!	**À moins qu'il (n')ait mal aux dents; qu'ils se lèvent!**
19. Although we are mistaken; that he may go there	**Bien que nous nous trompions; qu'il y aille**
20. How are they? she has a head ache	**Comment vont-ils? elle a mal à la tête**
21. His teeth hurt him; let him understand!	**Les dents lui font mal; qu'il comprenne!**

422. Reading. Quoique je n'aie pas la santé bien bonne, je n'ai jamais été vraiment malade. J'ai eu mal à la tête de temps en temps, il est vrai, — mais qui est-ce qui n'a jamais eu de ces maux-là? Non, j'ai toutes mes dents, je n'en ai pas perdu une seule. Elles ne me font jamais mal. Le médecin ne le croit pas! Qu'il regarde! Voilà, j'ai ouvert la bouche pour qu'il les voie. Vous voyez que je les ai toutes. Bien que je n'aie que dix-neuf ans, je ne suis pas faible. Oui, je suis très fatigué. C'est parce que je me suis tant dépêché pour arriver ici avant que vous partiez. J'ai été malade pendant l'été, mais je vais mieux maintenant. Je vais parfaitement bien. Je n'ai pas de maladies. Que le médecin cherche! Il n'en trouvera pas. Je me promenais hier à la campagne et j'ai attrapé un rhume, mais cela sera vite parti, à moins qu'on (ne) m'envoie dans un pays où il fera trop froid. Ma mère ne veut pas que j'aille dans un pays où il y aura beaucoup de maladies. Mais quand je serai soldat, j'irai là où on m'enverra, qu'elle le veuille ou non! Je sais qu'on ne dit pas au soldat: «Choisissez!» Le capitaine dit au lieutenant: «Bien que ce soldat ait mal à la tête, qu'il aille où vont les autres! Mal à la tête? Qu'est-ce que cela veut dire? Cela veut dire qu'il a peur! Qu'il vienne me voir ce soir!» Vous croyez, peut-être, que j'aurai peur comme cela. À moins qu'on (ne) me prenne comme soldat, je partirai d'ici et je ne reviendrai plus. Quoique mon pays n'ait peut-être pas besoin de moi, je ne pourrais jamais voir partir l'armée sans partir avec elle. Que ma

Je me battrai

mère le croie ou non! Mon âge? Je vous l'ai déjà dit. J'ai dix-neuf ans. Comment! Je n'ai que quatorze ans? Qui dit cela? Qu'il vienne ici me dire cela! On ne me prendra pas? Je suis trop jeune et je parle trop? Comment! Mon oncle ici! C'est ma mère qui vous a fait venir. Bien qu'on ne veuille pas me prendre parce que je suis trop jeune et parce que je parle trop, je serai soldat et je me battrai, vous allez voir. N'en dites rien à ma mère, je vous prie.

423. Résumé. Santé, malade; mal à la tête; dents; médecin; bouche; dix-neuf ans; fatigué, pourquoi?; maladies, médecin; rhume, pays froid; mère; soldat malade; capitaine; avoir peur; prendre comme soldat; âge; trop jeune; oncle; serai soldat.

424. Oral Drill. 1. Although he rests. 2. Unless your health is weak. 3. In order that I may come. 4. Before we understand this. 5. How is he? 6. He is not well. 7. Let them hurry! 8. Although you close your mouth. 9. Unless he has a head ache. 10. In order that we may take a walk. 11. Before he holds it. 12. His teeth hurt him. 13. Let him go to bed! 14. Are you well? 15. In order that you may see it. 16. Before you are better. 17. Although he believes it. 18. Let them get up! 19. In order that you may rest. 20. Unless he has a sickness. 21. Before they see it. 22. I am better. 23. Let him dress! 24. Although I learn that. 25. In order that she may go. 26. Unless they remember. 27. He has a tooth ache. 28. Let them believe it! 29. How are you? 30. Are you not better? 31. Unless we are mistaken. 32. Before they take them. 33. She is not better to-day. 34. Although he has a cold.

II

425. DIALOGUE

1. Good-day, sir! Although you didn't tell me to come this afternoon, I felt so sick that I couldn't go to bed without seeing you
Bonjour, monsieur! Quoique vous ne m'ayez pas dit de venir cette après-midi, je me sentais si malade que je ne pouvais pas me coucher sans vous voir
2. You remember that I asked you to come to my office every day. Do so unless you wish to catch the same disease as your brother has caught
Vous vous rappelez que je vous ai prié de venir chez moi tous les jours. Faites-le à moins que vous (ne) vouliez attraper la même maladie que votre frère a attrapée
3. Although I am not better to-day, I believe that it is only a cold
Bien que je n'aille pas mieux aujourd'hui, je crois que ce n'est qu'un rhume
4. It's only a cold! You don't know then what that means? That means that you are very sick. Have you a head ache?
Ce n'est qu'un rhume! Vous ne savez donc pas ce que cela veut dire? Cela veut dire que vous allez très mal. Avez-vous mal à la tête?
5. Yes, I tired myself yesterday; I always have a head ache when I am tired
Oui, je me suis fatigué hier; j'ai toujours mal à la tête quand je suis fatigué
6. You are certain that it is not your teeth that are aching? Truly! We know now that nearly all diseases come from the teeth. You don't believe it?
Vous êtes certain que ce ne sont pas les dents qui vous font mal? Vraiment! Nous savons maintenant que presque toutes les maladies viennent des dents. Vous ne le croyez pas?
7. Tell me so that I may understand well: How can you know that my teeth are hurting before you see them?
Dites-moi pour que je comprenne bien: Comment pouvez-vous savoir que les dents me font mal avant que vous les voyiez?

8. Although you don't come often enough to my office, I always know what is hurting you. So don't say: "Let the doctor look at me before he comes and tells me what is hurting me!"	**Bien que vous ne veniez pas assez souvent chez moi, je sais toujours ce qui vous fait mal. Ne dites donc pas: «Que le médecin me regarde avant qu'il vienne me dire ce qui me fait mal!»**
9. You don't need to look? Let the others believe that, if they wish!	**Vous n'avez pas besoin de regarder? Que les autres croient cela, s'ils veulent!**
10. Well! open your mouth so that I may see! There! What was I telling you? You have not a head ache, you have a tooth ache. You will feel perfectly well when you no longer have any teeth	**Eh bien! ouvrez la bouche pour que je voie! Voilà! Qu'est-ce que je vous disais? Vous n'avez pas mal à la tête, vous avez mal aux dents. Vous irez parfaitement bien quand vous n'aurez plus de dents**
11. And yet I have a head ache, and it is not my teeth that ache!	**Et pourtant j'ai mal à la tête, et ce ne sont pas les dents qui me font mal!**

426. Conversation. 1. Will you leave this country unless they take you as a soldier? 2. Will you go before your mother is well? 3. Will he be able to enter the army although he is only sixteen? 4. Does he do that in order that the doctor may not see that he has a head ache? 5. Do you say that in order that your uncle may not come? 6. What does his mother not wish? 7. Will he do it although she does not wish it? 8. Will she send her brother unless her son comes? 9. What did the captain say to the lieutenant? 10. How did the boy catch a cold?

427. Theme. Although I am not very well now, I shall be much better soon. I am always better during the winter. My health is always less good before the snow comes.

Don't live here unless you believe that you will like (the) snow and (the) rain and (the) ice. We have a great deal of it every winter. My husband is going to the city in order that he may finish some work that he has been doing for a long time. His mother asked me if I wished to go with him. I said: "Let him go alone! He will work better without me. I shall go there later unless they (**on**) take him as a soldier!" You see, although I am always very well in the country, the city is always bad for me (hurts me). I never have a head ache here, but I am always sick in the city unless I wish to go to the doctor's every day. Your health is weak also, isn't it? I thought you were sick last winter. You had a tooth ache for (during) a month? You don't call that a sickness? How are you now? The doctors think all (the) sicknesses come from the teeth. Do you believe that? Go to my doctor's in order that he may see what is the matter with you (what is hurting you). He will not let you go before he understands your sickness.

428. Exercises. *A*. Conjugate:

Before I come. Unless I go.

B. Drill on the present subjunctive of **donner**, **finir**, **vendre**, **avoir**, **aller**, **apprendre**, **tenir**, **vouloir**, **voir**, **croire**, using a conjunction, or 'Let him —!' 'Let them —!': § 480, *A*.

C. Students ask and answer questions such as:

How are you? Have you a head ache?

42. QUARANTE-DEUXIÈME LEÇON [karãːt døzjɛm]

LA PENSION

I

429. Uses of the Subjunctive (*continued*):

3. Usually with *impersonal* verbs:

Il faut **que vous sortiez,** You must go out
Il vaut mieux **que vous soyez ici,** It is better for you to be here (that you be here)
Il est possible **qu'il vienne,** It is possible he may come
Il est impossible **qu'il vienne,** It is impossible that he come

4. With some verbs expressing emotion:

Wishing:

Je veux / ***Je désire*** } **que vous finissiez cela,** I wish you to finish that

Happiness and sorrow:

Je suis content **qu'il ait fait ceci,** I am glad he has done this
Je regrette **qu'il soit si bête,** I am sorry he is so stupid

Doubting:

Je doute **qu'il fasse cela,** I doubt that he will do that

Fearing:

J'ai peur **qu'il ne**[1] **vienne,** I am afraid he may come

430. Present Subjunctive of Irregular Verbs:

(*a*) être, **étant:**	*je sois* [swa]	*nous soyons* [swajõ]
	(tu sois [swa])	*vous soyez* [swaje]
	il soit [swa]	ils soient [swa]
faire, **faisant:**	*je fasse* [fas]	*nous fassions* [fasjõ]
	(tu fasses [fas])	*vous fassiez* [fasje]
	il fasse [fas]	ils fassent [fas]

[1]See § 418, note 1.

pouvoir, **pouvant:** *je puisse* [pyis] *nous puissions* [pyisjõ]
(tu puisses [pyis]) *vous puissiez* [pyisje]
il puisse [pyis] ils puissent [pyis]

(*b*) The following verbs follow the rule:

savoir, *sachant:* je sache, etc.
sentir, *sentant:* je sente, etc. (*So* **dormir, partir, sortir**)
écrire, *écrivant:* j'écrive, etc.
conduire, *conduisant:* je conduise, etc.
dire, *disant:* je dise, etc.
lire, *lisant:* je lise, etc.

431. Connaître [kɔnɛːtr], *to know*[1]; *connaissant* [kɔnɛsã], *connu* [kɔny].

(Other forms follow the rules.)

432. Mettre [mɛtr], *to put;* **mettant** [mɛtã], *mis* [mi].

Present indicative: **je mets** [mɛ] **nous mettons** [mɛtõ]
(**tu mets** [mɛ]) **vous mettez** [mɛte]
il met [mɛ] **ils mettent** [mɛt]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

433. VOCABULARY

agréable [agreabl], agreeable
aimable [ɛmabl], amiable, kind
américain [amerikɛ̃], American
causer [koze], to chat
content [kõtã], glad
il faut [il fo], it is necessary (must)
inviter [ɛ̃vite], to invite
loin [lwɛ̃], far
louer [lwe], to rent
l'occasion [lɔkɑzjõ] (*f.*), opportunity
la partie [parti], part
la pension [pãsjõ], pension, boarding-house
le repas [rəpɑ], meal
rester [rɛste], to remain
la vie [vi], life

434. DRILL

1. It is possible for us to know it — **Il est possible que nous le sachions**
2. It is impossible for you to write to them — **Il est impossible que vous leur écriviez**

[1] The commonest use of **connaître** as distinguished from **savoir** is 'to be acquainted with.'

Je connais ce monsieur. I am acquainted with this gentleman.

3. It is better for them to say it	Il vaut mieux qu'ils le disent
4. I doubt that they understood it	Je doute qu'ils l'aient compris
5. I fear you may have tired yourself	J'ai peur que vous (ne) vous soyez fatigué
6. He wishes us to chat with her	Il veut que nous causions avec elle
7. I am glad you rested	Je suis content que vous vous soyez reposé
8. Do you desire him to do that?	Désirez-vous qu'il fasse cela?
9. They must take it	Il faut qu'ils le prennent
10. Are you glad he conducts himself well?	Êtes-vous content qu'il se conduise bien?
11. It is better for you to be amiable	Il vaut mieux que vous soyez aimable
12. We fear he has come to the boarding-house	Nous avons peur qu'il (ne) soit venu à la pension
13. It is possible for him to learn this	Il est possible qu'il apprenne ceci
14. Does she regret that we cannot go there?	Est-ce qu'elle regrette que nous ne puissions pas y aller?
15. Is it impossible for her to hold it?	Est-il impossible qu'elle le tienne?
16. I doubt his coming	Je doute qu'il vienne
17. We must seize the opportunity to invite them	Il faut que nous saisissions l'occasion de les inviter
18. It is better for us to remain there	Il vaut mieux que nous y restions
19. We fear the meals are too expensive	Nous avons peur que les repas (ne) soient trop chers
20. I am glad the life there is agreeable	Je suis content que la vie y soit agréable

435. Reading. En arrivant à Paris, mon frère et moi, nous sommes descendus à un hôtel. Cet hôtel était très bon, mais étant venus à Paris pour apprendre à parler français nous ne voulions pas rester dans cet hôtel, parce que beau-

coup d'Américains y arrivaient tous les jours et sachant que nous parlions un peu le français ils désiraient que nous sortions avec eux toutes les après-midis. «Il faut que vous veniez avec nous,» disaient-ils; «nous serons bien contents de payer pour tous, vous n'aurez rien à payer.» Je disais toujours: «Je suis content que vous désiriez que nous sortions avec vous, mon frère et moi, mais j'ai beaucoup de travail à faire: il faut que je finisse l'étude d'un livre très difficile avant ce soir et je n'en ai lu qu'une petite partie. Je voudrais bien aller avec vous, mais je doute que je puisse le faire.» Mon frère disait: «Je regrette beaucoup qu'il me soit impossible de sortir avec vous cette après-midi, mais un de mes amis qui demeure loin d'ici m'a invité à dîner chez lui ce soir et il faut que je sois là avant sept heures.»

Un jour mon frère m'a dit: «Nous pourrions rester dans cet hôtel toute notre vie sans apprendre un mot de français: il y a trop d'Américains ici! Il faut absolument que nous cherchions un autre hôtel où il y ait moins d'Américains.» Je lui ai répondu: «Sortons! Allons chercher une pension de famille!» Une pension de famille, vous savez bien ce que c'est, n'est-ce pas? On demeure dans une bonne famille française: on y loue une chambre bon marché, on y prend tous ses repas, on a l'occasion de causer français tout le temps, on y rencontre de belles jeunes Françaises très aimables, — enfin si vous allez à Paris pour étudier le français, n'allez pas à un hôtel, allez dans une pension de famille. La vie y est très agréable: je sais ce que je dis, je ne me trompe pas. Vous n'avez pas besoin d'avoir peur que les repas y soient moins bons qu'au restaurant. Certainement il vaut mieux que vous fassiez cela pour que vous ayez l'occasion d'apprendre à parler français.

436. Résumé. À l'hôtel; apprendre français; Américains, sortir; payer; travail; livre; frère; un jour le frère dit; autre hôtel; pension; chambre, repas, causer; hôtel, pension.

437. Oral Drill. 1. He wishes you to talk with her. 2. Are you glad we are here? 3. We must know. 4. I doubt his doing it. 5. Let him feel! 6. In order that he may be able. 7. It is better for me to write. 8. Are you well? 9. We are glad you conduct yourself well. 10. They wish us to say it. 11. Let him read them! 12. He must put it in his mouth. 13. Do you doubt his coming? 14. I am sorry you don't know him. 15. We desire you to invite us. 16. It is better for him to remain here. 17. Are you sorry he came to this pension? 18. Are you afraid he will lose a part of it? 19. I doubt our remaining there. 20. They are glad the meals are good. 21. We are afraid he may lose his wife. 22. You desire him to be agreeable. 23. Unless you chat with her. 24. It is impossible that we rent this house. 25. Although they go far from here. 26. Before you take the opportunity. 27. It is possible he is kind. 28. We are very well. 29. Before she stopped. 30. Unless they went to bed late. 31. Although we got up early. 32. Before you took a walk. 33. It is possible she has come. 34. I am glad they remembered. 35. I doubt that he hurried. 36. I am sorry you tired yourself. 37. He fears you have conducted yourself badly. 38. Unless she went out. 39. It is impossible that they stopped there. 40. Before they dressed.

II

438. DIALOGUE

1. Good-day, my friend! Where are you going so fast?	**Bonjour, mon ami! Où allez-vous si vite?**
2. Hurry up, if you wish to come with me!	**Dépêchez-vous, si vous voulez venir avec moi!**
3. Tell me what has happened!	**Dites-moi ce qui est arrivé!**
4. I must be at my boarding-house in a quarter of an hour	**Il faut que je sois à ma pension dans un quart d'heure**
5. Wait! Stay! When shall I	**Attendez! Restez! Quand est-ce**

have the opportunity of chatting a little with you? It is impossible that you should arrive there before six o'clock. It is too far

que j'aurai l'occasion de causer un peu avec vous? Il est impossible que vous y arriviez avant six heures. C'est trop loin

6. Well! I'm not going there. I have gone only a very little part of the way. What a life! It is you who said to me: "It is better that you should go into a family boarding-house"

Eh bien! Je n'y vais pas. Je n'ai fait qu'une toute petite partie du chemin. Quelle vie! C'est vous qui m'avez dit: «Il vaut mieux que vous alliez dans une pension de famille»

7. Life is not agreeable there? It is possible that the meals are not better there than at the restaurant, but the young girls are very amiable, are they not?

La vie n'y est pas agréable? Il est possible que les repas n'y soient pas meilleurs qu'au restaurant, mais les jeunes filles sont très aimables, n'est-ce pas?

8. I am glad that you made me enter this boarding-house, because now I know how much more agreeable hotel life is

Je suis content que vous m'ayez fait entrer dans cette pension, parce que maintenant je sais combien la vie d'hôtel est plus agréable

9. I regret that we were mistaken

Je regrette que nous nous soyons trompés

10. You were not mistaken, you were right; I do not doubt that one learns French better in boarding-houses where one has so many opportunities to talk it — only in this boarding-house there are only English and Americans! They thought to leave far behind them the English

Vous ne vous êtes pas trompé, vous aviez raison; je ne doute pas qu'on (n')apprenne mieux le français dans les pensions où on a tant d'occasions de le parler — seulement, dans cette pension il n'y a que des Anglais et des Américains! Ils croyaient laisser loin derrière eux la langue anglaise, comme moi. Ils ne veulent pas rester dans la

language, like me. They don't want to remain in the boarding-house; and I, I must choose a good little hotel far from here and I must rent a little room there	**pension; et moi, il faut que je choisisse un bon petit hôtel loin d'ici et que j'y loue une petite chambre**
11. Listen! Stay here! It is better you should wait. Remember that it is possible that the others should seek to leave like you	**Écoutez! Restez ici! Il vaut mieux que vous attendiez. Rappelez-vous qu'il est possible que les autres cherchent à partir comme vous**
12. That's true! I don't doubt that they will do that. I stay	**C'est vrai! Je ne doute pas qu'ils (ne) fassent cela. Je reste**

439. Conversation. 1. Can one learn French at Paris although one lives at a hotel? 2. Do you desire me to go out with you? 3. Are you glad he wishes you to go out with him? 4. Must they finish their work before they go[1] to the theater? 5. Is it impossible for him to come[1] with me? 6. Is it better for one to learn[1] French at Paris or at Rheims? 7. Are they afraid you could not find a good boarding-house? 8. Isn't it better for one to eat[1] well? 9. Do you doubt that the meals are good? 10. Are you afraid your French friend may learn English before you learn French?

440. Theme. Although the French lady at the pension is very kind, I must leave unless she departs. Although you know her very well, you cannot know how much time I have lost in chatting with her. I am glad you have come. You must remain here with me; you will see that what I say is true. The life here would be very agreeable, it is true, but you would do better to rent a room in that hotel before they are all taken. I am sorry you can't stay here, but you

[1] Though the infinitive is correct here, the student is expected to use the subjunctive.

see what would happen (arrive). It is impossible for one to write a book unless one seizes every opportunity to (**de**) work during the greater part of the time. I doubt her leaving before her friend goes to (the) war, unless they get married soon. They will do it in order to be able to go to France together. You must not think that I do not like her, although I say that I have not been able to work while she is in the house. (The) last winter she went to bed early every evening and she got up late, and she sang all the time while she was undressing and while she was dressing. She sings very well, but that is a little too much, unless I am mistaken.

441. Exercises. *A*. Drill on present subjunctive of **être, faire, pouvoir, savoir, dormir, écrire, conduire, dire, lire,** using **il faut, il vaut mieux,** etc. (§ 429, 3): § 480, *A*.

B. Drill on **connaître, mettre**: § 480, *E*.

43. QUARANTE–TROISIÈME LEÇON [karãıt trwazjɛm]

LA MAISON

I

442. Demonstrative Pronouns:

(*a*) **ceci** [səsi], *this*
cela [səla], *that* (§ 221)

(*b*) *m*. **celui** [səlyi], *this* or *that* (*one*), *the one*
f. **celle** [sɛl], *this* or *that* (*one*), *the one*
m. **ceux** [sø], *these* or *those*, *the ones*
f. **celles** [sɛl], *these* or *those*, *the ones*

Note 1. **-ci** and **-là** may be added to the last four forms (see §220, note 2):

celui-ci, celle-ci = this one; **ceux-ci, celles-ci** = these
celui-là, celle-là = that one; **ceux-là, celles-là** = those

Celui-ci est bon, celui-là est mauvais, This one is good, that one is bad
Celles-ci sont bonnes, celles-là sont mauvaises, These are good, those are bad

NOTE 2. For the Demonstrative *Adjective* (**ce, cette, ces,** see § 220).

443. Possessive Pronouns:

	mine	(*thine*)	*his, hers, its*
m. s.	**le mien** [mjɛ̃]	(**le tien** [tjɛ̃])	**le sien** [sjɛ̃]
f. s.	**la mienne** [mjɛn]	(**la tienne** [tjɛn])	**la sienne** [sjɛn]
m. pl.	**les miens** [mjɛ̃]	(**les tiens** [tjɛ̃])	**les siens** [sjɛ̃]
f. pl.	**les miennes** [mjɛn]	(**les tiennes** [tjɛn])	**les siennes** [sjɛn]

	ours	*yours*	*theirs*
m. s.	**le nôtre** [no:tr]	**le vôtre** [vo:tr]	**le leur** [lœ:r]
f. s.	**la nôtre** [no:tr]	**la vôtre** [vo:tr]	**la leur** [lœ:r]
m. pl.	**les nôtres** [no:tr]	**les vôtres** [vo:tr]	**les leurs** [lœ:r]
f. pl.	**les nôtres** [no:tr]	**les vôtres** [vo:tr]	**les leurs** [lœ:r]

NOTE. **De** and **à** contract with **le** and **les**:
Il parle du mien, He speaks of mine
À mon frère et au vôtre, To my brother and to yours

444. Possession is also indicated by the use of **à** (see §247, *B*, *C*).

Ce livre est à moi, This book is mine
or **Ce livre est le mien,** This book is mine

445. Recevoir [rəsəvwa:r], *to receive;* ***recevant*** [rəsəvɑ̃], ***reçu*** [rəsy].

Present indicative:

je reçois [rəswa]	**nous recevons** [rəsəvɔ̃]
(**tu reçois** [rəswa])	**vous recevez** [rəsəve]
il reçoit [rəswa]	**ils reçoivent** [rəswa:v]

Future:

je recevrai [rəsəvre], etc.

Present subjunctive:

je reçoive [rəswa:v]	**nous recevions** [rəsəvjɔ̃]
(**tu reçoives** [rəswa:v]	**vous receviez** [rəsəvje]
il reçoive [rəswa:v]	**ils reçoivent** [rəswa:v]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

446. Devoir [dəvwaːr], *to owe;* ***devant*** [dəvɑ̃], ***dû*** [dy].

Present indicative: ***je dois*** [dwa] **nous devons** [dəvɔ̃]
(tu dois [dwa]) **vous devez** [dəve]
il doit [dwa] **ils doivent** [dwaːv]

Future: ***je devrai*** [dəvre], etc.

Present subjunctive: ***je doive*** [dwaːv], etc., like **recevoir**

(Other forms follow the rules.)

447. Devoir is difficult to translate (except when it means *owe*), because the corresponding English auxiliaries (*must, ought*) are defective. The trouble is not with the French but with the English words. The following are the most usual translations:

je dois aller, I must go, I am to go (*also* I have to go)
je devais aller, I was to go
je devrai aller, I shall have to go
je devrais aller, I ought to go
j'ai dû aller, I had to go (*also* I must have gone)
j'aurais dû aller, I ought to have gone

448. VOCABULARY

l'assiette [lasjɛt] (*f.*), plate
autour de [otuːr də], around
les bonbons [bɔ̃bɔ̃] (*m.*), candy
chacun [ʃakœ̃], each one
chaque [ʃak], each
charmer [ʃarme], to charm
la connaissance [kɔnɛsɑ̃ːs], acquaintance
le couteau [kuto] (*pl.* **couteaux**), knife
la cuiller [kyjɛːr], spoon
la fourchette [furʃɛt], fork
l'invité [lɛ̃vite] (*m.*), guest
mettre la table, to set the table
le morceau [mɔrso], piece
la nappe [nap], table-cloth
par [paːr], by, through
permettre [pɛrmɛtr], to permit
présenter [prezɑ̃te], to present, introduce
la serviette [sɛrvjɛt], napkin
la tasse [tas], cup

449. DRILL

1. This spoon and that one — **Cette cuiller-ci et celle-là**
2. This glass and that of my sister — **Ce verre et celui de ma sœur**

3. These knives and those of my father	Ces couteaux et ceux de mon père
4. Your table-cloth and mine	Votre nappe et la mienne
5. My fork and yours	Ma fourchette et la vôtre
6. Our kitchen and hers	Notre cuisine et la sienne
7. Your bread and theirs	Votre pain et le leur
8. He receives; they receive	Il reçoit; ils reçoivent
9. We receive; you have received	Nous recevons; vous avez reçu
10. He is to come; we are to go	Il doit venir; nous devons aller
11. They are to carry; they were to show	Ils doivent porter; ils devaient montrer
12. I ought to go; I had to speak	Je devrais aller; j'ai dû parler
13. We shall owe; we shall receive	Nous devrons; nous recevrons
14. He receives his bread and mine	Il reçoit son pain et le mien
15. Have you received yours?	Avez-vous reçu le vôtre?
16. Those who have had to do it	Ceux qui ont dû le faire
17. You must be tired	Vous devez être fatigué
18. He will receive presents	Il recevra des cadeaux
19. Although he has received	Quoiqu'il ait reçu
20. He wishes that I may receive	Il veut que je reçoive

450. Reading. Nous avons des invités aujourd'hui. Ce sont des parents de ma mère qui viennent de la campagne. Ils ne doivent rester en ville que quelques jours. Ma mère est très bonne; elle les a reçus très poliment. On doit toujours faire cela. Nous le leur devons parce que ce sont des parents. Celui qui ne reçoit pas poliment ses parents, ne devrait pas être poliment reçu par eux. Est-ce que vous vous montrez toujours aussi bon pour les vôtres que nous pour les nôtres? Ma mère dit à tout le monde: Permettez que je vous présente mon oncle, ma tante, ma cousine! Et tout le monde répond: Je suis charmé de faire leur connaissance.

Je croyais pourtant qu'on devait m'apporter des cadeaux. C'est ce que les parents doivent faire. Moi je n'ai vraiment rien reçu, quoique je leur aie donné de très jolies choses. Ceux qui reçoivent des cadeaux, devraient aussi en donner; mais tout ce que je recevrai d'eux sera la petite boîte de bonbons — celle que vous voyez là sur la table — qu'ils m'ont mise entre les mains en arrivant. Elle ne vaut pas

Ma mère met la table

beaucoup, celle-là! Celles que ma sœur reçoit de son fiancé sont beaucoup plus grandes. La mienne ne vaut que cinquante centimes; les siennes coûtent très cher. Tous mes petits amis reçoivent de jolis cadeaux de leurs parents: celui-ci reçoit un fusil des siens, celui-là une épée des siens. Moi je ne reçois des miens qu'une boîte de bonbons! Je n'aime pas des parents comme les nôtres. Je voudrais en avoir comme les leurs. Pourquoi dites-vous: Quel garçon!

Ma mère met la table maintenant. Elle y a déjà mis les assiettes, les tasses, les couteaux, les fourchettes, les cuillers. Voyez-vous ces deux petites assiettes bleues? Celle-ci est

la mienne; celle-là est à ma sœur. Elle trouve la sienne plus jolie, mais elle a tort; moi j'aime mieux la mienne. On lui a donné la sienne pour son anniversaire; mon frère et moi nous avons reçu les nôtres à Noël. Voilà tout le monde assis autour de la table. Celui-là c'est mon oncle, celle-ci c'est ma tante, ceux-là sont mes cousins. Regardez comme ils mangent, mes deux cousins! Celui-là ne dit pas un seul mot: il a toujours un morceau de pain dans la bouche. Celui-ci parle tout le temps. Il ne doit pas être assis à la table: il est trop jeune. Il a pris la serviette de son frère parce que la sienne est tombée sous ses pieds—et il mange avec son couteau! Je n'aime pas mes parents—mais je pense que vous devez trouver les vôtres plus charmants que les miens.

451. Résumé. Parents en ville; reçus; présenter; cadeaux; bonbons; fiancé; petits amis; mettre la table; assiettes bleues; anniversaire, Noël; cousins, pain, jeune, serviette, couteau.

452. Oral Drill. 1. This glass. and that one. 2. Your cup and mine. 3. This spoon and that of my sister. 4. My plate and his. 5. These presents and those of my brother. 6. Your presents and hers. 7. These napkins and those of your mother. 8. Our napkins and yours (*pl.*). 9. That fork and this one. 10. Her fork and yours. 11. Their bread and ours. 12. My bread and hers. 13. Those who receive us. 14. The one who receives me. 15. We receive them. 16. You will receive her. 17. She would not receive them. 18. Has she received them? 19. She is to speak. 20. They are to go out. 21. We are to depart. 22. You were to come. 23. You ought to go. 24. Have you received your letters? 25. I am to receive some. 26. The one who had to carry them. 27. She must be tired. 28. Although I have received them. 29. Do you wish that we receive her? 30. You must depart.

II

453. DIALOGUE

1. Where is the maid? She ought to be here
2. Here I am, madam. I had to wait a long time at the grocer's. He was to receive our bread from the baker's at three o'clock. He always receives ours before that, but to-day he received it only at four o'clock
3. You ought to go to another grocer's! Why wait at that one's store?
4. What am I to do now, madam?
5. You must set the table. I have some guests who are to come soon
6. Always guests! Those who receive guests and who keep open house every day ought to pay their maids better. Those who have all the pleasure ought at least to pay those who do all the work
7. You forget the tips and the presents that you receive
8. I don't receive so many as that!
9. There are two of my guests already! The one who is ringing is my uncle, and the one who is coming

Où est la bonne? Elle devrait être ici

Me voici, madame. J'ai dû attendre longtemps chez l'épicier. Il devait recevoir notre pain de chez le boulanger à trois heures. Il reçoit toujours le nôtre avant cela, mais aujourd'hui il ne l'a reçu qu'à quatre heures

Vous devriez aller chez un autre épicier! Pourquoi attendre chez celui-là?

Qu'est-ce que je dois faire maintenant, madame?

Vous devez mettre la table. J'ai des invités qui doivent venir bientôt

Toujours des invités! Ceux qui reçoivent des invités et qui tiennent maison ouverte tous les jours devraient mieux payer leurs bonnes. Ceux qui ont tout le plaisir devraient au moins payer celles qui font tout le travail

Vous oubliez les pourboires et les cadeaux que vous recevez

Je n'en reçois pas tant que cela!

Voilà déjà deux de mes invités! Celui qui sonne c'est mon oncle, et celle qui vient avec lui c'est ma tante. Mon mari

with him is my aunt. My husband will receive them in the parlor. I had to come to make the tea in the kitchen. Have you received the cakes that I ordered?

les recevra dans le salon. J'ai dû venir faire le thé dans la cuisine. Est-ce que vous avez reçu les gâteaux que j'ai commandés?

10. They are these perhaps?

Ce sont peut-être ceux-ci?

11. No, it is not those. They were to bring them at two o'clock. They ought to have arrived a long time ago

Non, ce ne sont pas ceux-là. On devait les apporter à deux heures. Ils auraient dû arriver il y a longtemps

12. Must I set the table?

Faut-il que je mette la table?

13. How! you have not set it yet! Well, put the knives, the forks and the spoons beside the plates. But must I tell you all that? You must know it already. Put also one of these boxes of candy beside each plate. Each one is to have his. And don't forget the napkins! Yesterday you put on only mine and my husband's! We had ours, I mine and he his, — and my guests did not have theirs!

Comment! vous ne l'avez pas mise encore! Eh bien, mettez les couteaux, les fourchettes et les cuillers à côté des assiettes. Mais est-ce que je dois vous dire tout cela? Vous devez le savoir déjà. Mettez aussi une de ces boîtes de bonbons à côté de chaque assiette. Chacun doit avoir la sienne. Et n'oubliez pas les serviettes! Hier vous avez mis seulement la mienne et celle de mon mari! Nous avions les nôtres, moi la mienne et lui la sienne, — et mes invités n'avaient pas les leurs!

454. Conversation. 1. Did you have guests yesterday? 2. Where did they come from and how long were they to stay at your house? 3. How did you receive them? 4. Ought those who do not receive their relatives politely to be politely received by them? 5. She has many relatives, and I also; does she show herself as good to hers as I am (it) to

mine? 6. If we said: Allow us to introduce our uncle to you, what would you answer? 7. Are you to bring your cousins some presents? 8. Ought the one who receives a present also to give something? 9. How much is this little box of candy worth, which I have received? 10. Do you like your relatives as much as ours?

455. Theme. I always receive my guests as politely as you receive yours. I am to receive some poor relations today, and I shall receive them very politely. I owe it to them because they have always received me very well. They always say to their guests: Permit us to introduce to you our cousins, and all their friends reply that they will be charmed to make our acquaintance. The maid has set the table. You ought to see the blue plates, the cups, the pretty knives and forks and spoons, the white table-cloth, and the napkins beside the plates. We have received ten boxes of candy from the grocer. Each one is to have his beside his plate. You will receive yours and I shall receive mine. But you must wait. The cakes which we were to receive from the grocer at noon have not yet arrived. The maid has had to go to the grocer's, and my mother will have to make the tea which we are to drink. The guests are to be seated around the table and the maid is to carry the tea and the cakes to all those who ask for any. Do you see those big chairs? That one is for my father, this one is mine. That chair beside mine is yours. You must not eat my candy, however, which is between my plate and yours. Wait!

456. Exercises. *A*. Fill the following blanks, with (1) *this*, (2) *that*, (3) *this one* (m. and f.), (4) *that one* (m. and f.):

— is funny. — is better (**vaut mieux**) than —.

— goes quickly. — means something.

B. Translate the following:

This plate (cake, fork, knife, table-cloth) is the one you are looking for.

Change to the plural.

C. Fill the following blanks with (1) *mine*, (2) *his*, (3) *ours*, (4) *yours*, (5) *theirs:*

These (*m.*) are —.	That one (*m. and f.*) is —.
Those (*f.*) are —.	This one (*m. and f.*) is —.

D. Drill on **recevoir, devoir:** § 480, *E.*

44. QUARANTE-QUATRIÈME LEÇON [karãːt katriɛm]

UNE LETTRE: LE PAQUEBOT, LA DOUANE

I

457. Summary of Interrogative and Relative Pronouns:

[*For reference*]

1. Note that the interrogative adjective *what? which?* is **quel? quelle? quels? quelles?: Quel livre avez-vous? Quel livre est-ce que vous avez?** *What book have you?*

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

I. Persons (*who? whom?*)

Subject:

2. (*a*) **Qui est ici?** 3. **Qui est-ce qui est ici?**

Who is here?

Object:

4. (*b*) **Qui (voyez-vous)?** 5. **Qui (est-ce que vous voyez)?**

Whom do you see?

Object of prep.:

6. (*c*) **Avec qui (allez-vous)?** 7. **Avec qui (est-ce que vous allez)?**

With whom are you going?

8. Note that *which (one)?*=lequel?: **Lequel (des hommes) est ici?** *Which (of the men) is here?* **Lequel (voyez-vous)? Lequel (est-ce que vous voyez)? Avec lequel (allez-vous)? Avec lequel (est-ce que vous allez)?**

II. Things (*what?*)

Subject:

9. (*a*) . . . . . 10. **Qu'est-ce qui est sur la table?** What is on the table?

Object:

11. (*b*) **Que (voyez-vous)?** 12. **Qu'(est-ce que vous voyez)?** What do you see?

Object of prep.:

13. (*c*) **Avec quoi (écrivez-vous)?** 14. **Avec quoi (est-ce que vous écrivez)?** With what do you write?

15. Note that *which (one)?*=lequel?: **Lequel (des crayons) est sur la table?** *Which (of the pencils) is on the table?* etc. See 8.

III. *What?* (asking for a definition)

16. What kind of thing is . . .? **Qu'est-ce que c'est qu'un chameau?** What is a camel?

17. Compare: *What is your opinion?* **Quelle est votre opinion?** See interrogative adjectives above.

IV. What=*that which*

Subject:

18. (*a*) **Je sais ce qui est ici.** I know what is here.

Object:

19. (*b*) **Je sais ce que vous voyez.** I know what you see.

Predicate with **être:**

20. (*c*) **Je sais ce que vous êtes.** I know what you are.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

I. Persons (*who, whom*)

Subject:

21. (*a*) **L'enfant qui est ici est sage.** The child who is here is good.

Object:

22. (*b*) **L'enfant que vous voyez est sage.** — The child whom you see is good.

Object of prep.:

23. (*c*) **L'enfant avec qui vous allez est sage.** — The child with whom you go is good.

24. (*d*) **L'enfant dont je parle est sage.** — The child of whom I speak is good

II. Things (*which*)

Subject:

25. (*a*) **Le livre qui est ici est bon.** — The book which is here is good.

Object:

26. (*b*) **Le livre que vous voyez est bon.** — The book which you see is good.

Object of prep.:

27. (*c*) **Le crayon avec lequel vous écrivez est bon.** — The pencil with which you write is good.

28. (*d*) **Le livre dont vous parlez est bon.** — The book of which you speak is good.

458. Remarks on Interrogative and Relative Pronouns:

1. Where parentheses are used (see 4, 5, 6, 7, etc.) all the student has to remember is the equivalence of the inverted and **est-ce que** forms: see § 27.

2. Usage is determined by the models in § 27.

Pronoun: **Qui voit-*il*?** Whom does *he* see?
Noun: **Qui est-ce que l'*homme* voit?** Whom does the *man* see?

3. Both parts of **lequel** are declined (**lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles**). Combined with **à** and **de**:

auquel	**à laquelle**	**auxquels**	**auxquelles**
duquel	**de laquelle**	**desquels**	**desquelles**

4. Note that *what?*, subject of a verb, must be translated **qu'est-ce qui?** (10). There is no form for 9.

5. Note **dont** (28), *of which.* With prepositions other than *of*, use **lequel** (27).

6. *whose?* (interrogative) usually = **à qui?** (*to whom?*): see § 247, *C.*

whose (relative) = **dont** (*of whom, of which*), both of persons and things.

Whose book is this? **À qui est ce livre?**
I know the man whose son has gone, **Je connais l'homme dont le fils est parti**
Here is the flag whose color is blue! **Voici le drapeau dont la couleur est bleue!**

459. Craindre [krɛ̃ːdr], *to fear;* ***craignant*** [krɛɲɑ̃], ***craint*** [krɛ̃].

Present indicative:	***je crains*** [krɛ̃]	**nous craignons** [krɛɲõ]
	(**tu crains** [krɛ̃])	**vous craignez** [krɛɲe]
	il craint [krɛ̃]	***ils craignent*** [krɛɲ]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

460. Conjugate like **craindre: plaindre** [plɛ̃ːdr], *to pity;* **se plaindre,** *to complain.*

461. Ouvrir [uvriːr], *to open;* ***ouvrant*** [uvrɑ̃], ***ouvert*** [uvɛːr].

Present indicative:	***j'ouvre*** [ʒuːvr]	**nous ouvrons** [uvrõ]
	(**tu ouvres** [uːvr])	**vous ouvrez** [uvre]
	il ouvre [uːvr]	**ils ouvrent** [uːvr]

(Other forms follow the rules.)

462. Conjugate like **ouvrir: couvrir** [kuvriːr], *to cover;* **offrir** [ɔfriːr], *to offer;* **souffrir** [sufriːr], *to suffer.*

463. VOCABULARY

asseyez-vous! [aseje vu], sit down!
le bateau [bato], boat
à bord [bɔːr], on board
la cabine [kabin], cabin
dévouer [devwe], to devote
la douane [dwan], custom-house
il faudra [fodra], *fut. of* **il faut**

le matelot [matlo], sailor
la mer [mɛːr], sea
le paquebot [pakbo], steamer
plusieurs [plyzjœːr], several
le pont [pɔ̃], deck
le quai [kɛ], wharf, dock
la terre [tɛːr], land
traverser [travɛrse], to cross
le voyage [vwajaːʒ], journey
voyager [vwajaʒe], to travel

464. DRILL

1. Of what? of whom?	**De quoi? de qui?**
2. To what? to whom?	**À quoi? à qui?**
3. The man to whom, for whom	**L'homme à qui, pour qui**
4. The boat to which, for which	**Le bateau auquel, pour lequel**
5. The steamer on board which	**Le paquebot à bord duquel**
6. Which one of these sailors?	**Lequel de ces matelots?**
7. For whom? for what?	**Pour qui? pour quoi?**
8. To which of the steamers?	**Auquel des paquebots?**
9. To which of the ladies?	**À laquelle des dames?**
10. Of what do you complain?	**De quoi vous plaignez-vous?**
11. The door which is open	**La porte qui est ouverte**
12. The door which I open	**La porte que j'ouvre**
13. The door through which	**La porte par laquelle**
14. The man who sees John	**L'homme qui voit Jean**
15. The man whom John sees	**L'homme que voit Jean** (*or* **que Jean voit**)
16. The lady of whom we complain	**La dame dont nous nous plaignons**
17. Who was opening the door?	**Qui ouvrait la porte?**
18. Which sea have you crossed?	**Quelle mer avez-vous traversée?**
19. Which of the cabins is yours?	**Laquelle des cabines est la vôtre?**
20. What! we are at the wharf!	**Quoi! nous sommes au quai!**

465. Reading.

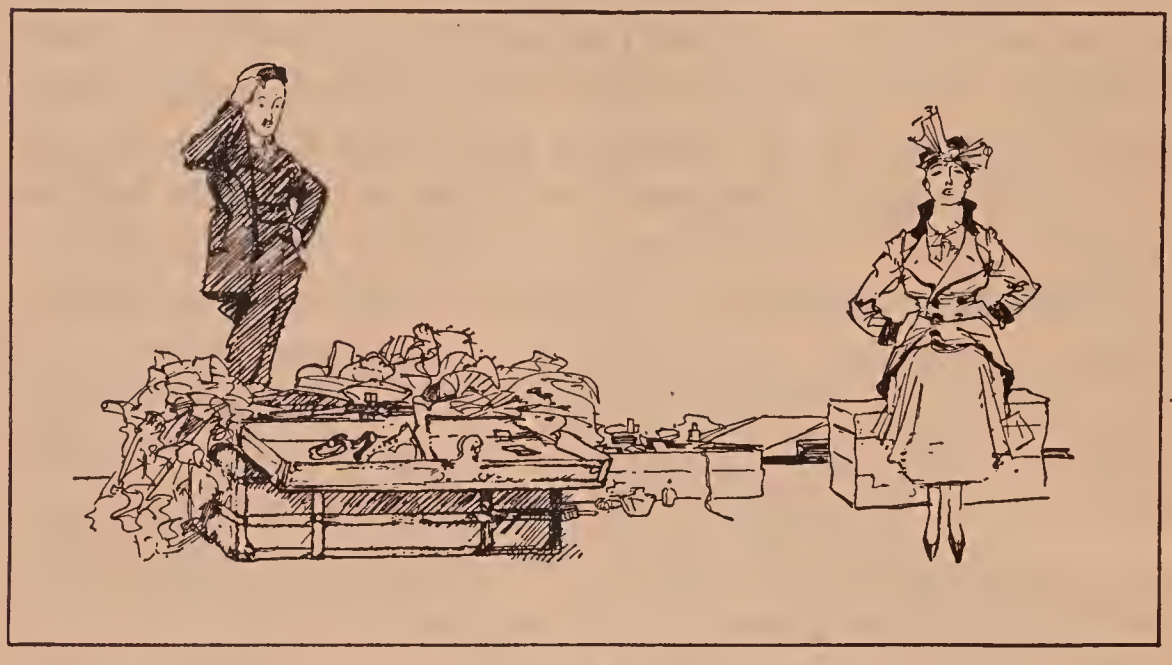
Ma chère amie,

Me voilà enfin sur le grand bateau, dont je vous ai parlé dans ma lettre d'hier, et sur lequel je craignais presque de mettre le pied. Enfin je voyage, je traverse la mer! Je

crains beaucoup que le temps ne soit bien mauvais. Quoique je ne craigne rien sur terre, j'ai toujours craint la mer; les vents, les éclairs, le tonnerre, tout cela loin de la terre me fait peur!

J'ai trouvé ici beaucoup de lettres — moi qui craignais de ne rien recevoir, j'ai reçu au moins cent lettres et cartes postales! Je me plaignais quelquefois d'avoir moins d'amis que les autres — il ne faut plus que je me plaigne de cela! Je vais à la poste chercher mes lettres — dans le bateau, naturellement — nous avons une poste ici! Je les demande, je les reçois, je les ouvre, je les lis, tout cela avec le plus grand plaisir du monde; mais répondre à toutes ces lettres, après les avoir reçues, ouvertes et lues, voilà, je le crains, quelque chose qui sera moins agréable, — il y en a tant! Plaignez-moi — et, si vous n'êtes pas très contente de cette lettre, ne vous plaignez pas de moi! Tous mes amis et amies m'ont écrit. Auxquels répondre tout de suite? Lesquels attendront? De quoi leur parler? — il y a tant de choses à dire! Heureusement j'ai beaucoup de très belles cartes postales illustrées sur chacune desquelles je n'aurai qu'à écrire deux mots. Mais j'ai tant d'amis dont j'ai reçu des lettres, des cadeaux, des fleurs, des boîtes de bonbons, et auxquels il faudra que j'écrive des lettres et non des cartes. Vous en êtes une des premières, et je commence par vous, parce que je ne voudrais jamais que vous vous plaigniez de moi, comme nous nous sommes plaintes de ma sœur qui a passé ses vacances de Noël à New-York — vous vous rappelez cela, n'est-ce pas? — sans que nous ayons reçu un seul mot d'elle! Moi je ne me suis pas arrêtée chez les amis dont je vous avais parlé et chez lesquels ma sœur a fait visite si souvent. Je craignais que le paquebot ne parte sans moi! Et puis, j'ai dû aller en ville acheter une autre malle. J'en ai trois maintenant! Quoi! trois malles! direz-vous. Oui, mademoiselle! J'en ai une dans laquelle je n'ai que des robes et des chapeaux, une autre, plus grande, où je mets mon linge, mes

souliers et je ne sais quoi encore, et enfin une troisième dans laquelle je ne porte que des livres. Je crains que je ne reste longtemps à la douane en descendant du paquebot. Et on ne me dira pas: Asseyez-vous, mademoiselle!



Je crains que je ne reste longtemps à la douane

Écrivez-moi encore l'adresse de ces deux amis français dont vous me parliez et auxquels vous voulez que j'apporte vos lettres. J'ai perdu le carnet dans lequel j'avais écrit cela. Auquel des deux dois-je donner la boîte de cigares, et auquel l'autre petite boîte que vous avez si bien enveloppée, et dans laquelle il y a, je pense, des mouchoirs de soie? Pour qui les cigares? et pour qui les mouchoirs?

Écrivez-moi bientôt. Que dit-on chez nous? De quoi parle-t-on? Avec lesquels de mes amis causez-vous de moi? J'écrirai à tout le monde, mais qu'on ne s'en plaigne pas si je n'écris que deux mots à chacun!

Votre amie bien dévouée,

Henriette.

466. Résumé. Grand bateau; bon matelot; terre, mer; cent lettres; peu d'amis; une poste; lettres reçues; y ré-

pondre; cartes; cadeaux; par qui commencer?; sœur, Noël; amis à New-York; trois malles; douane; adresse perdue; cigares, mouchoirs; écrire.

467. Oral Drill. 1. To whom do you speak? 2. Of what do you speak? 3. Which one of the steamers? 4. On which of the boats? 5. For whom is that box? 6. To which of the wharves are you going? 7. Of what does she complain? 8. For whom do you open the door? 9. The door which she opens. 10. Of what cabin do you speak? 11. The steamer on board which you came. 12. On board which of the steamers did she come? 13. The man whom I see. 14. The lady who sees me. 15. The sailor of whom I spoke. 16. The custom-house through which we passed. 17. Pity me! 18. Don't pity him! 19. Don't complain! 20. Open the door at the left! 21. We have opened the door at the right. 22. To which of the boats are you going? 23. Who came? 24. Whom have you seen? 25. To whom did she speak? 26. What! is it you? 27. Which of the doors did you open? 28. For whom do you open the door? 29. The sailor of whom I was complaining. 30. Of what do you complain?

II

468. DIALOGUE

1. What! you are traveling again?	**Quoi! vous voyagez encore?**
2. Yes, I am going to cross the sea this time. I am going to make that trip to France of which I have spoken so much and for which I have at last enough money	**Oui, je vais traverser la mer cette fois. Je vais faire ce voyage en France dont j'ai tant parlé et pour lequel j'ai enfin assez d'argent**
3. You don't fear the sea then at this season?	**Vous ne craignez donc pas la mer dans cette saison?**

4. No, I don't fear it any more, this sea on which I have traveled so many times, and of which you are afraid because you have never crossed it. The first time that I went to France, I feared it very much, I also

Non, je ne la crains plus, cette mer sur laquelle j'ai voyagé tant de fois, et dont vous avez peur parce que vous ne l'avez jamais traversée. La première fois que je suis allé en France, je la craignais beaucoup, moi aussi

5. I, I have always feared it. Is it big, the boat in which you will travel?

Moi, je l'ai toujours crainte. Est-il grand, le paquebot sur lequel vous voyagerez?

6. Do you remember the boat of which you spoke to me so often and in which you came to New York?

Vous rappelez-vous le bateau dont vous me parliez si souvent et sur lequel vous êtes venu à New-York?

7. The one on the deck of which we walked so much? I remember it perfectly

Celui sur le pont duquel nous nous promenions tant? Je me le rappelle parfaitement

8. Well, the one in which I shall travel is much larger than that one

Eh bien, celui sur lequel je voyagerai est beaucoup plus grand que celui-là

9. What! what are you telling me?

Quoi! que me dites-vous?

10. Yes, you will see. Come there immediately with me. Here we are already on the wharf. They are opening the door through which one goes to the boat. Pass through that open door there, to the right

Oui, vous verrez. Venez-y tout de suite avec moi. Nous voilà déjà sur le quai. On ouvre la porte par laquelle on va au bateau. Passez par cette porte ouverte, là, à droite

11. Through which of these doors? I see several of them

Par laquelle de ces portes? J'en vois plusieurs

12. What! you don't see that little door which the em-

Quoi! vous ne voyez pas cette petite porte que les employés

ployees are opening, there at the left?	ouvrent, là, à gauche?
13. At the left! You said: at the right! Now I see it, the big steamer on board which you are going to travel	À gauche! Vous avez dit: à droite! Maintenant je le vois, le grand paquebot à bord duquel vous allez voyager
14. Let's go on board! They are opening my cabin. Let's enter it! Sit down!	Allons à bord! On ouvre ma cabine. Entrons-y! Asseyez-vous!

469. Conversation. 1. Do you fear to cross the sea? 2. What is one afraid of and of what does one complain? 3. Did you receive several letters from your friends? 4. What did you do when they gave you your letters? 5. Which one of your friends did you answer at once? 6. Do you pity me because I have so many letters and cards which I must answer? 7. To which of your friends are you writing and of what do you speak? 8. Have you complained of me because I did not stop at your house? 9. Are you not afraid that you may remain a long time at the custom-house? 10. To whom will you give the box in which you have those good cigars?

470. Theme.

My dear Henrietta:

I am going to travel! I shall cross the sea on a big steamer. I used to fear the sea a little, but I do not fear it now. I have always feared (the) bad weather much less than you, although I have not traveled as often as you. I came to New York yesterday evening on a little boat which stopped in front of the wharf. I am staying at the house of my aunt Mary, of whom I have already spoken to you in one of my letters. She is a very old lady at whose house I always stay when I am in town. She always opens her house to me, and she receives me with the greatest pleasure in the world. I

stay only at her house, although I sometimes fear that my visits may not be agreeable for her. I have so many friends, you know, who come there when I am there. She is all alone in her house. Don't you pity her? But she fears nothing and she never complains, although she is always alone there. I have received several letters which I shall answer soon. Of what do you wish that I write to you? Of my dresses, of which I have bought four? Of the trunks, in which I have put my dresses? Of my books, of which I have not yet opened the first one? Of the picture-postals of which I have a hundred, and on each of them I shall write only six words? Of the big steamer on board which I shall soon be, and in which I have a pretty little cabin? But it is already midnight, — I shall go to bed now and shall write no more this evening.

Your most devoted friend,

Mary.

471. Exercises. Fill the following blanks with pronouns, using each blank as many times as possible:

— is here? — does the man fear?
— do you fear? With — are you doing that?
— of the children (houses) do you like the best?

Drill on **craindre, se plaindre:** § 480, *E.*
Drill on **offrir, souffrir:** § 480, *E.*

45. QUARANTE-CINQUIÈME LEÇON [karɑ̃ːt sɛ̃kjɛm]

Review

I

472. 1. Let her finish! 2. Although he takes it. 3. Unless he comes. 4. Let them hold it! 5. Before he goes. 6. Unless they be. 7. In order that we may have it.

8. We remember it. 9. Unless we remember it. 10. You are taking a walk. 11. Although we are taking a walk. 12. He chooses them. 13. Unless he chooses me. 14. She has a head ache. 15. Although she has a tooth ache. 16. You must be here. 17. It is possible that he may do that. 18. I fear that they have done it. 19. Are they doing that? 20. Are you glad that I have come? 21. Why have I come? 22. Do you wish us to go out? 23. He must go out. 24. I doubt that he will be able. 25. Let them say it! 26. He fears I may have tired myself. 27. It is not possible you should know that. 28. I am glad that you are hurrying. 29. We must take them. 30. Do you wish that he should conduct himself badly? 31. It is better that he go. 32. He must learn. 33. We doubt their coming. 34. Let him choose this knife or that one! 35. That table-cloth or this one. 36. These glasses and those. 37. My uncle and yours. 38. Your aunts and mine. 39. My hand and his. 40. My bread and hers. 41. They receive these cakes and those. 42. He will receive this box and that of his sister. 43. He is to come. 44. We are to go. 45. Those who had to speak. 46. Although he has received it. 47. They wish that he receive them. 48. To whom does he say it? 49. Of what do you speak? 50. Which sailor? 51. Which one of the boats? 52. Those whom I see. 53. Which ones do you see? 54. The lady of whom I was complaining. 55. The door through which he was coming.

II

473. 1. Although his health is good, he has a head ache. 2. Unless you close your mouth, you will have a tooth ache. 3. Let him go to bed, unless he is better. 4. I have hurried so that you may take a walk with me. 5. Unless he was mistaken, she was glad that you are here. 6. Do you wish that we do it? 7. Is it better that we remain in the boarding-house? 8. Are you not afraid that he may not write?

9. Do you doubt my doing it? 10. We are glad that you know her. 11. Although she went to bed late, she got up early. 12. Hurry up, if you wish her to come! 13. He must be at the theater at eight o'clock. 14. Although you have no napkin, I have mine. 15. They have received our letter and his. 16. I had my gun and that of John, my sword and that of Peter. 17. We had our guns and those of John, our swords and those of Peter. 18. Those who receive us well do what they ought to do. 19. You are to cross the sea and I am to stay in New York. 20. My box of candy and his are larger than that of Mary. 21. This boat and the one in which you traveled are very small. 22. To whom is the sailor speaking, and of what? 23. On board of which of these steamers will you travel? 24. For whom were you making this? 25. Of whom or of what are you complaining? 26. I am complaining of the sailors and of their boats. 27. Of which of the sailors? 28. Enter my cabin and sit down! 29. Although I have crossed it several times, I fear the sea. 30. Which (ones) of these letters have you answered? 31. From which of your friends did you receive letters and which (ones) of these letters will you answer?

ADDENDA

Notes on Past Definite and Imperfect Subjunctive

474. These tenses are rarely used in conversation or in informal discourse, such as letters. They belong to purely literary style; consequently, before the student begins to read he must master them.

475. Endings of Past Definite:

First Conjugation		*Second and Third Conjugations*	
–ai [e]	**–âmes** [am][1]	**–is** [i]	**–îmes** [im]
–as [a][1]	**–âtes** [at][1]	**–is** [i]	**–îtes** [it]
–a [a]	**–èrent** [ɛːr]	**–it** [i]	**–irent** [iːr]

[1] See Introduction, §§16, 1 and 4; 38, 4, (Exceptions)

I gave, etc.	*I sold*, etc.
je donn **ai** [dɔne]	je vend **is** [vãdi]
(tu donn **as** [dɔna])	(tu vend **is** [vãdi])
il donn **a** [dɔna]	il vend **it** [vãdi]
nous donn **âmes** [dɔnam]	nous vend **îmes** [vãdim]
vous donn **âtes** [dɔnat]	vous vend **îtes** [vãdit]
ils donn **èrent** [dɔnɛːr]	ils vend **irent** [vãdiːr]

Note. There are no irregularities in the past definite not offered in the first person, even in the case of irregular verbs. In a large number of irregular verbs (**avoir, être, recevoir,** etc.) **i** in the ending is replaced by **u.**

476. Endings of Imperfect Subjunctive. There are no departures from the rule, even in the irregular verbs, in the formation of the imperfect subjunctive: add the endings to the second person singular of the past definite.

For the third singular, substitute **t** for the **s** of the past definite and put a circumflex over the vowel.

I. **tu donn as**	II. and III. **tu (fin is) vend is**
I might (should) give, etc.	*I might (should) sell*, etc.
je donnas **se** [dɔnas]	je vendis **se** [vãdis]
(tu donnas **ses** [dɔnas])	(tu vendis **ses** [vãdis])
il donnât [dɔna][1]	il vendît [vãdi]
nous donnas **sions** [dɔnasjõ]	nous vendis **sions** [vãdisjõ]
vous donnas **siez** [dɔnasje]	vous vendis **siez** [vãdisje]
ils donnas **sent** [dɔnas]	ils vendis **sent** [vãdis]

477. The imperfect subjunctive is used after past tenses and the conditional tense:

Je voulais (voudrais) qu'ils vendissent leur maison, I wished (should wish) them to sell their house

Quoiqu'il eût bien travaillé, je ne l'ai pas payé, Although he had worked well, I have not paid him

Note. The present subjunctive is generally used in place of the imperfect subjunctive in conversation and in informal discourse.

478. Exercises. Drill on past definite (of any verbs): § 480, *A*.

479. Drill on imperfect subjunctive: § 480, *A*, using the formula **il désirait que —.**

[1] See page 270, footnote.

SCHEMES FOR VERB DRILL

480. *A. Single Tense.* Fill the following blanks:

1. you —
2. I —
3. they (*m.*) —
4. he —
5. they (*f.*) —
6. we —
7. she —

B. Present, past indefinite, future:

1. I have —
2. you —
3. they have —
4. I —
5. we shall —
6. he has —
7. they —
8. you have —
9. you will —
10. we —
11. they will —
12. I shall —
13. he —
14. he will —
15. we have —

C. Present, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect:

1. she has —
2. I shall —
3. —ing
4. you —
5. I was —ing
6. he will —
7. I —
8. we have —
9. they were —ing
10. we —
11. you will —
12. —ing
13. she —
14. they have —
15. we shall —
16. you were —ing
17. —ing
18. you have —
19. they will —
20. we were —ing
21. they —
22. he was —ing
23. I have —
24. —ing

D. Present, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect, conditional, imperative:

1. —ing
2. he would —
3. she has —
4. —!
5. I shall —
6. you would —
7. —ing
8. you —
9. I was —ing
10. let us —!
11. I should —
12. he will —
13. I —
14. they would —
15. —!
16. we have —
17. they were —ing
18. —ing
19. we should —
20. you will —
21. let us —!
22. we —
23. —ing
24. she —
25. they have —
26. we shall —
27. you were —ing
28. they will —
29. you have —
30. we were —ing
31. they —
32. he was —ing
33. I have —

E. Present indicative, past indefinite, future, present participle, imperfect, conditional, imperative, present subjunctive (I must —: **il faut que je** —):

1. he was —ing
2. he would —
3. they must —
4. she has —
5. —!
6. we must —
7. I shall —
8. you would —
9. —ing
10. you —
11. I was —ing
12. let us —!
13. I should —
14. he will —
15. I —
16. he must —
17. they would —
18. —!
19. you must —
20. we have —
21. they were —ing
22. —ing
23. we should —
24. you will —
25. let us —!
26. we —
27. I have —
28. she —
29. they have —
30. I must —
31. we shall —
32. you were —ing
33. they will —
34. you have —
35. we were —ing
36. they —

F. The entire verb, including *past definite* (indicated as follows: *I —ed*) and *imperfect subjunctive* (he had to —: **il fallait qu'il** *or* **il a fallu qu'il** —):

1. he was —ing
2. he would —
3. they must —
4. I —ed
5. she has —
6. he had to —
7. —!
8. they —ed
9. we must —
10. I shall —
11. you would —
12. —ing
13. you —
14. I was —ing
15. let us —!
16. I should —
17. he will —
18. you —ed
19. I —
20. we had to —
21. he must —
22. they would —
23. —!
24. you must —
25. we have —
26. they were —ing
27. they had to —
28. —ing
29. we should —
30. you will —
31. you had to —
32. let us —!
33. we —
34. I —ed
35. I have —
36. she —
37. they have —
38. I must —
39. we —ed
40. we shall —
41. he had to —
42. you were —ing
43. they will —
44. you have —
45. we were —ing
46. they —

APPENDIX

SYNOPSIS OF REGULAR VERBS — IRREGULAR VERBS

Synopsis of the Regular Verbs

For convenient reference, before treating the irregular verbs, complete paradigms of the regular verbs and of the auxiliary verbs are here given.

CONJUGATIONS

I	II	III
	Infinitive	
donn **er**, *to give*	fin **ir**, *to finish*	vend **re**, *to sell*
	Present Participle	
donn **ant**, *giving*	fin iss **ant**, *finishing*	vend **ant**, *selling*
	Past Participle	
donn **é**, *given*	fin **i**, *finished*	vend **u**, *sold*
	Present Indicative	
I give	*I finish*	*I sell*
je donn **e**	fin **is**	vend **s**
tu donn **es**	fin **is**	vend **s**
il donn **e**	fin **it**	vend
nous donn **ons**	fin iss **ons**	vend **ons**
vous donn **ez**	fin iss **ez**	vend **ez**
ils donn **ent**	fin iss **ent**	vend **ent**
	Imperfect Indicative	
I was giving	*I was finishing*	*I was selling*
je donn **ais**	fin iss **ais**	vend **ais**
tu donn **ais**	fin iss **ais**	vend **ais**
il donn **ait**	fin iss **ait**	vend **ait**
nous donn **ions**	fin iss **ions**	vend **ions**
vous donn **iez**	fin iss **iez**	vend **iez**
ils donn **aient**	fin iss **aient**	vend **aient**

Past Definite Indicative

I gave	*I finished*	*I sold*
je donn **ai**	fin **is**	vend **is**
tu donn **as**	fin **is**	vend **is**
il donn **a**	fin **it**	vend **it**
nous donn **âmes**	fin **îmes**	vend **îmes**
vous donn **âtes**	fin **îtes**	vend **îtes**
ils donn **èrent**	fin **irent**	vend **irent**

Future Indicative

I shall give	*I shall finish*	*I shall sell*
je donner **ai**	finir **ai**	vendr **ai**
tu donner **as**	finir **as**	vendr **as**
il donner **a**	finir **a**	vendr **a**
nous donner **ons**	finir **ons**	vendr **ons**
vous donner **ez**	finir **ez**	vendr **ez**
ils donner **ont**	finir **ont**	vendr **ont**

Conditional

I should give	*I should finish*	*I should sell*
je donner **ais**	finir **ais**	vendr **ais**
tu donner **ais**	finir **ais**	vendr **ais**
il donner **ait**	finir **ait**	vendr **ait**
nous donner **ions**	finir **ions**	vendr **ions**
vous donner **iez**	finir **iez**	vendr **iez**
ils donner **aient**	finir **aient**	vendr **aient**

Imperative

give	*finish*	*sell*
donn **e**	fin **is**	vend **s**
donn **ons**	fin **iss ons**	vend **ons**
donn **ez**	fin **iss ez**	vend **ez**

Present Subjunctive

I may give	*I may finish*	*I may sell*
je donn **e**	fin **iss e**	vend **e**
tu donn **es**	fin **iss es**	vend **es**
il donn **e**	fin **iss e**	vend **e**
nous donn **ions**	fin **iss ions**	vend **ions**
vous donn **iez**	fin **iss iez**	vend **iez**
ils donn **ent**	fin **iss ent**	vend **ent**

Imperfect Subjunctive

I might give	*I might finish*	*I might sell*
je donn asse	fin isse	vend isse
tu donn asses	fin isses	vend isses
il donn ât	fin ît	vend ît
nous donn assions	fin issions	vend issions
vous donn assiez	fin issiez	vend issiez
ils donn assent	fin issent	vend issent

Synopsis of Compound Tenses

(*formed with* **avoir**)

Indicative Past Indefinite:	j'ai donné, fini, vendu, etc.	*I have given*, etc.
" Pluperfect:	j'avais donné, etc.	*I had given*, etc.
" Past Anterior:	j'eus donné, etc.	*I had given*, etc.
" Future Perfect:	j'aurai donné, etc.	*I shall have given*, etc.
Conditional Perfect:	j'aurais donné, etc.	*I should have given*, etc.
Subjunctive Perfect:	j'aie donné, etc.	*I may have given*, etc.
" Pluperfect:	j'eusse donné, etc.	*I might have given*, etc.

(*formed with* **être**)

Indicative Past Indefinite:	je suis allé (allée), etc.	*I have gone*, etc.
" Pluperfect:	j'étais allé, etc.	*I had gone*, etc.
" Past Anterior:	je fus allé, etc.	*I had gone*, etc.
" Future Perfect:	je serai allé, etc.	*I shall have gone*, etc.
Conditional Perfect:	je serais allé, etc.	*I should have gone*, etc.
Subjunctive Perfect:	je sois allé, etc.	*I may have gone*, etc.
" Pluperfect:	je fusse allé, etc.	*I might have gone*, etc.

Compound Infinitives

Perfect Infinitive: **avoir donné**, etc., *to have given*, etc.
être allé, etc., *to have gone*, etc.

Compound Participles

Perfect Participle: **ayant donné**, etc., *having given*, etc.
étant allé, etc., *having gone*, etc.

Auxiliary Verbs

Infinitive

avoir, *to have* — **être**, *to be*

Present Participle

ayant, *having* — **étant**, *being*

Past Participle

eu, *had* — **été**, *been*

Present Indicative

j'ai, *I have*, etc.	je suis, *I am*, etc.
tu as	tu es
il a	il est
nous avons	nous sommes
vous avez	vous êtes
ils ont	ils sont

Imperfect Indicative

j'avais, *I had*, etc.	j'étais, *I was*, etc.
tu avais	tu étais
il avait	il était
nous avions	nous étions
vous aviez	vous étiez
ils avaient	ils étaient

Past Definite Indicative

j'eus, *I had*, etc.	je fus, *I was*, etc.
tu eus	tu fus
il eut	il fut
nous eûmes	nous fûmes
vous eûtes	vous fûtes
ils eurent	ils furent

Future Indicative

j'aurai, *I shall have*, etc.	je serai, *I shall be*, etc.
tu auras	tu seras
il aura	il sera
nous aurons	nous serons
vous aurez	vous serez
ils auront	ils seront

Conditional

j'aurais, *I should have*, etc.	je serais, *I should be*, etc.
tu aurais	tu serais
il aurait	il serait
nous aurions	nous serions
vous auriez	vous seriez
ils auraient	ils seraient

Imperative

aie, *have*, etc.	sois, *be*, etc.
ayons	soyons
ayez	soyez

Present Subjunctive

j'aie, *I may have*, etc.	je sois, *I may be*, etc.
tu aies	tu sois
il ait	il soit
nous ayons	nous soyons
vous ayez	vous soyez
ils aient	ils soient

Imperfect Subjunctive

j'eusse, *I might have*, etc.	je fusse, *I might be*, etc.
tu eusses	tu fusses
il eût	il fût
nous eussions	nous fussions
vous eussiez	vous fussiez
ils eussent	ils fussent

TABLE OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS

Simple Verbs

In the following table the principal parts are printed in dark type, except the present indicative first person singular, which is italicized (except when the imperative singular is not identical with it).

The italicized forms are those of the imperative.

The future alone is given under the infinitive (the conditional invariably having the same stem, with the ending **–ais**).

Under the present participle only the imperfect indicative is given — the other derivative forms: the present plural (indicative and imperative) and the present subjunctive are on the opposite page (along with the present indicative singular).

Under the past participle is given the auxiliary used in forming the compound tenses.

Under the past definite is given the imperfect subjunctive.

Infinitive	Pres. Par.	Past Par.	Pres. Ind.	Past Def.
Absoudre, absolve (like **résoudre**)[1]				
Acquérir, acquire	**acquérant**	**acquis**	*acquiers*	**acquis**
acquerrai	acquérais	avoir —		acquisse
Aller, go	**allant**	**allé**	**vais**[2]	**allai**
irai	allais	être —		allasse
Assaillir, assail (like **tressaillir**)				
Asseoir,[3] seat	**asseyant**	**assis**	*assieds*	**assis**
assiérai	asseyais	avoir —		assisse
Astreindre, constrain (like **atteindre**)				
Atteindre, attain	**atteignant**	**atteint**	*atteins*	**atteignis**
fut. reg.	atteignais	avoir —		atteignisse
Avoir, have	**ayant**	**eu**	**ai**	**eus**
aurai	avais	avoir —		eusse
Boire, drink	**buvant**	**bu**	*bois*	**bus**
fut. reg.	buvais	avoir —		busse
Bouillir, boil	**bouillant**	**bouilli**	*bous*	**bouillis**
fut. reg.	bouillais	avoir —		bouillisse
Ceindre, gird (like **atteindre**)				
Circonscrire, circumscribe (like **inscrire**)				
Clore, close		**clos**	**clos**	
fut. reg.		avoir —		
Concevoir, conceive	**concevant**	**conçu**	*conçois*	**conçus**
concevrai	concevais	avoir —		conçusse
Conclure, conclude	**concluant**	**conclu**	*conclus*	**conclus**
fut. reg.	concluais	avoir —		conclusse
Conduire conduct	**conduisant**	**conduit**	*conduis*	**conduisis**
fut. reg.	conduisais	avoir —		conduisisse
Confire, pickle	**confisant**	**confit**	*confis*	**confis**
fut. reg.	confisais	avoir —		confisse
Connaître, know	**connaissant**	**connu**	*connais*	**connus**
fut. reg.	connaissais	avoir —		connusse
Conquérir, conquer (like **aquérir**)				
Construire, construct	**construisant**	**construit**	*construis*	**construisis**
fut. reg.	construisais	avoir —		construisisse
Contraindre, constrain (like **craindre**)				
Coudre, sew	**cousant**	**cousu**	*couds*	**cousis**
fut. reg.	cousais	avoir —		cousisse

[1] Past participle: **absous, absoute.**

[3] Rarer forms: Pres. Ind. **assois**; Pres. Subj.

Present Indicative and Subjunctive

acquiers	acquiers	acquiert	*acquérons*	*acquérez*	acquièrent
acquière	acquières	acquière	acquérions	acquériez	acquièrent
vais	vas	va	*allons*	*allez*	vont
aille	ailles	aille	allions	alliez	aillent
assieds	assieds	assied	*asseyons*	*asseyez*	asseyent
asseye	asseyes	asseye	asseyions	asseyiez	asseyent
atteins	atteins	atteint	*atteignons*	*atteignez*	atteignent
atteigne	atteignes	atteigne	atteignions	atteigniez	atteignent
ai	as	a	avons	avez	ont
aie	aies	ait	ayons	ayez	aient
Imper.:	*aie*		*ayons*	*ayez*	
bois	bois	boit	*buvons*	*buvez*	boivent
boive	boives	boive	buvions	buviez	boivent
bous	bous	bout	*bouillons*	*bouillez*	bouillent
bouille	bouilles	bouille	bouillions	bouilliez	bouillent
clos	clos	clôt			
close	closes	close			
conçois	conçois	conçoit	*concevons*	*concevez*	conçoivent
conçoive	conçoives	conçoive	concevions	conceviez	conçoivent
conclus	conclus	conclut	*concluons*	*concluez*	concluent
conclue	conclues	conclue	concluions	concluiez	concluent
conduis	conduis	conduit	*conduisons*	*conduisez*	conduisent
conduise	conduises	conduise	conduisions	conduisiez	conduisent
confis	confis	confit	*confisons*	*confisez*	confisent
confise	confises	confise	confisions	confisiez	confisent
connais	connais	connaît	*connaissons*	*connaissez*	connaissent
connaisse	connaisses	connaisse	connaissions	connaissiez	connaissent
construis	construis	construit	*construisons*	*construisez*	construisent
construise	construises	construise	construisions	construisiez	construisent
couds	couds	coud	*cousons*	*cousez*	cousent
couse	couses	couse	cousions	cousiez	cousent

[2] Imperative va (vas before y or en).
assoie; Imper. assoyais; Fut. assoirai, asseyerai.

Infinitive	Pres. Par.	Past Par.	Pres. Ind.	Past Def.
Courir, run	**courant**	**couru**	*cours*	**courus**
courrai	courais	avoir —		courusse
Couvrir, cover (like **ouvrir**)				
Craindre, fear	**craignant**	**craint**	*crains*	**craignis**
fut. reg.	craignais	avoir —		craignisse
Croire, believe	**croyant**	**cru**	*crois*	**crus**
fut. reg.	croyais	avoir —		crusse
Croître, grow	**croissant**	**crû**	*croîs*	**crûs**
fut. reg.	croissais	avoir, être —		crûsse
Cueillir, gather	**cueillant**	**cueilli**	*cueille*	**cueillis**
cueillerai	cueillais	avoir —		cueillisse
Cuire, cook	**cuisant**	**cuit**	*cuis*	**cuisis**
fut. reg.	cuisais	avoir —		cuisisse
Décevoir, deceive (like **concevoir**)				
Déchoir, fall		**déchu**	*déchois*	**déchus**
décherrai	déchoyais	avoir, être —		déchusse
(déchoirai)				
Déduire, deduce (like **conduire**)				
Détruire, destroy	**détruisant**	détruit	*détruis*	détruisis
fut. reg.	détruisais	avoir —		détruisisse
Devoir, owe	**devant**	**dû**	*dois*	**dus**
devrai	devais	avoir —		dusse
Dire, say	**disant**	**dit**	*dis*	**dis**
fut. reg.	disais	avoir —		disse
Dissoudre, dissolve (like **résoudre**)[1]				
Dormir, sleep	**dormant**	**dormi**	*dors*	**dormis**
fut. reg.	dormais	avoir —		dormisse
Échoir, fall (like **déchoir**)[2]				
Écrire, write	**écrivant**	**écrit**	*écris*	**écrivis**
fut. reg.	écrivais	avoir —		écrivisse
Empreindre, imprint (like **atteindre**)				
Enduire, coat (like **conduire**)				
Enfreindre, infringe (like **atteindre**)				
Envoyer, send (*reg.* except Fut. **enverrai**)				
Éteindre, extinguish (like **atteindre**)				
Être, be	**étant**	**été**	**suis**	**fus**
serai	étais	avoir —		fusse
Étreindre, hug (like **atteindre**)				

[1] Past participle: **dissous, dissoute.**

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

cours	cours	court	*courons*	*courez*	courent
coure	coures	coure	courions	couriez	courent
crains	crains	craint	*craignons*	*craignez*	craignent
craigne	craignes	craigne	craignions	craigniez	craignent
crois	crois	croit	*croyons*	*croyez*	croient
croie	croies	croie	croyions	croyiez	croient
croîs	croîs	croît	*croissons*	*croissez*	croissent
croisse	croisses	croisse	croissions	croissiez	croissent
cueille	cueilles	cueille	*cueillons*	*cueillez*	cueillent
cueille	cueilles	cueille	cueillions	cueilliez	cueillent
cuis	cuis	cuit	*cuisons*	*cuisez*	cuisent
cuise	cuises	cuise	cuisions	cuisiez	cuisent
déchois	déchois	déchoit, déchet	*déchoyons*	*déchoyez*	déchoient
déchoie	déchoies	déchoie	déchoyions	déchoyiez	déchoient
détruis	détruis	détruit	*détruisons*	*détruisez*	détruisent
détruise	détruises	détruise	détruisions	détruisiez	détruisent
dois	dois	doit	*devons*	*devez*	doivent
doive	doives	doive	devions	deviez	doivent
dis	dis	dit	*disons*	*dites*	disent
dise	dises	dise	disions	disiez	disent
dors	dors	dort	*dormons*	*dormez*	dorment
dorme	dormes	dorme	dormions	dormiez	dorment
écris	écris	écrit	*écrivons*	*écrivez*	écrivent
écrive	écrives	écrive	écrivions	écriviez	écrivent

suis	es	est	sommes	êtes	sont
sois	sois	soit	soyons	soyez	soient
IMPER.:	*sois*		*soyons*	*soyez*	

[2] Present participle: **échéant.**

Infinitive	Pres. Par.	Past Par.	Pres. Ind.	Past Def.
Exclure, exclude (like **conclure**)				
Faillir,[1] fail, miss	**faillant**	**failli**	**faux**	**faillis**
faudra	faillais	avoir —		faillisse
Faire, do, make	**faisant**	**fait**	*fais*	**fis**
ferai	faisais	avoir —		fisse
Falloir, be necessary		**fallu**	**il faut**	**il fallut**
il faudra	il fallait	avoir —		il fallût
Feindre, feign (like **atteindre**)				
Frire, fry (like **rire**[2])				
Fuir, flee	**fuyant**	**fui**	*fuis*	**fuis**
fut. reg.	fuyais	avoir —		fuisse
Geindre, groan (like **atteindre**)				
Gésir, lie	**gisant**			
	gisais			
Haïr, hate			*hais*	
Induire, induce (like **conduire**)				
Inscrire, inscribe	**inscrivant**	**inscrit**	*inscris*	**inscrivis**
fut. reg.	inscrivais	avoir —		inscrivisse
Instruire, instruct (like **construire**)				
Introduire, introduce (like **conduire**)				
Joindre, join	**joignant**	**joint**	*joins*	**joignis**
fut. reg.	joignais	avoir —		joignisse
Lire, read	**lisant**	**lu**	*lis*	**lus**
fut. reg.	lisais	avoir —		lusse
Luire, shine	**luisant**	**lui**	*luis*	[luisis]
fut. reg.	luisais	avoir —		[luisisse]
Maudire, curse	**maudissant**	**maudit**	*maudis*	**maudis**
fut. reg.	maudissais	avoir —		maudisse
Mentir, lie	**mentant**	**menti**	*mens*	**mentis**
fut. reg.	mentais	avoir —		mentisse
Mettre, put	**mettant**	**mis**	*mets*	**mis**
fut. reg.	mettais	avoir —		misse
Moudre, grind	**moulant**	**moulu**	*mouds*	**moulus**
fut. reg.	moulais	avoir —		moulusse
Mourir, die	**mourant**	**mort**	*meurs*	**mourus**
mourrai	mourais	être —		mourusse
Mouvoir, move	**mouvant**	**mu**	*meus*	**mus**
mouvrai	mouvais	avoir —		musse

[1] Most forms are obsolete.

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

faux	faux	faut	*faillons*	*faillez*	faillent
faille	failles	faille	faillions	failliez	faillent
fais	fais	fait	*faisons*	*faites*	font
fasse	fasses	fasse	fassions	fassiez	fassent
		il faut			
		il faille			
fuis	fuis	fuit	*fuyons*	*fuyez*	fuient
fuie	fuies	fuie	fuyions	fuyiez	fuient
		gît	gisons	gisez	gisent
hais	hais	hait	[all other forms are regular]		
inscris	inscris	inscrit	*inscrivons*	*inscrivez*	inscrivent
inscrive	inscrives	inscrive	inscrivions	inscriviez	inscrivent
joins	joins	joint	*joignons*	*joignez*	joignent
joigne	joignes	joigne	joignions	joigniez	joignent
lis	lis	lit	*lisons*	*lisez*	lisent
lise	lises	lise	lisions	lisiez	lisent
luis	luis	luit	*luisons*	*luisez*	luisent
luise	luises	luise	luisions	luisiez	luisent
maudis	maudis	maudit	*maudissons*	*maudissez*	maudissent
maudisse	maudisses	maudisse	maudissions	maudissiez	maudissent
mens	mens	ment	*mentons*	*mentez*	mentent
mente	mentes	mente	mentions	mentiez	mentent
mets	mets	met	*mettons*	*mettez*	mettent
mette	mettes	mette	mettions	mettiez	mettent
mouds	mouds	moud	*moulons*	*moulez*	moulent
moule	moules	moule	moulions	mouliez	moulent
meurs	meurs	meurt	*mourons*	*mourez*	meurent
meure	meures	meure	mourions	mouriez	meurent
meus	meus	meut	*mouvons*	*mouvez*	meuvent
meuve	meuves	meuve	mouvions	mouviez	meuvent

[2] Past participle: frit. Many forms obsolete.

Infinitive	Pres. Par.	Past Par.	Pres. Ind.	Past Def.
Naître, be born	**naissant**	**né**	*nais*	**naquis**
fut. reg.	naissais	être —		naquisse
Nuire, injure	**nuisant**	**nui**	*nuis*	**nuisis**
fut. reg.	nuisais	avoir —		nuisisse
Offrir, offer	**offrant**	**offert**	*offre*	**offris**
fut. reg.	offrais	avoir —		offrisse
Oindre, anoint (like **joindre**)				
Ouvrir, open	**ouvrant**	**ouvert**	*ouvre*	**ouvris**
fut. reg.	ouvrais	avoir —		ouvrisse
Paître, pasture (like **paraître**)				
Paraître, appear	**paraissant**	**paru**	*parais*	**parus**
fut. reg.	paraissais	avoir —		parusse
Partir, depart	**partant**	**parti**	*pars*	**partis**
fut. reg.	partais	être —		partisse
Peindre, paint	**peignant**	**peint**	*peins*	**peignis**
fut. reg.	peignais	avoir —		peignisse
Percevoir, perceive (like **concevoir**)				
Plaindre, pity (like **craindre**)				
Plaire, please	**plaisant**	**plu**	*plais*	**plus**
fut. reg.	plaisais	avoir —		plusse
Pleuvoir, rain	**pleuvant**	**plu**	**il pleut**	**il plut**
il pleuvra	il pleuvait	avoir —		il plût
Poindre, pierce (like **joindre**)				
Pouvoir, be able	**pouvant**	**pu**	**peux, puis**	**pus**
pourrai	pouvais	avoir —		pusse
Prendre, take	**prenant**	**pris**	*prends*	**pris**
fut. reg.	prenais	avoir —		prisse
Prescrire, prescribe (like **inscrire**)				
Produire, produce (like **conduire**)				
Proscrire, proscribe (like **inscrire**)				
Recevoir, receive (like **concevoir**				
Réduire, reduce (like **conduire**)				
Repentir (*se*), repent (like **sentir**)				
Requérir, require (like **acquérir**)				
Résoudre, resolve	**résolvant**	**résolu**	*résous*	**résolus**
fut. reg.	résolvais	avoir —		résolusse
Restreindre, restrain (like **atteindre**)				

[1] From the participial

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

nais	nais	naît	*naissons*	*naissez*	naissent
naisse	naisses	naisse	naissions	naissiez	naissent
nuis	nuis	nuit	*nuisons*	*nuisez*	nuisent
nuise	nuises	nuise	nuisions	nuisiez	nuisent
offre	offres	offre	*offrons*	*offrez*	offrent
offre	offres	offre	offrions	offriez	offrent
ouvre	ouvres	ouvre	*ouvrons*	*ouvrez*	ouvrent
ouvre	ouvres	ouvre	ouvrions	ouvriez	ouvrent
parais	parais	paraît	*paraissons*	*paraissez*	paraissent
paraisse	paraisses	paraisse	paraissions	paraissiez	paraissent
pars	pars	part	*partons*	*partez*	partent
parte	partes	parte	partions	partiez	partent
peins	peins	peint	*peignons*	*peignez*	peignent
peigne	peignes	peigne	peignions	peigniez	peignent
plais	plais	plaît	*plaisons*	*plaisez*	plaisent
plaise	plaises	plaise	plaisions	plaisiez	plaisent
		il pleut			pleuvent
		il pleuve			
peux *or* puis	peux	peut	pouvons	pouvez	peuvent
			(no imperatives)		
puisse[1]	puisses	puisse	puissions	puissiez	puissent
prends	prends	prend	*prenons*	*prenez*	prennent
prenne	prennes	prenne	prenions	preniez	prennent
résous	résous	résout	*résolvons*	*résolvez*	résolvent
résolve	résolves	résolve	résolvions	resolviez	résolvent

[1] adjective puissant.

Infinitive	Pres. Par.	Past Par.	Pres. Ind.	Past Def.
Rire, laugh	**riant**	**ri**	*ris*	**ris**
fut. reg.	riais	avoir —		risse
Savoir, know	**sachant**	**su**	**sais**	**sus**
saurai	savais	avoir —		susse
Séduire, seduce (like **conduire**)				
Sentir, feel	**sentant**	**senti**	*sens*	**sentis**
fut. reg.	sentais	avoir —		sentisse
Seoir, suit, fit (like **asseoir**)[1]				
Servir, serve	**servant**	**servi**	*sers*	**servis**
fut. reg.	servais	avoir —		servisse
Sortir, go out	**sortant**	**sorti**	*sors*	**sortis**
fut. reg.	sortais	être —		sortisse
Souffrir, suffer	**souffrant**	**souffert**	*souffre*	**souffris**
fut. reg.	souffrais	avoir —		souffrisse
Souscrire, subscribe (like **inscrire**)				
Suffire, suffice	**suffisant**	**suffi**	*suffis*	**suffis**
fut. reg.	suffisais	avoir —		suffisse
Suivre, follow	**suivant**	**suivi**	*suis*	**suivis**
fut. reg.	suivais	avoir —		suivisse
Taire, keep still	**taisant**	**tu**	*tais*	**tus**
fut. reg.	taisais	avoir —		tusse
Teindre, dye (like **atteindre**)				
Tenir,[2] hold	**tenant**	**tenu**	*tiens*	**tins**
tiendrai	tenais	avoir —		tinsse
Traduire, translate (like **conduire**)				
Traire, milk	**trayant**	**trait**	*trais*	—
fut. reg.	trayais	avoir —		—
Transcrire, transcribe (like **inscrire**)				
Tressaillir, start	**tressaillant**	**tressailli**	*tressaille*	tressaillis
fut. reg.	tressaillais	avoir —		tressaillisse
Vaincre,[3] vanquish	**vainquant**	**vaincu**	*vaincs*	**vainquis**
fut. reg.	vainquais	avoir —		vainquisse
Valoir, be worth	**valant**	**valu**	*vaux*	**valus**
vaudrai	valais	avoir —		valusse
Venir,[2] come	**venant**	**venu**	*viens*	**vins**
viendrai	venais	être —		vinsse

[1] Few forms in use. Siéent occurs in Ind. Pres. 3d. Pl. and **séant** as present

[2] **Tenir** and **venir**, alike throughout, circumflex the past definite plurals **tînmes**,

[3] **Vaincre** is irregular only in spelling.

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

ris	ris	rit	*rions*	*riez*	rient
rie	ries	rie	riions	riiez	rient
sais	sais	sait	savons	savez	savent
sache	saches	sache	sachions	sachiez	sachent
IMPER.:	*sache*		*sachons*	*sachez*	
sens	sens	sent	*sentons*	*sentez*	sentent
sente	sentes	sente	sentions	sentiez	sentent
sers	sers	sert	*servons*	*servez*	servent
serve	serves	serve	servions	serviez	servent
sors	sors	sort	*sortons*	*sortez*	sortent
sorte	sortes	sorte	sortions	sortiez	sortent
souffre	souffres	souffre	*souffrons*	*souffrez*	souffrent
souffre	souffres	souffre	souffrions	souffriez	souffrent
suffis	suffis	suffit	*suffisons*	*suffisez*	suffisent
suffise	suffises	suffise	suffisions	suffisiez	suffisent
suis	suis	suit	*suivons*	*suivez*	suivent
suive	suives	suive	suivions	suiviez	suivent
tais	tais	tait	*taisons*	*taisez*	taisent
taise	taises	taise	taisions	taisiez	taisent
tiens	tiens	tient	*tenons*	*tenez*	tiennent
tienne	tiennes	tienne	tenions	teniez	tiennent
trais	trais	trait	*trayons*	*trayez*	traient
traie	traies	traie	trayions	trayiez	traient
tressaille	tressailles	tressaille	*tressaillons*	*tressaillez*	tressaillent
tressaille	tressailles	tressaille	tressaillions	tressailliez	tressaillent
vaincs	vaincs	vainc	*vainquons*	*vainquez*	vainquent
vainque	vainques	vainque	vainquions	vainquiez	vainquent
vaux	vaux	vaut	*valons*	*valez*	valent
vaille	vailles	vaille	valions	valiez	vaillent
viens	viens	vient	*venons*	*venez*	viennent
vienne	viennes	vienne	venions	veniez	viennent

participle.
vînmes; tîntes, vîntes, and the subjunctive third person singular tînt, vînt.

Infinitive	Pres. Par.	Past Par.	Pres. Ind.	Past Def.
Vêtir, clothe	**vêtant**	**vêtu**	*vêts*	**vêtis**
fut. reg.	vêtais	avoir —		vêtisse
Vivre, live	**vivant**	**vécu**	*vis*	**vécus**
fut. reg.	vivais	avoir —		vécusse
Voir, see	**voyant**	**vu**	*vois*	**vis**
verrai	voyais	avoir —		visse
Vouloir, wish	**voulant**	**voulu**	**veux**[1]	**voulus**
voudrai	voulais	avoir —		voulusse

[1] The imperative forms are hardly used, but **veuillez**

PRESENT INDICATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE

vêts	vêts	vêt	*vêtons*	*vêtez*	vêtent
vête	vêtes	vête	vêtions	vêtiez	vêtent
vis	vis	vit	*vivons*	*vivez*	vivent
vive	vives	vive	vivions	viviez	vivent
vois	vois	voit	*voyons*	*voyez*	voient
voie	voies	voie	voyions	voyiez	voient
veux	veux	veut	voulons	voulez	veulent
veuille	veuilles	veuille	voulions	vouliez	veuillent

(+infinitive), *please, be good enough to,* is common.

Compound Verbs

These are conjugated like the simple verbs (printed in **black type**). See pages 282–293.

abstenir, *abstain*
abstraire, *abstract*
accourir, *run up*
accroître, *increase*
accueillir, *receive*
admettre, *admit*
advenir, *happen*
apercevoir, *perceive*
apparaître, *appear*
appartenir, *belong*
apprendre, *learn, teach*
asseoir, *seat*
attraire, *attract*
commettre, *commit*
comparaître, *appear*
complaire, *be complaisant*
comprendre, *comprehend*
compromettre, *compromise*
concourir, *cooperate, compete*
consentir, *consent*
contenir, *contain*
contredire, *contradict*
NOTE. dîsez *not* dites in present indicative and imperative
contrefaire, *counterfeit*
contrevenir, *contravene*
convaincre, *convince*
convenir, *agree, suit*
déconfire, *discomfit*
découdre, *unsew*
découvrir, *discover*
décrire, *describe*
décroître, *decrease*
dédire, *unsay* (see **contredire**)
défaillir, *fail, faint*
défaire, *undo*
démentir, *give the lie*
démettre, *put out*
départir, *distribute*
dépeindre, *depict*
déplaire, *displease*
désapprendre, *unlearn*
desservir, *clear* (table)
déteindre, *fade*
détenir, *detain*
devenir, *become*
dévêtir, *undress*
disconvenir, *disagree*
discourir, *discourse*
disjoindre, *disjoin*
disparaître, *disappear*
distraire, *distract*
éclore, *hatch*
(éclosent, éclôra, éclôront occur in the present and future)
éconduire, *show out* (politely)
élire, *elect*
émettre, *emit*
émouvoir, *move*
encourir, *incur*
endormir, *put to sleep*
enfuir, *flee*
enjoindre, *enjoin*
s'ensuivre, *follow*
entreprendre, *undertake*
entretenir, *maintain*
entrevoir, *catch a glimpse of*
s'éprendre, *be enamored*

équivaloir, *be equivalent*
extraire, *extract*
forfaire, *offend*
interdire, *interdict*
(See **contredire**)
intervenir, *intervene*
maintenir, *maintain*
méconnaître, *fail to know*
médire, *speak ill of*
(See **contredire**)
méfaire, *do wrong*
méprendre, *mistake*
obtenir, *obtain*
omettre, *omit*
parcourir, *run through*
parvenir, *reach*
permettre, *permit*
poursuivre, *pursue*
pourvoir, *provide*
NOTE. fut. **pourvoirai**, past. def. **pourvus**
prédire, *predict*
(See **contredire**)
pressentir, *have a presentiment*
prévaloir, *prevail*
prévenir, *forestall*
prévoir, *foresee* (fut. **prévoirai**)
promettre, *promise*
provenir, *be derived*
rapprendre, *re-learn*
rasseoir, *reseat*
reconduire, *reconduct*
reconnaître, *recognize*
reconquérir, *reconquer*
reconstruire, *reconstruct*
recoudre, *resew*
recourir, *have recourse*
recouvrir, *re-cover*
récrire, *write again*
recueillir, *gather up*
redevenir, *become again*
redire, *repeat*
réélire, *reelect*
refaire, *make again*
rejoindre, *rejoin*
relire, *reread*
reluire, *shine*
remettre, *remit*
rendormir, *put to sleep again*
renaître, *be born again*
renvoyer, *send away*
repaître, *feast*
repartir, *depart again*
repeindre, *repaint*
reprendre, *retake, resume*
ressentir, *feel, resent*
ressortir, *go out again*
se ressouvenir, *remember*
retenir, *retain*
revenir, *come back*
revêtir, *clothe*
revivre, *revive*
revoir, *see again*
rouvrir, *reopen*
satisfaire, *satisfy*
secourir, *succor*
soumettre, *submit*
sourire, *smile*
soustraire, *take away*
soutenir, *sustain*
se souvenir, *remember*
surfaire, *overrate*
surprendre, *surprise*
survenir, *come up*
survivre, *survive*
transmettre, *transmit*

I

Class-room Words and Phrases

1. Do you know?	**Savez-vous?** [save vu]
2. I don't know	**Je ne sais pas** [ʒə nə se pa]
3. Do you understand?	**Comprenez-vous?** [kɔ̃prəne vu]
4. I don't understand	**Je ne comprends pas** [ʒə nə kɔ̃prɑ̃ pɑ]
5. Do you wish —? Will you —?	**Voulez-vous—?** [vule vu]
6. Don't forget!	**N'oubliez pas!** [nublie pɑ]
7. I have forgotten	**J'ai oublié** [ʒe ublie]
8. Rise!	**Levez-vous!** [ləve vu]
9. Sit down!	**Asseyez-vous!** [asɛje vu]
10. Tell me!	**Dites-moi!** [dit mwa]
11. Pronounce! repeat!	**Prononcez!** [prɔnɔ̃se]; **répétez!** [repete]
12. Translate! read!	**Traduisez!** [tradyize]; **lisez!** [lize]
13. Notice! listen!	**Remarquez!** [rəmarke]; **écoutez!** [ekute]
14. Begin! go on!	**Commencez!** [kɔmɑ̃se]; **continuez!** [kɔ̃tinye]
15. Answer! explain!	**Répondez!** [repɔ̃de]; **expliquez!** [ɛksplike]
16. Study! prepare!	**Étudiez!** [etydje]; **préparez!** [prepare]
17. Correct! tell!	**Corrigez!** [kɔriʒe]; **racontez!** [rakɔ̃te]
18. Go! wait!	**Allez!** [ale]; **attendez!** [atɑ̃de]
19. Write! erase!	**Écrivez!** [ekrive]; **effacez!** [ɛfase]
20. Open! close!	**Ouvrez!** [uvre]; **fermez!** [fɛrme]
21. Pay attention to —!	**Faites attention à—!** [fɛt zatɑ̃sjɔ̃ a]
22. Raise your hand!	**Levez la main!** [ləve la mɛ̃]

23. What does — mean? **Que veut dire—?** [kə vø diːr]
24. How do you say — in French? **Comment dit-on—en français?** [kɔmɑ̃ di tɔ̃ ɑ̃ frɑ̃sɛ]
25. How do you spell —? **Comment écrit-on —?** [kɔmɑ̃ tekri tɔ̃]
26. What is the lesson for —? **Quelle est la leçon pour —?** [kɛl ɛ la ləsɔ̃ puːr]
27. To-day; to-morrow **Aujourd'hui** [oʒurdyi]; **demain** [dəmɛ̃]
28. Aloud **À haute voix** [a ot vwa]
29. Please **S'il vous plaît** [sil vu plɛ]
30. Very well; that's enough; that's right **C'est bien** [sɛ bjɛ̃]
31. That's all **C'est tout** [sɛ tu]
32. At the top of the page **Au haut de la page** [o o də la paːʒ]
33. At the bottom of the page **Au bas de la page** [o bɑ də la paːʒ]

---

la ligne [liɲ], line
la partie [parti], part
la règle [rɛgl], rule
la locution [lɔkysjɔ̃], expression
l'examen [lɛgzamɛ̃] (*m.*), examination
l'étudiant [letydjɑ̃] (*m.*), student
la feuille de papier [fœːj də papje], sheet of paper
le vocabulaire [vɔkabylɛːr], vocabulary
la grammaire [gramɛːr], grammar
la traduction [tradyksjɔ̃], translation
en français [ɑ̃ frɑ̃sɛ], in French
en anglais [ɑ̃ nɑ̃glɛ], in English
le thème [tɛm], translation into French
la version [vɛrsjɔ̃], translation into English
la lecture [lɛktyːr], reading
l'exercice [lɛgzɛrsis] (*m.*), exercise, drill
oral [ɔral], oral
écrit [ekri], written
le tableau noir [tablo nwaːr], blackboard
la craie [krɛ], chalk
la conversation [kɔ̃vɛrsɑsjɔ̃], conversation
l'orthographe [lɔrtɔgraf] (*f.*), spelling
l'apostrophe [lapɔstrɔf] (*f.*), apostrophe
majuscule [maʒyskyl], capital (letter)
minuscule [minyskyl], small (letter)
la prononciation [prɔnɔ̃sjɑsjɔ̃], pronunciation
la voyelle [vwajɛl], vowel; **la — brève** [brɛːv], **longue** [lɔ̃ːg], **nasale** [nazal], short, long, nasal vowel
la consonne [kɔ̃sɔn], consonant
l'accent [laksɑ̃] (*m.*), accent

la **lèvre** [lɛːvr], lip
la **langue** [lɑ̃ːg], tongue
la **syllabe** [silab], syllable
trop vite [tro vit], too fast
lentement [lɑ̃tmɑ̃], slowly
l'**élision** [lelizjɔ̃] (*f.*), elision
la **liaison** [ljɛzɔ̃], linking
l'**h muette** [laʃ myɛt], h mute
l'**h aspirée** [laʃ aspire], h aspirate
le **genre** [ʒɑ̃ːr], gender
le **nombre** [nɔ̃ːbr], number
le **masculin** [maskylɛ̃], masculine
le **féminin** [feminɛ̃], feminine
le **singulier** [sɛ̃gylje], singular
le **pluriel** [plyrjɛl], plural
la **première personne** [prəmjɛːr pɛrsɔn], first person
la **forme** [fɔrm], form
la **formation** [fɔrmɑsjɔ̃], formation
le **gallicisme** [galisism], Gallicism
l'**idiotisme** [lidjɔtism] (*m.*), idiom
l'**accord** [lakɔːr] (*m.*), agreement
l'**emploi** [lɑ̃plwa] (*m.*), use
la **terminaison** [tɛrminɛzɔ̃], ending
le **partitif** [partitif], partitive
la **syntaxe** [sɛ̃taks], syntax
régulier [regylje], regular
irrégulier [iregylje], irregular
négatif [negatif], negative
le **nom** [nɔ̃], noun
la **préposition** [prepozisjɔ̃], preposition
l'**article** [lartikl] (*m.*), article
défini [defini], definite
indéfini [ɛ̃defini], indefinite
la **conjonction** [kɔ̃ʒɔ̃ksjɔ̃], conjunction
l'**adverbe** [ladvɛrb] (*m.*), adverb
l'**adjectif** [ladʒɛktif (*m.*), adjective
la **comparaison** [kɔ̃parɛzɔ̃], comparison
le **positif** [pozitif], positive
le **comparatif** [kɔ̃paratif], comparative
le **superlatif** [sypɛrlatif], superlative
les **nombres** [nɔ̃ːbr], numbers
cardinaux [kardino], cardinals
ordinaux [ɔrdino], ordinals
le **pronom** [prɔnɔ̃], pronoun
personnel [pɛrsɔnɛl], personal
possessif [pɔsɛsif], possessive
démonstratif [demɔ̃stratif], demonstrative
relatif [rəlatif], relative
interrogatif [ɛ̃tɛrɔgatif], interrogative
conjoint [kɔ̃ʒwɛ̃], conjunctive
disjoint [disʒwɛ̃], disjunctive
le **régime direct** [reʒim dirɛkt], direct object
indirect [ɛ̃dirɛkt], indirect
le **pronom sujet** [syʒɛ], subject pronoun
le **pronom régime** [reʒim], object pronoun
le **verbe** [vɛrb], verb
transitif [trɑ̃zitif], transitive
intransitif [ɛ̃trɑ̃zitif], intransitive
la **conjugaison** [kɔ̃ʒygɛzɔ̃], conjugation
la **voix** [vwa], voice
actif, –ve [aktif, aktiːv], active
passif, –ve [pasif, pasiːv], passive
le **mode** [mɔd], mood
l'**infinitif** [lɛ̃finitif] (*m.*), infinitive
l'**indicatif** [lɛ̃dikatif] (*m.*), indicative
l'**impératif** [lɛ̃peratif] (*m.*), imperative
le **subjonctif** [sybʒɔ̃ktif], subjunctive
le **temps** [tɑ̃], tense

le présent [prezɑ̃], present
l'imparfait [lɛ̃parfɛ] (*m.*), imperfect
le passé défini [pase defini], past definite
le passé indéfini [pase ɛ̃defini], past indefinite
le futur [fyty:r], future
le conditionnel [kɔ̃disjɔnɛl], conditional
composé [kɔ̃poze], compound
auxiliaire [oksiljɛ:r], auxiliary
réfléchi [refleʃi], reflexive

II

Useful Phrases for Memorizing

1. Good morning! / Good day! — **Bonjour!** [bɔ̃ʒu:r]
2. Good evening! — **Bonsoir!** [bɔ̃swa:r]
3. Good-by! — **Au revoir!** [o rəvwa:r]
4. How are you? / How do you do? / How's your health? — **Comment vous portez-vous?** [kɔmɑ̃ vu pɔrte vu] / **Comment allez-vous?** [kɔmɑ̃ tale vu]
5. How's your sister? — **Comment se porte** (*or* **comment va**) **Mademoiselle votre sœur?** [kɔmɑ̃ sə pɔrt (va) madmwazɛl vɔtrə sœ:r]
6. I'm very well — **Je me porte très bien** [ʒə mə pɔrtə trɛ bjɛ̃]
7. How goes it? — **Comment ça va?** (*familiar*) [kɔmɑ̃ sa va]
8. Remember me to — — **Bien des choses à** — [bjɛ̃ de ʃo:z a] / **Mes compliments à** — [me kɔ̃plimɑ̃ za]
9. What's your name? — **Comment vous appelez-vous?** [kɔmɑ̃ vu zaple vu]
10. My name is — — **Je m'appelle** — [ʒə mapɛl]
11. It is three weeks since — — **Il y a trois semaines que** — [il ja trwa səmɛn kə]
12. What is the way to —? — **Quel est le chemin pour aller à** —? [kɛl ɛ lə ʃəmɛ̃ pu:r ale a]
13. Straight ahead — **Tout droit** [tu drwa]

14. What's that?	**Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela?** [kɛs kə sɛ kə səla]
15. What did you say? (=Please repeat)	**Comment?** *or* **Plaît-il?** [kɔmɑ̃; plɛ til]
16. What do you mean?	**Que voulez-vous dire?** [kə vule vu di:r]
17. What? What!	**Quoi? Quoi!** [kwa]
18. What's the use?	**À quoi bon?** [a kwa bɔ̃]
19. What's — good for?	**À quoi sert —?** [a kwa sɛ:r]
20. He uses a pen	**Il se sert d'une plume** [il sə sɛ:r dyn plym]
21. What's to be done? / 22. What shall I do?	**Que faire?** [kə fɛ:r]
23. What's your number?	**Quel est votre numéro?** [kɛl ɛ vətrə nymero]
24. What's the matter? / 25. Nothing	**Qu'est-ce que vous avez (qu'il a, etc.)?** [kɛs kə vu zave] / **Je n'ai rien** [ʒə ne rjɛ̃]
26. What's up?	**Qu'est-ce qu'il y a?** [kɛs kil ja]
27. What news?	**Quoi de nouveau?** [kwa də nuvo]
28. Nothing new	**Rien de nouveau** [rjɛ̃ də nuvo]
29. Have you heard from —?	**Avez-vous des nouvelles de —?** [ave vu de nuvɛl də]
30. I have not heard from —	**Je n'ai pas de nouvelles de —** [ʒə ne pɑ də nuvɛl də]
31. It makes no difference	**Cela ne fait rien** [səla nə fɛ rjɛ̃]
32. That will do, that's enough	**Cela suffit** [səla syfi]
33. I beg your pardon	**Pardon!** *or* **Je vous demande pardon** [ʒə vu dəmɑ̃:d pardɔ̃]
34. Excuse me!	**Pardon!** *or* **Excusez-moi!** [ɛkskyze mwa]
35. I should like —	**Je voudrais —** [ʒə vudrɛ]
36. When does the train leave?	**Quand part le train?** [kɑ̃ pa:r lə trɛ̃]
37. How far is it to —?	**À quelle distance est —?** [a kɛl distɑ̃:s ɛ]
38. Beside me	**À côté de moi** [a kote də mwa]
39. On the other side of —	**De l'autre côté de —** [də lo:trə kote də]

40. Does that suit you?	**Est-ce que cela vous convient?** [ɛs kə səla vu kɔ̃vjɛ̃]
41. That's just what I want	**Voilà mon affaire** [vwala mɔ̃ nafɛːr]
42. I'm very sorry	**Je suis bien fâché** [ʒə syi bjɛ̃ fɑ-ʃe]
43. That's none of my business	**Cela ne me regarde pas** [səla nə mə rəgard pɑ]
44. I think so	**Je le pense** [ʒə lə pɑ̃ːs]
45. I said so	**Je l'ai dit** [ʒə le di]
46. He looks well (French, funny, *etc.*)	**Il a l'air bien (français, drôle, *etc.*)** [il a lɛːr bjɛ̃, frɑ̃sɛ, droːl]
47. It's a pity / It's too bad	**C'est dommage** [sɛ dɔmaːʒ]
48. Look out!	**Attention!** [atɑ̃sjɔ̃]
49. The right book	**Le livre qu'il faut** [lə liːvr kil fo]
50. The wrong thing	**La chose qu'il ne faut pas** [la ʃoːz kil nə fo pɑ]
51. That's quite proper	**C'est comme il faut** [sɛ kɔm il fo]
52. That's improper	**Ce n'est pas comme il faut** [sə nɛ pɑ kɔm il fo]
53. So much the better!	**Tant mieux!** [tɑ̃ mjø]
54. So much the worse!	**Tant pis!** [tɑ̃ pi]
55. Of course	**Naturellement** [natyrɛlmɑ̃]
56. Have the kindness to —	**Ayez la bonté de —** [ɛje la bɔ̃te də]
57. Let's see!	**Voyons!** [vwajɔ̃]
58. Come! Come now!	**Voyons!** [vwajɔ̃]
59. All the same	**Tout de même** [tu də mɛːm]
60. Not at all	**Pas du tout** [pɑ dy tu]
61. Nothing at all	**Rien du tout** [rjɛ̃ dy tu]
62. All right!	**Très bien!** [trɛ bjɛ̃]
63. Be so good as to —	**Veuillez —** [vœje]
64. Don't mention it (=You're welcome)	**Il n'y a pas de quoi** [il nja pɑ də kwa]
65. Will you do me a favor?	**Voulez-vous me rendre un service?** [vule vu mə rɑ̃ːdr œ̃ sɛrvis]

66. I had a good time — **Je me suis bien amusé** [ʒə mə syi bjɛ̃ namyze]
67. A good trip to you! — **Bon voyage!** [bɔ̃ vwaja:ʒ]
68. To be ten feet long (wide) — **Avoir dix pieds de long (large)** [avwa:r di pje də lɔ̃, larʒ]
69. Ten feet deep — **Dix pieds de profondeur** [prəfɔ̃-dœ:r]
70. He is six feet tall — **Il a six pieds de taille** [il a si pje də taij]
71. Never mind! — **N'importe!** [nɛ̃pɔrt]
72. Some more meat (bread) — **Encore de la viande (du pain)** [ɑ̃kɔ:r də la vjɑ̃:d, dy pɛ̃]
73. Do you want some more? — **En voulez-vous encore?** [ɑ̃ vule vu zɑ̃kɔ:r]
74. Keep still (=Don't talk)! — **Taisez-vous!** [tɛze vu]
75. My native tongue — **Ma langue maternelle** [ma lɑ̃:g matɛrnɛl]
76. You are lucky — **Vous avez de la chance** [vu zave də la ʃɑ̃:s]
77. Reserve two seats for me — **Retenez deux places pour moi** [rətne dø plas pu:r mwa]
78. This way, gentlemen! — **Par ici, messieurs!** [pa:r isi mesjø]
79. On the way to France — **En route pour la France** [ɑ̃ rut pu:r la frɑ̃:s]
80. Abroad — **À l'étranger** [a letrɑ̃ʒe]
81. As for — — **Quant à —** [kɑ̃ ta]
82. He has just arrived — **Il vient d'arriver** [il vjɛ̃ darive]
83. To go away — **S'en aller*** [sɑ̃ nale]
84. He went away — **Il s'en est allé** [il sɑ̃ nɛ tale]
85. The question is to know whether — — **Il s'agit de savoir si —** [il saʒi də savwa:r si]
86. He asks in vain — **Il a beau demander** [il a bo dəmɑ̃de]
87. In the French manner — **À la française** [a la frɑ̃sɛ:z]
88. With blue eyes — **Aux yeux bleus** [o zjø blø]
89. With a gray beard — **À barbe grise** [a barbə gri:z]
90. He has a house built — **Il fait bâtir une maison** [il fɛ ba-ti:r yn mɛzɔ̃]

91. He has the doctor come	**Il fair venir le médecin** [il fɛ və-niːr lə medsɛ̃]
92. He has a grudge against his friend	**Il en veut à son ami** [il ɑ̃ vø ta sɔ̃ nami]
93. He has a grudge against him	**Il lui en veut** [il lyi ɑ̃ vø]
94. He starts to run	**Il se met à courir** [il sə mɛ ta kuriːr]
95. He is (busy) writing	**Il est en train d'écrire** [il ɛ tɑ̃ trɛ̃ dekriːr]
96. That is not worth while	**Cela ne vaut pas la peine** [səla nə vo pɑ la pɛn]
97. I agree with you	**Je suis d'accord avec vous** [ʒə syi dakɔːr avɛk vu]
98. Neither she nor he is . . .	**Ni elle ni lui n'est** [ni ɛl ni lyi nɛ] . . .
99. Nor I either	**Ni moi non plus** [ni mwa nɔ̃ ply]
100. So be it! all right!	**Soit!** [swat]
101. To stand	**Rester debout** [rɛste dəbu]
102. Somewhere	**Quelque part** [kɛlkə paːr]
103. Nowhere	**Nulle part** [nyl paːr]
104. He approaches him	**Il s'approche de lui** [il saprəʃ də lyi]
105. He makes fun of them	**Il se moque d'eux** [il sə mɔk dø]
106. He is a member of —	**Il fait partie de** — [il fɛ parti də]

SUMMARY OF GRAMMAR

NOUNS

481. Gender.[1]

Masculine: those designating males.

Feminine: those designating females, and most nouns ending in **-e: porte, ville; -é: bonté** (kindness), **amitié** (friendship); **-eur: chaleur** (heat), **hauteur** (height); **-ion: nation, confusion.**

[1] For more extensive rules for gender see §§ 557–559.

482. Number. To form the plural, add **s** to the singular: **école, écoles.**

Exceptions to the general rule:

Nouns ending in

1. **-s, -x, -z** remain unchanged: **temps, voix** (voice), **nez** (nose).
2. **-au, -eu**[1] add **-x: tableaux, jeux.**
3. **-al**[2] change **-al** to **-aux: cheval, chevaux.**[3]
4. Unclassified: **l'œil, les yeux.**
   le ciel, les cieux (but **les ciels** = skies in pictures).
   l'aïeul, les aïeux, ancestors (but **les aïeuls**=grandfathers).
   le bétail, les bestiaux (cattle).

[1] And the following seven in **-ou: bijou** (jewel), **caillou** (pebble), **chou** (cabbage), **genou** (knee), **hibou** (owl), **joujou** (plaything), **pou** (louse). But **clou** (nail), **clous; trou** (hole), **trous** etc.

[2] And a few in **-ail: travail, travaux; bail** (lease), **corail** (coral), **émail** (enamel), **vitrail** (stained glass window).

[3] Except: **bal** (ball, i.e. danse), **bals; carnaval, carnavals; chacal** (jackal), **chacals; régal** (treat), **régals.**

483. Articles. Definite (*the*):

	Contractions with **de**	*Contractions with* **à**
le livre	**du livre**	**au livre**
la table	**de la table**	**à la table**
l'école	**de l'école**	**à l'école**
les livres, les tables, les écoles	**des livres,** etc.	**aux livres,** etc.

Indefinite (*a, an*): **un homme, une femme.**

NOTE. The article and the prepositions are repeated before each noun they modify: **un homme et une femme, du livre et de la table.**

GENERAL AND PARTITIVE NOUN

484. With the general noun in English the definite article is sometimes used: *the* dog is an animal; it is regularly used in French:

J'aime les pommes,	I like apples.
Le courage est une vertu,	Courage is a virtue.

The partitive words in English are *some, any* (*no, none* = *not any*). These words are frequently omitted in English but may usually be supplied: he has (some) apples.

485. The partitive word in English (some, any, etc.) may be an adjective or a pronoun.

1. If *some* or *any* is an adjective it is expressed in French be **de** + the definite article (= *of the*): **du courage, des pommes.**

NOTE. The article is omitted, **de** standing alone:

(*a*) After a negative:[1]

Je n'ai pas d'argent.

(*b*) When an adj. precedes the noun. (See Permissible Deviations § 560,1):

J'ai de belles fleurs.

But: **J'ai des fleurs blanches.**

[1] With **ni** (neither) . . . **ni** (nor) both **de** and the article are omitted: **il n'a ni amis ni ennemis.**

Cases *c*) and *d*) do not trouble English-speaking students:

(*c*) In expressions of quantity and number: **assez de pain;**[1] **une grande quantité de pain; un mètre de soie** (silk).

(*d*) In the construction noun modifying noun: a gold watch, **une montre d'or;** a kitchen table, **une table de cuisine.**

2. If *some* or *any* is a pronoun, it is expressed by **en,** which is placed directly before the verb: **Il en a, En avez-vous?** See § 518.

NOTE. Do not omit **en** with numerals and adverbs of quantity: **Il en a six, Il en a assez.**

NOTES ON THE USE OF THE ARTICLES

486. Definite Article omitted in English. The definite article is employed in French in the following cases where it is omitted in English:

1. With general nouns (see § 484).

2. With proper names preceded by a title[2] or by an adjective: **le capitaine Fracasse, le petit Jean.**

3. With names of languages, except after **en** and with **parler: Il étudie le français, Dites cela en français, Il parle français** or **le français.**

4. With names of countries: **la France, le Canada.**

Except before **en** and **de** with *feminine* countries: **Il va en France, Il vient d'Italie;** but: **Il va au Canada, Il vient des Etats-Unis.**

[1] So with all the adverbs of quantity: see § 496.

But the article is not omitted with **bien des** = **beaucoup de** and **la plupart de; bien du travail,** much work; **bien des hommes,** many men; **la plupart des Américains,** most Americans.

[2] In direct address the article is omitted (**Docteur Morot, voulez-vous me dire . . .**); or **Monsieur** (**Madame,** etc.) is prefixed and the name is omitted (**Je vous prie, monsieur le capitaine, de vouloir bien . . .**).

5. With names of the days of the week except when "*next*" or "*last*" is expressed or understood: **Le dimanche est un jour de repos, Il vient le dimanche** (every Sunday), *but* **Il viendra dimanche** (*next* Sunday); and in dates: **le quinze avril,** April 15 (See §509).

6. With names of seasons, unless they are preceded by **en: L'été est beau.** But **en été, en automne, en hiver** (*cf.* **au printemps**).

7. In the following expressions and some others:

à l'école, à l'église, au collège, au marché (market).

l'année dernière (prochaine). Cf. § 493, 3.

il est le bienvenu, he is welcome.

faire la guerre (paix), garder le silence, avoir le temps, cet habit sent la fumée, this coat smells of smoke.

487. Definite Article omitted in French. The definite article is omitted in French:

1. With numerical titles (see § 503, Note 2).

2. Usually with nouns in apposition: **Jean, fils du général.**

488. Indefinite Article omitted in French. The indefinite article is omitted in French:

1. Before an *unmodified* predicate noun which is virtually an adjective. Such nouns are those indicating profession, religion or nationality: **Il est médecin (Américain, chrétien).** *But*: **Mon ami est un médecin très bien connu.**

NOTE that with **c'est, ce sont** (which are used instead of **il est,** etc. when the noun is the logical subject and hence not used adjectively) the article is not omitted: **c'est un médecin, ce sont des Américains.** See § 525.

2. Usually with nouns in apposition: **les Plaideurs, comédie de Racine.**

3. In the expressions **mettre fin** (put an end), **rendre service** (do a favor), **faire signe** (give a signal) and others.

4. **Cent** = a hundred; **mille** = a thousand: see p. 314, footnote. **Quel** = what a: see § 528, 9.

489. Two Idiomatic Uses of the Definite Article. The definite article is used:

1. Instead of the indefinite article in expressions of measure, weight, number: **cinquante sous la livre** (**le mètre, la douzaine**).

But in expressions of time use **par**: **dix francs par jour.**

2. Instead of a possessive adjective when the meaning cannot be doubtful, especially with parts of the body: **il me donne la main, il s'est cassé le bras, elle a une bague** (ring) **sur le doigt, il a perdu la vie, il a la mémoire courte** (short).

ADJECTIVES

490. Gender. To form the feminine add **-e**: **petit, petite. grand, grande.**

Exceptions to the general rule:

1. If the masculine ends in **-e,** it remains unchanged in the feminine: **facile, difficile.**

2. Final **f** becomes **v, x** becomes **s**: **vif, vive** (lively); **heureux, heureuse** (happy).

3. Final **-el, -eil, -ien, -on, -s** and **-t**[1] usually double the consonant: **tel, telle** (such); **pareil, pareille** (similar); **ancien, ancienne** (old); **bon, bonne** (good); **bas, basse** (low); **muet, muette** (mute).

4. Final **-eur** becomes **-euse** in adjectives derived from verbs; in others it is regular: **flatteur, flatteuse** (flattering); **trompeur, trompeuse** (deceptive).

But: **meilleur, meilleure; extérieur, extérieure.**

5. Final **-er** becomes **-ère**: **cher, chère; familier, familière.**

[1] Some adjectives ending in **-et** have **-ète** instead of **-ette**: **complet, complète;** so **inquiet, inquiète** (worried); **secret, secrète,** etc.

6. Common exceptions:

blanc, blanche (white)	**franc, franche** (frank)
bref, brève (short)	**gentil, gentille** (pretty, kind)
doux, douce (sweet, soft)	**long, longue** (long)
faux, fausse (false)	**public, publique** (public)
frais, fraîche (fresh)	**sec, sèche** (dry)

7. The following form their feminines from a special masculine form in **-l** (**bel, fol,** etc.) which is used before a vowel or non-aspirate **h**: **le bel arbre, un vieil ami.**

beau, *bel,* **belle** (beautiful)	**nouveau,** *nouvel,* **nouvelle** (new)
fou, *fol,* **folle** (mad)	**vieux,** *vieil,* **vieille** (old)
mou, *mol,* **molle** (sof)	

The plurals, (whether before vowel or consonant), are **beaux, belles; fous, folles; mous, molles; nouveaux, nouvelles; vieux, vieilles.** Cf. § 491.

491. Number. The plural of adjectives is formed like that of nouns:

bon, bons: see § 482.

-s and **-x**: **frais, frais** (fresh); **creux, creux** (hollow). see § 482, 1.

-au:[1] **beau, beaux**: see § 482, 2.

-al: **royal, royaux**: see § 482, 3.

492. Agreement. Adjectives — including past and present participles used adjectively — are varied in ending to agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun which they modify.

NOTE. If an adjective modifies more than one noun or pronoun it is plural, and if any one of the nouns is masculine, it is also masculine: **la langue et la littérature françaises; Marie et Henri sont bons.**

493. Position. The position of the adjective is determined mainly by usage. In general it follows the noun.

[1] But those in **-eu** are regular : **bleu, bleus.**

1. The following *short, common* adjectives precede the noun: **beau, grand, joli, méchant, bon, gros, long, petit, court, jeune, mauvais, vieux.**

2. The following adjectives follow the noun:

(*a.*) Those denoting

(1) *Color:* **un cheval noir.**

(2) *Nationality:* **la langue française.**

(3) *Physical quality:* **l'eau chaude, un nuage épais** (a thick cloud), **une table carrée** (square).

(*b.*) Present and past participles used adjectively: **une femme tremblante, le français parlé.**

3. Many adjectives change in meaning according as they precede or follow the noun; for example:

homme bon, good-natured man
bon homme, simple, worthy man, old chap

homme grand, tall man
grand homme, great man

homme brave, brave man
brave homme, worthy, honest man

homme honnête, polite man
honnête homme, honest man

homme pauvre, impecunious man
pauvre homme, poor man (implies pity)

la même chose, the same thing
la chose même, the thing itself (see § 530, 7)

la dernière semaine, the last week (of a series)
la semaine dernière, last week (just expired). See § 486, 7.

ADVERBS

494. Formation. Adverbs are formed from adjectives by adding **-ment** to the masculine if it ends in a vowel, otherwise to the feminine.

Adjectives ending in **-ant** or **-ent** have adverbial forms in **-amment** and **-emment.**

facile, facilement, easily
modéré, modérément, moderately
infini, infiniment, infinitely
excessif, excessivement, exceedingly
heureux, heureusement, happily
constant, constamment, constantly
prudent, prudemment, prudently

495. Position. The position of the adverb is decided mainly by usage. In general it comes after the verb. With compound tenses, it usually comes between the auxiliary and the participle:

il parle bien	he speaks well
il a bien parlé	he has spoken well
à proprement parler	to speak properly

496. Adverbs of Quantity (see § 485, 1, *c*, and footnote):

beaucoup { much; many;	**beaucoup de viande,** much meat **beaucoup d'amis,** many friends
peu { little; few;	**peu de lait,** little milk **peu de voyageurs,** few travelers
assez, enough;	**assez de billets,** enough tickets
trop { too much; too many;	**trop de vin,** too much wine **trop d'histoires,** too many stories
plus, more;	**plus de colis,** more packages
moins { less; fewer;	**moins d'encre,** less ink **moins de chapeaux,** fewer hats
combien { how much; how many;	**combien de crème,** how much cream **combien de mots,** how many words
tant { so much; so many;	**tant de beurre,** so much butter **tant de malles,** so many trunks
autant { as much as many	**autant de pain,** as much bread **autant de livres,** as many books

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS

497. Comparison of adjectives:

Positive	*Comparative*	*Superlative*
s. **grand (e)**	**plus grand (e)**	**le (la) plus grand (e)**[1]
	moins grand (e)	**le (la) moins grand (e)**
pl. **grands (es)**	**plus grands (es)**	**les plus grands (es)**
	moins grands (es)	**les moins grands (es)**

Elle est plus grande que[2] **moi,** She is taller than I.

Ce sont les plus belles villes du[3] **monde,** They are the most beautiful cities in the world.

Donnez-moi les pommes les plus mûres, Give me the ripest apples.[4]

498. Comparison of adverbs:

souvent, plus (moins) souvent, le plus (moins) souvent.

Il vient moins souvent que vous, He comes less often than you.

Il vient le plus souvent, He comes the most often.

499. **aussi** grand **que** = *as* great *as*
aussi souvent **que** = *as* often *as*

NOTE. In a negative sentence **aussi** is usually replaced by **si: Il n'est pas si grand que moi; Il ne vient pas si souvent que vous.**

500. The following adjectives are irregularly compared:

bon, meilleur, le meilleur, good, better, best

{ **mauvais, pire, le pire**
mauvais, plus mauvais, le plus mauvais } bad, worse, worst

{ **petit, moindre, le moindre,** small, lesser, least
petit, plus petit, le plus petit, small, smaller, smallest }

[1] When the comparative is preceded by the definite article, it has the same form as the superlative: the greater = the greatest.

[2] **Que,** *than,* is replaced by **de** before numerals: **J'en ai plus de dix,** I have more than ten.

[3] With superlatives *in* is translated **de.**

[4] Note the extra article with the superlative of adjectives that follow their nouns. After possessives the article is omitted *unless* the adjective follows the noun:

Mes plus beaux livres, My finest books.

But : **Mes livres les plus usés,** My most worn books.

501. The following adverbs are irregularly compared:

bien, mieux, le mieux, well, better, best

{ **mal, pis, le pis**
{ **mal, plus mal, le plus mal** } badly, worse, worst

peu, moins, le moins, little, less, least

beaucoup, plus, le plus, much, more, most

NUMERALS

502. Cardinal.

1 un, une (*f.*)	30 trente
2 deux	31 trente et un
3 trois	32 trente-deux
4 quatre	33 trente-trois, etc.
5 cinq	40 quarante
6 six	50 cinquante
7 sept	60 soixante
8 huit	70 soixante-dix
9 neuf	71 { soixante et onze
10 dix	{ soixante-onze
11 onze	72 soixante-douze, etc.
12 douze	80 quatre-vingts
13 treize	81 quatre-vingt-un
14 quatorze	82 quatre-vingt-deux
15 quinze	90 quatre-vingt-dix
16 seize	91 quatre-vingt-onze, etc.
17 dix-sept	100 cent[1]
18 dix-huit	101 cent un, etc.
19 dix-neuf	200 deux cents
20 vingt	201 deux cent un, etc.
21 vingt et un	1000 mille (**mil** *in dates*) [1]
22 vingt-deux	1001 mille (et) un
23 vingt-trois	4000, quatre mille, etc.
24 vingt-quatre	1000,000, un million
25 vingt-cinq, etc.	1,000,000,000, un milliard

[1] *A* (*one*) is omitted with 100,1000: **Il a lu cent (mille) pages.** For **mil** see § 509.

NOTE 1. Multiples of **vingt** and **cent** add **-s** unless a number follows: **quatre-vingts (deux cents)** personnes, but **quatre-vingt-dix, deux cent trois.** See Permissible Deviations 560, 3.

NOTE 2. For permitted omission of the hyphen in numerals see § 560, 5.

503. The **Ordinals** (except **premier,** first, **second,** second) are formed by adding **-ième** to the cardinals: **troisième, quatrième,** etc. Final **-e** is dropped (**quatre, quatrième, onze, onzième,** etc. **u** is inserted in **cinquième,** and **f** becomes **v** in **neuvième** and its compounds.

NOTE 1. **Deuxième** is used more commonly than **second** in a series including more than two, and is used exclusively in compounds: **le second volume** (of two), **la deuxième page** (of more than two); **la vingt-deuxième page.**

NOTE 2. Excepting **premier,** the ordinals are replaced by the cardinals after names of sovereigns, and in dates: **Louis Quatorze,** Louis the Fourteenth; **François Premier,** Francis the first; **le premier mai,** May the first; **le six mai,** May the sixth. Note that the article is omitted after names of sovereigns. Note the word order in dates.

504. Remarks on the Pronunciation of Numerals.

1. Pronunciation of	**cinq,**	**six,**	**sept,**	**huit,**	**neuf,**	**dix:**
1. Used alone:	[sɛ̃k],	[sis],	[sɛt],	[yit],	[nœf],	[dis]
2. Before a word beginning with a consonant	[sɛ̃],	[si],	[sɛ],	[yi],	[nø],	[di]
3. Before a word beginning with a vowel	[sɛ̃k],	[siz],	[sɛt],	[yit],	[nœv],	[diz]

2. **dix-huit** [di zyit] 18; **dix-neuf** [diz nœf] 19; **vingt** [vɛ̃] 20; **vingt-deux** [vɛ̃t dø] 22, etc., to **vingt-neuf** [vɛ̃t nœf] 29; but in **quatre-vingt-un** 81, to **quatre-vingt-dix-neuf** 99, **vingt** is pronounced [vɛ̃].

3. The **t** of **cent** is not sounded in **cent un, deux cent un,** etc.

4. **x** is pronounced [z] in **deuxième, sixième, dixième,** and [s] in **soixante.**

5. **c** = [g] in **second** [sə-gõ], *second,* and its derivatives: **secondaire,** etc.

6. Do not elide nor link before **huit**,[1] *eight;* **huitième**, [1] *eighth;* **onze** *eleven;* **onzième**, *eleventh;* **le onzième livre** [lə õzjɛm li:vr], *the eleventh book.*

505. Adverbs. Numerical adverbs are formed regularly: **premièrement, deuxièmement,** etc.

506. Collective numerals.

1. The suffix **-aine** which may be added to **huit, dix, douze, quinze, vingt, trente,** etc., is equivalent to English *some, about;* **une dixaine de livres,** some (about) ten books.

2. **Millier** is the collective of **mille**: un **millier d'hommes,** about 1000 men.

3. *Both* is **tous** (fem. **toutes**) **les deux.**

Once, twice, etc. = **une fois, deux fois.**

507. Fractions:

$\frac{1}{2}$ **un demi** [2]	$\frac{1}{4}$ **un quart**
$\frac{1}{3}$ **un tiers**	$\frac{1}{5}$ **un cinquième**
$\frac{2}{3}$ **deux tiers**	$\frac{1}{6}$ **un sixième,** etc.

Note. When **demi** precedes its noun, it is invariable and is joined to it by a hyphen; when it follows its noun it agrees with it. (See Permissible Deviation, § 560, 2.)

une demi-heure
deux heures et demie

508. Time of Day.

Quelle heure est-il? What time is it?
Il est une heure, It is one o'clock.
Il est quatre heures, It is four o'clock.
Il est huit heures dix, It is 8:10.
Il est sept heures (et) un quart, It is 7:15.

[1] But link in compound numerals: **dix-huit** (di zyit), **vingt-huitième** (vɛ̃t tyitjɛm).

[2] *Half* as a noun is **la moitié: la moitié de la pomme.**

Il est neuf heures et demie, It is 9:30.
Il est neuf heures moins dix, It is 8:50.
Il est neuf heures moins un quart, It is 8:45.
Il est midi; il est minuit, It is 12 (noon); it is 12 (midnight).
Il est midi dix, It is 12:10 (noon).
Il est minuit et demi, It is 12:30 (night).
À quelle heure allez-vous? At what time do you go?

509. Dates.

Mil [1] **neuf cent vingt-deux,** 1922.
Quel jour du mois est-ce (*or* **sommes-nous**) **aujourd'hui?** What date is it?
C'est aujourd'hui le quinze (see § 503, Note 2) **avril.** It is April 15.
Ce sera demain le premier (see § 503, Note 2) **avril.** Tomorrow will be April 1.
Dans huit jours, d'aujourd'hui en huit, in a week.
Il y a quinze jours, two weeks ago.
Il arrivera le quinze, he will arrive *on* the 15th.

510. Age.

Quel âge avez-vous? How old are you?
J'ai vingt ans.
Je suis âgé de vingt ans. } I am 20 years old.
J'ai plus de (see p. 313, footnote [2]) **vingt ans,** I am more than 20.
Je suis plus âge de vingt ans, I am older by twenty years.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

511. Subject Pronouns:

je, I	**nous,** we
tu, thou	**vous,** you
il, he, it; **elle,** she, it	**ils, elles,** they

Note 1 **Tu** and **vous.** In French **tu** is used in familiar address between members of a family, or very intimate friends; also in addressing young children and animals.

The agreement with **tu** and **vous** is logical: **tu** (a man) **es arrivé; vous** (one person) **êtes riche; vous** (more than one person) **êtes riches.**

[1] **Mil** replaces **mille** in dates. See Permissible Deviations § 560,4.

NOTE 2. The subject must ordinarily be repeated before each verb to which it refers: **j'irai et je chercherai.**

NOTE 3. A plural pronoun referring to masculine and feminine singulars is masculine: **J'ai vu votre frère et votre sœur.** ***Ils*** **se portent bien.**

512. Object Pronouns.

Conjunctive Pronouns		Disjunctive Pronouns
Direct object	*Indirect object*	
1. **me,** me	**me,** to me	**moi,** me
2. **te,** thee	**te,** to thee	**toi,** thee
3. **le,** him, it	**lui,** to him	**lui,** him
3. **la,** her, it	**lui,** to her	**elle,** her
3. **se,** himself, herself, itself, oneself	**se,** to himself, etc.	**soi,** himself, oneself, etc. (see § 519)
1. **nous,** us	**nous,** to us	**nous,** us
2. **vous,** you	**vous,** to you	**vous,** you
3. **les** (*m.*), them	**leur** (*m.*), to them	**eux,** them
3. **les** (*f.*), them	**leur** (*f.*), to them	**elles,** them
3. **se** (*m.f.*), themselves	**se** (*m.f.*) to themselves	(lacking; see § 519)

NOTE 1. Direct and indirect object pronouns are alike except in the third person.

NOTE 2. In English the preposition *to* before indirect objects *of persons* is omitted after certain verbs: Give him a book = give to him; Sell him = sell to him. The indirect object pronoun is always used here in French. Of course, as in English, direct object pronouns are also used with these verbs: Give him *it* = give *it* to him. See § 541.

Je le donne, I give it.
Je lui donne, I give him, her (= to him, to her).
Je le lui donne, I give him it.

Like **donner** are treated **demander** (ask), **montrer** (show), **permettre** (allow), and other verbs. See § 541.

513. Conjunctive pronouns are always *objects of verbs.* Disjunctive pronouns are used:

1. After prepositions: **avec moi, sans lui, chez eux,** etc.

2. After **c'est**, *it is*: **c'est moi, c'est lui,** etc.[1] See § 525.

3. Where the pronoun is used alone, i. e. neither as subject nor object of a verb:

Qui partira? Moi, Who will go? I.

4. Where the pronoun is used as part of a compound subject:

Lui et Jean se parlent, He and John are speaking to each other.

5. In the *intensive* pronouns:

moi-même, myself	**nous-même,** ourself **nous-mêmes,** ourselves
toi-même, thyself	**vous-même,** yourself **vous-mêmes,** yourselves
lui-même, himself	**eux-mêmes,** themselves (*m.*)
elle-même, herself	**elles-mêmes,** themselves (*f.*)

soi-même, itself, oneself, himself (*reflexive*)

NOTE. For permitted omission of the hyphen see § 560,6.

514. The conjunctive *indirect* object is replaced by **à** + a disjunctive pronoun in the following cases:

1. When there is more than one indirect object:

Il le donne à elle (à son père) et à moi, He gives it to her (to her father) and to me.

2. When the *direct* object is any other pronoun than **le, la, les:**

Je vous présenterai à lui, I will introduce you to him. *But:*
Je vous le présenterai, I will introduce him to you.

3. To emphasize the indirect object:

Il le donne à moi, He gives it to *me*.

4. After **penser, songer** and verbs of motion:

Je pense (songe) à lui, I think of him.
Je vais (viens) à elle, I am going (coming) to her.

[1] The French say:

c'est moi, it is I	**c'est nous,** it is we
c'est toi, it is thou	**c'est vous,** it is you
c'est lui, it is he	**ce sont eux,** it is they
c'est elle, it is she	**ce sont elles,** it is they

See Permissible Deviations, § 560,8.

515. Order of pronoun objects. Pronoun objects precede their verb in the following order:

me, te, se, nous, vous precede **le, la, les** precede **lui, leur** precede **y** precede (s) **en**

Il me le dit, He says it to me.
Il le lui dit, He says it to him.
Il se le dit, He says it to himself.

Order with compound tenses: pronoun, auxiliary, participle:

Il nous les a donnés, He gave them to us.
Il les leur a donnés, He gave them to them.
Il m'en a donné, He gave me some.

Order with negative: **ne,** pronoun, verb, **pas.**
ne, pronoun, auxiliary, **pas,** participle:

Il ne leur en donne pas, He does not give them any.
Il n'y en a pas, There are none.
Il ne leur en a pas donné, He gave them none.

516. Order of Pronouns with imperatives.

1. With *negative* imperatives the regular rules are followed:

Ne lui en donnez pas, Do not give him any.

2. With *positive* imperatives the order is as in English. Note the hyphens:

Donnez-les-lui, Give them to him (her).
Donnez-le-nous, Give it to us.
Donnez-leur-en, Give them some.
Envoyez-les-y, Send them there.

NOTE. **Moi** and **toi** are used instead of **me** and **te** except before **en: Dites-moi,** Tell me; **Va-t'en,** Go away; **Donnez-m'en;** Give me some.

517. Pleonastic *le*.

This **le** is neuter and invariable (*it*). It must usually be omitted in translation:

Êtes-vous content? Je *le* suis, Are you glad? I am.

Sont-elles contentes? **Elle** *le* **sont,** Are they glad? They are.
Je le pense, I think *so*.
Voulez-vous? **Je le veux,** Do you want to? I do.

518. *En* and *y*. In speaking of *things* (rarely of *persons*), **en** replaces **de** + a disjunctive third person pronoun. **y** replaces **à** + a disjunctive third person pronoun:

J'en parle, I speak of *it* (**en** = **de lui**).
But: **Je parle de lui,** I speak of *him*.
J'y pense, I think of *it* (**y** = **à lui**).
But: **Je pense à lui,** I think of him.

NOTE. **En** used in the partitive construction (see § 485,2) is equivalent likewise to **de** + a disjunctive third person pronoun:

Avez-vous de l'encre? J'en ai. (**En** = **d'elle**).
Avez-vous des livres? J'en ai. (**En** = **d'eux**).

519. Reflexive Pronouns.

1. Conjunctives and disjunctives of the first and second persons (**me, te, nous, vous; moi, toi, nous, vous**) may be used reflexively:

Je me vois, I see myself; **tu parles de toi,** you speak of yourself.

2. In the *third* person, **se** is the *conjunctive* form for singular and plurals of both genders, direct and indirect:

Il (elle) se flatte, He (she) flatters himself (herself).
Ils (elles) se parlent, They talk to themselves.

The *disjunctive* form is the appropriate disjunctive pronoun (**lui, elle, eux, elles**):

Il parle de lui (*or* **de lui-même**), He speaks of himself.
Ils parlent d'eux (*or* **d'eux-mêmes**), They speak of themselves;

except that **soi** is used for the *singular* when the subject is indefinite (**on, tout le monde, chacun**):

On pense à soi, We think of ourselves.

3. The plural reflexive pronouns may be translated *each other, one another:*

Nous nous aimons, We love ourselves, We love one another.
Ils se parlent, They are talking to themselves (one another).

520. Possessives.

Sing.	*Plur.*		*Sing.*	*Plur.*	
m. mon f. ma	mes, my.		m. le mien f. la mienne	les miens les miennes	mine.
m. ton f. ta	tes, thy.		m. le tien f. la tienne	les tiens les tiennes	thine.
m. son f. sa	ses,	his, her, its, one's	m. le sien f. la sienne	les siens les siennes	his, hers, its.
m. f. notre	nos, our.		m. le nôtre f. la nôtre	les nôtres, ours.	
m. f. votre	vos, your.		m. le vôtre f. la vôtre	les vôtres, yours.	
m. f. leur	leurs, theirs.		m. le leur f. la leur	les leurs, theirs.	

Note 1. Before a vowel or non-aspirate **h**, **mon**, **ton**, **son** are used instead of **ma**, **ta**, **sa**. (cf. §§ 490,7; 523 Note 1.)

Mon âme est immortelle, My soul is immortal.
Son excellente école, His (her) excellent school.

Note 2. **De** and **à** contract with **le** and **les**:
Il parle du mien, He speaks of mine.
Faites-le aux vôtres, Do it to yours.

521. Agreement. Possessives have the gender and number of the noun they modify, not of the antecedent as in English:

Son défaut, his (her, its) fault.
Ses vertus et les miennes, his (her, its) virtues and mine.
Note. To avoid ambiguity, **à** + a personal pronoun may be added:
Son défaut à elle, Her fault.
Sa vertu à lui, His virtue.

522. Remarks on possessive adjectives:

1. The possessive adjective is repeated before successive nouns: **mon livre et ma plume.**

2. Possession is indicated more commonly by the use of

à + a personal pronoun than by the possessive pronoun; the latter implies emphasis or opposition.

A qui [1] **est ce livre?** Whose book is this?
Il est à moi, It is mine.
Non, c'est le mien! No, it is *mine.*

3. For the use of the definite article instead of the possessive pronoun in speaking of parts of the body (**Je me brosse les cheveux**), see § 489,2.

2. Idiomatic expressions:

Le mien, le tien, etc., my property, thy property, etc.
Les miens, the members of my immediate family, my relatives.

DEMONSTRATIVES

523. *This, that* used as an Adjective = **ce** (*m.*), **cette** (*f.*), **ces** (*pl.*), *these, those.*

Note 1. Before a masculine noun or adjective beginning with a vowel or aspirate **h** use **cet**: **cet ami,** *this* (or *that*) *friend;* **cet homme,** *this* or *that man* (cf. § 520, Note 1).

Note 2. To distinguish *this* and *that* before nouns, or for emphasis, add to the noun **-ci** (*here*) for *this* and **-là** (*there*) for *that.*

ce livre-ci et cette plume-là, *this* book and *that* pen.
ces livres-ci et ces plumes-là, *these* books and *those* pens.
cet homme-là ne me plaît pas, I don't like that man.

524. Pronouns.

(*a*) **ce,** this, that, it
ceci, this
cela, that
} see § 525

(*b*) *m.* **celui,** the one, this or that (one), he
f. **celle,** the one, this or that (one), she
m. **ceux,** the ones, these or those, they
f. **celles,** the ones, these or those, they

[1] For **à qui?** and **de qui?** = whose? see § 528,6.

Celui qui le trouve le gardera, He (the one) who finds it will keep it.

Préférez-vous mes fleurs ou celles de mon ami? Je préfère celles de votre ami. Do you prefer my flowers or those of my friend? I prefer your friend's.

NOTE 1. **-ci** and **-là** may be added to the last four forms (see § 523, Note 2):

celui-ci, celle-ci = this one; **ceux-ci, celles-ci** = these.

celui-là, celle-là = that one; **ceux-là, celles-là** = those.

Celui-ci est bon, celui-là est mauvais, This one is good, that one is bad.

Celles-ci sont bonnes, celles-là sont mauvaises, These are good, those are bad.

NOTE 2. **Celui-là** answers to *the former;* **celui-ci,** to *the latter.*

Napoléon et César — de ces deux héros je préfère celui-ci, Napoleon and Caesar — of these two heroes I prefer the latter.

Celui-là était Français, celui-ci Romain, The former was French, the latter Roman.

525. Ce, ceci and **cela** are neuters (i. e. used in reference to an indefinite antecedent); = *this, that* when *one* could not be added.

Ceci (**cela**) **m'intéresse,** This (that) interests me.

But: **Celui-ci m'intéresse,** This *one* interests me.

The commonest use of **ce** is in place of the personal pronouns **il, elle, ils, elles** or a demonstrative pronoun as subject of **être** [1] when followed by a noun which is the logical subject of the verb (cf. § 488,1), or by a pronoun:

C'est mon ami (*noun*), He is my friend.

C'est lui (*pronoun*; see § 513,2), It is he.

But: *Il* **est aimable** (*adjective*), He is agreeable.

Il **est facile** (*adjective*) *de* **faire cela,** It is easy to do that.[2]

Exceptions: 1. **Il est** is always used in expressions of time: **il est cinq heures.**

[1] Note the use of **ce** for **ceci** or **cela** with **devoir** and **pouvoir; Ce peut (doit) être vrai,** That may (must) be true.

[2] *C'***est** + *adjective* + *à* is used when the infinitive has no object: *C'***est facile** *à* **faire,** It (that) is easy to do.

2. **C'est, ce sont** are used when the adjective is in the superlative:

Ce sont les meilleurs que nous ayons, They are the best we have.

3. **C'est** frequently replaces **il est** in colloquial discourse and even in the literary language.

526. Interrogative Adjectives (*which? what?*)

	Sing.	Plural
M	***Quel*** **livre?**	***Quels*** **livres?**
F	***Quelle*** **plume?**	***Quelles*** **plumes?**

NOTE. When *which?* = *which one?*, it is a pronoun and is translated by **lequel** (see § 527,8,15):

527. Interrogative and Relative Pronouns.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

I. PERSONS (*who? whom?*)

Subject:

2. (*a*) ***Qui*** **est ici?** 3. ***Qui est-ce qui*** **est ici?**

Who is here?

Object:

4. (*b*) ***Qui*** **(voyez-vous)?** 5. ***Qui*** **(*est-ce que* vous voyez)?**

Whom do you see?

Object of prep.:

6. (*c*) **Avec *qui* (allez-vous)?** 7. ***Avec qui*** **(*est-ce que* vous allez)?**

With whom are you going?

8. Note that *which (one)?* = **lequel?: *Lequel*** **(des hommes) est ici?** *Which (of the men) is here?* ***Lequel*** **(voyez-vous)?** ***Lequel*** **(*est-ce que* vous voyez)?** **Avec *lequel* (allez-vous)?** ***Avec lequel*** **(*est-ce que* vous allez)?** See 15. (cf. § 526 NOTE.)

II. THINGS (*what?*)

Subject:

9. (*a*) (lacking; see § 528,4). 10. ***Qu'est-ce qui*** **est sur la table?**

What is on the table?

Object:

11. (*b*) ***Que*** **(voyez-vous)?** 12. ***Qu'*** **(*est-ce que* vous voyez)?**[1]

What do you see?

[1] **Qu'est-ce que?** may be lengthened to **Qu'est-ce que c'est que? Qu'est-ce que c'est que vous voyez?** (Cf. 16, 19 note.)

Object of prep.:

13. (*c*) **Avec *quoi* (écrivez-vous)?** 14. **Avec *quoi* (*est-ce que* vous écrivez)?**

With what do you write?

15. Note that *which (one)?* = **lequel?**: ***Lequel* (des crayons) est sur la table?** *Which (of the pencils) is on the table?* etc. See 8.

III. *What?* (asking for a definition)

16. What kind of thing is . . . ? ***Qu'est-ce que c'est qu'*un chameau?** What is a camel?

17. Compare: *What is your opinion?* ***Quelle* est votre opinion?** See interrogative adjectives above.

IV. What = *that which*

Subject:

18. (*a*) **Je sais *ce qui* est ici.** I know what is here.

Object:

19. (*b*) **Je sais *ce que* vous voyez.**[1] I know what you see.

Predicate with être (see §528,5):

20. (*c*) **Je sais *ce que* vous êtes.** I know what you are.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS

I. Persons (*who, whom*)

Subject:

21. (*a*) **L'enfant *qui* est ici est sage.** The child who is here is good.

Object:

22. (*b*) **L'enfant *que* vous voyez est sage.** The child whom you see is good.

Object of prep.:

23. (*c*) **L'enfant avec *qui* vous allez est sage.** The child with whom you go is good.

24. (*d*) **L'enfant *dont* je parle est sage.** The child of whom I speak is good. (See § 529,1.)

[1] May be lengthened to ce que c'est que (Cf. p. 325 footnote).
Je sais ce que c'est que vous voyez.
Je sais ce que c'est qu'un chameau.

II. Things (*which*)

Subject:

25. (*a*) **Le livre *qui* est ici est bon.** The book which is here is good.

Object:

26. (*b*) **Le livre *que* vous voyez est bon.** The book which you see is good.

Object of prep.:

27. (*c*) **Le crayon avec *lequel* vous écrivez est bon.** The pencil with which you write is good.

28. (*d*) **Le livre *dont* vous parlez est bon.** The book of which you speak is good. (See § 529,1.)

528. Remarks on Interrogative Pronouns (§ 527):

1. Where parentheses are used (see § 527 4, 5, 6, 7, etc.) all the student has to remember is the equivalence of the inverted and **est-ce que** forms.

Note. Usage is determined by the models in § 536:

Pronoun: **Qui voit-*il?*** Whom does *he* see?

Noun: **Qui est-ce que *l'homme* voit?** Whom does the *man* see?

2. Both parts of **lequel** are declined (**lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles**). Combined with **à** and **de**:

auquel	**à laquelle**	**auxquels**	**auxquelles**
duquel	**de laquelle**	**desquels**	**desquelles**

3. Note that the **i** of **qui** is never elided.

4. Note that *what?*, subject of a verb, must be translated **qu'est-ce qui?** (10). There is no form for 9. But **que?** and **qu'est-ce que?** are used instead of **qu'est-ce qui?** as nominative predicate of a few verbs such as **être, devenir,** and with impersonal verbs:

Qu'est-ce?
Qu'est-ce que c'est? } What is it?

Que devenez-vous?
Qu'est-ce que vous devenez? } What is becoming of you?

Que faut-il?
Qu'est-ce qu'il faut? } What is necessary?

5. Add **devenir** and impersonal verbs to **être** mentioned in § 527, 20.

Je sais ce que vous devenez, I know what you are becoming.
Je sais ce qu'il faut, I know what is necessary.

6. *whose?* (interrogative) usually = **à qui?** or **de qui?**
whose (relative) = **dont** (*of whom, of which*), both of persons and things. See § 522,2.

Whose book is this? **À qui est ce livre?**
Whose son are you? **De qui êtes-vous le fils?**
I know the man whose son has gone, **Je connais l'homme dont le fils est parti.**
Here is the flag whose color is blue! **Voici le drapeau dont la couleur est bleue!**

7. **Quel?** before **être** may mean *who?*

Qui est cet homme?
Quel est cet homme? } Who is that man?

8. (*a*) *What* = *that which* when object (cf. 19) of a preposition (except *of*), is **ce . . . quoi:**

Dites-moi ce à quoi vous pensez, Tell me what you are thinking of.

Note. Ce may be omitted:

Vous savez à quoi je pense, You know what I am thinking of.

(*b*) When the preposition is *of*, use **ce dont.** If **ce** is omitted, **dont** becomes **de quoi:**

Vous savez ce dont je parle, You know what I am speaking of.
Vou savez de quoi il parle, You know what he speaks of.

Compare:

Il a de quoi vivre, He has enough to live on.

9. Note the following exclamatory forms:

Quel! What a! **Quelle belle femme!** What a beautiful woman!
Que! How! **Que cela me plaît!**
Que de! How many! How much! **Que de livres! Que de courage!**
Quoi! What! **Quoi! c'est vous!**

529. Remarks on Relative Pronouns (See § 527)

1. Note **dont** (24, 28). With prepositions other than *of*, use **qui** for persons (23) and **lequel** for things (27).

2. **Lequel** may be used of persons to replace the forms used in 21, 22, 23, 24, especially where ambiguity would result from the use of **qui:**

Les sœurs du capitaine auquel (or auxquelles) je rendis visite hier.	The sisters of the captain whom I visited yesterday.
La sœur de mon ami, laquelle demeure chez nous.	My friend's sister, who lives at our house.

3. **Où** (lit. *where*), is occasionally used *of things* as a virtual relative pronoun, replacing **dans lequel, auquel.**

Le temps où nous vivons est très prosaïque.	The age in which we live is very prosaic.
La cabane d'où il est sorti.	The hut from which he came out.

530. Indefinite pronouns and adjectives:

1. **On** (Latin *homo*, man) = one, they, you, people, etc. It is frequently used to translate an English passive. Its verb is in the singular.

Ici on parle français, One speaks French here. French is spoken here.

NOTE. **L'on** usually replaces **on** after **si, et, où, que: Si l'on vous voit.**

2. **Tout** (**toutes**; *pl.* **tous, toutes**), adjective or pronoun = all, every: **tout homme,** every man; **tous les hommes,** all men.

NOTE. **Tout le monde le sait,** *Everybody* knows it.
Tous (toutes) les deux étaient là, *Both* were there. cf. § 530,6.
Tout me plaît, *Everything* pleases me.
Tous ont péri, They *all* [1] perished.
Tout ce qui est bon, Everything that is good.
Tout ce que vous voulez, Everything you like.

3. **chaque** (adjective), each, every: **chaque homme,** each (every) man; **chacun, -e** (pronoun), each one, every one; **chacun croit,** each (every) one believes.

4. **Quelque,** some (*plural* = a few; **plusieurs** (indeclinable) = several):

[1] Sound the **-s** of **tous** when it is a pronoun.

quelqu'un (**quelqu'une, quelques-uns, quelques-unes**), some one, some ones.
quelque chose, something.

NOTE: **quelque** (indeclinable when followed by an adjective or adverb) . . . **que** (with subjunctive; see § 550,3) = however, whatever:

Quelque braves qu'ils soient, However brave they may be.
Quelques désirs que vous ayez, Whatever desires you may have.

When it is followed *immediately* by **être, quelque** is resolved into the appropriate form of **quel** + **que**:

Quels que soient vos désirs, whatever your desires may be.

5. **aucun** (no, nobody), **nul** (no, nobody), **personne** (nobody), **rien** (nothing): see § 532.

6. **autre**: adjective or pronoun, other:

L'autre cheval, the other horse.
Les autres sont meilleurs, The others are better.

NOTE: When not preceded by *the*, others (pronoun) is usually **d'autres** (subject or object):
D'autres vous le diront, Others will tell it to you.
Donnez-m'en d'autres, Give me others.

Autrui may here be used after a preposition, but only of persons:
Le bonheur d'autrui (*or* **des autres**), the happiness of others.
Attendez d'autrui ce que vous faites à autrui, Expect from others what you do to others.

L'un . . . l'autre, les uns . . . les autres: (the) one . . . the other; the ones . . . the others:

L'un l'aime, l'autre le déteste, (The) one loves him, the other hates him.

NOTE: **Ils le font l'un et l'autre**, *Both* do it. Cf. § 530,2.
Aimez-vous les uns les autres, Love *one another*. Cf. § 519,3.

7. **même**, same, even, very, self:

C'est la même chose, It's the same thing.
Vos amis mêmes, (*note word-order*), Even your friends *or* Your friends themselves *or* Your very friends.
Moi-même, *etc.*, myself, *etc.* (see § 513,5)

NOTE **même**, adverb, = even: **Il vole même**, He even flies.

8. **Tel (telle, tels, telles)** such:

Telle était sa crainte, Such was his fear.

NOTE. **Un tel homme,** *Such a* man.
Chez Monsieur un tel, At the home of Mr. *So and So.*
Il est tellement riche, He is *so* rich.

9. Indefinite Relatives:

(*a*) Adjectives.

Quelconque, any, whatever, has a plural in **-s,** and always follows its noun:

Un homme quelconque, Any man whatever.
Des hommes quelconques, Any men whatever.

NOTE. For **quelque . . . que, quel . . . que,** see § 530, 4.

(*b*) Pronouns.

Quiconque (*invariable*), whoever:

Quiconque le dit a tort, Whoever says it is wrong.

Qui que with subjunctive of **être** replaces **quiconque:**

Qui que ce soit, Whoever it is.

Quoi que with subjunctive, whatever:

Quoi que ce soit, Whatever it is.
Quoi que vous fassiez, Whatever you do.

NEGATION

531. The verb is rendered negative by putting **ne** before it and **pas** after it. (**Point** is a more emphatic substitute for **pas**): **Je ne donne pas** (or **point**).

NOTE 1. In compound tenses the auxiliary is similarly negatived, the participle following **pas. Il n'a pas fini.**

NOTE 2. With infinitives **ne pas** is usually grouped before the verb: **ne pas parler,** not to speak; **ne pas avoir fini,** not to have finished.

NOTE 3. With interrogative verbs followed by a subject-pronoun **pas** follows the latter: **Ne finit-il pas? N'a-t-il pas fini?**

NOTE 4. **Ne** is regularly separated from the verb by personal object-pronouns governed by it: **Je ne la donne pas,** I do not give it.

532. Like **ne — pas** are used:[1]

ne — jamais, never
ne — rien, nothing
ne — personne, nobody
ne — aucun, -e, not any
ne — guère, scarcely
ne — nul, -le, not any
ne — plus, no more, no longer
ne — que, only, not more than
ne — ni — ni, neither, nor

Il ne finit jamais.	He never ends.
Il n'a que deux frères.	He has only two brothers.
Je n'ai ni père ni mère.	I have neither father nor mother.
Je n'ai rien vu.	I have seen nothing.

NOTE 1. **Rien, personne, aucun,** and **nul,** when used as subjects, precede **ne** and the verb.

Rien n'est arrivé.	Nothing has happened.
Personne n'a parlé.	No one has spoken.

NOTE 2. As **ne** cannot be used except before a verb, it is omitted when the latter is not expressed, and the **jamais, rien, personne, pas,** etc., have negative value.

Qui est venu? Personne!	Who came? Nobody!
Que dit-il? Rien.	What does he say? Nothing.
Plus de pain dans la maison!	No more bread in the house!

533. ***Pas*** **omitted:** ***Pas*** is often omitted with the verbs **pouvoir, savoir, oser, cesser,** after **si,** *if,* and regularly in connection with **ni,** *nor.*

Il n'ose le faire.	He dares not do it.
Si je ne me trompe.	If I do not deceive myself.
Ce bébé ne marche ni ne parle.	This baby neither walks nor talks.

[1] Position with compound tenses or with complementary infinitive:

Same as **pas (je n'ai pas cherché):**

rien; Je n'ai **rien** cherché	Je ne peux **rien** comprendre
jamais; Je n'ai **jamais** cherché	Je ne peux **jamais** comprendre
plus; Je n'ai **plus** cherché	Je ne peux **plus** comprendre

Same as in English:

personne; Je n'ai cherché **personne**	Je ne peux chercher **personne**
que; Je ne l'ai trouvé **qu'**après avoir cherché	Je ne peux chercher **que** mes amis

534. *Ne* redundant. The redundant **ne** occurs with comparatives (the principal clause being affirmative), after affirmative verbs of fearing, preventing, avoiding, after negative verbs of doubting, after **à moins que,** *unless,* and sometimes after **avant que,** *before:*

Jean lit mieux qu'il n'écrit.	John reads better than he writes.
Il craint que je ne parle.	He fears I may speak.
Il parlera à moins qu'on ne le lui défende.	He will speak unless they forbid him.

NOTE. See Permissible Deviations § 560,10.

535. Use of *non,* *not.* **Non,** *no, not* is used chiefly to negative individual words in a sentence, or to negative a clause or phrase as a whole — but never in negative conjugation of a verb.

Les mots non soulignés.	The words not underscored.
Est-il riche? Non.	Is he rich? No.

INTERROGATION

536. Models for Questions:

1. If the subject is **je: Est-ce que je donne?**[1]

2. If the subject is a *pronoun* other than **je:**[2] **Donnez-vous?** *or* **Est-ce que vous donnez?**

NOTE. For permitted omission of the hyphen see § 560,7.

3. If the subject is a *noun:* **Est-ce que le livre est sur la table?** [3]

4. With **où?** and some other interrogative words:[4] **Où est le livre?** [5]

[1] The **est-ce que** form is to be used in the first person singular, and *may* be used in all persons and numbers.

[2] When **il** or **elle** follows its verb, **t** (between hyphens) intervenes, if the verb ends in a vowel: **donne-t-il? a-t-elle?**

[3] *Or* **Le livre est-il sur la table?** (less used).

[4] Such are **qui? que? quel? comment? de qui?**

[5] *Or* **Le livre où est-il?** (less used). This construction or the **est-ce que** form *must* be used if the subject of the verb is a noun and the verb has a direct object.

Où est-ce que le maître trouve le livre?
Le maître où trouve-t-il le livre? } Where does the master find the book?

VERBS

537. Principal parts and Rules for the Formation of tenses:

1. **Infinitive: donner**

Future: add **-ai,**[1] **-as, -a; -ons, -ez, -ont** [2] to the infinitive:[3] **je donner ai,** etc.

Conditional: change **-ai,** as etc. of the future to **-ais,**[1] **-ais, -ait; -ions, -iez, -aient** [2]

2. **Present participle: donnant**

Imperfect: change ending (**-ant**) to **-ais, -ais, ait; -ions, -iez, -aient** [4]

Present subjunctive: change ending (**-ant**) to **-e, -es, -e; -ions, -iez, -ent.**[4]

3. **Past participle: donné**

All compound tenses: **j'ai donné, j'avais donné; je suis allé, nous serons arrivés,** etc.

4. **Present indicative,** first person singular: **je donne,**[5] **je finis** [5]

[1] **-ai** as verb ending is pronounced like *a* in m*a*te; **-ais** as verb ending is pronounced like *e* in m*e*t.

[2] The endings of the *future* are the present indicative of **avoir** (the **av-** of **avons, avez** having been dropped). The endings of the *conditional* are the imperfect of **avoir** (**av-** having been dropped); consequently *imperfect* and conditional endings are identical. Observe carefully the difference in the stem: **donn + ais,** imperfect; **donner + ais** conditional.

There are no exceptions to the rule for the formation of the conditional even in the case of irregular verbs.

[3] Infinitives ending in **-re** drop **-e; vendre + ai** gives **vendrai:** so all verbs of the second conjugation.

[4] Compare the endings of the present subjunctive with those of the present indicative (*first conjugation*) and imperfect indicative.

[5] Notes on endings of the present indicative:

(1) Regular endings { -e, -es, -e (*first conj.*) / -s(-x), -s(-x), -t (*other conj.*) } -ons, -ez, -ent.

(2) In verbs of the third conjugation the third person singular normally ends in *t;* **il rompt.** This *t* is omitted if the consonant preceding is *d;* **il rend.** So also if the consonant preceding is *t* (**il paraît.**)

(3) Exceptional endings in 2nd pers. plu.: always **-ez,** except **dites, êtes, faites.**

(4) Exceptional endings in 3rd pers. plu.: always **-ent,** except **font, ont, sont, vont.**

Imperative = second person of present indicative, the pronoun being omitted: **(tu) finis,**[6] **(vous) finissez.**[7]

5. **Past definite,** first person singular: **je donnai.**[8]

Imperfect subjunctive: to the *second* person singular add **-se, -ses, – —; -sions, -siez, -sent.** For the 3rd sing. substitute *t* for the *s* of the past definite and put a circumflex over the vowel: **tu donnas, il donnât.**[9]

538. Irregular verbs. Irregular verbs are irregular in only a few forms. It is a great mistake to learn them as if they presented difficulties at every turn. If the student observes the rules for the formation of tenses (§ 537) and the rules given below he will find that in irregular verbs very few forms need be learned. For instance, in

pouvoir: learn only **pu, je peux, je pourrai, je puisse**
venir: learn only **je viens, venant, venu, ils viennent, je viendrai, je vienne**
dire: learn only **disant, dit, vous dites**
écrire: learn only **écrivant, écrit**
conduire: learn only **conduisant, conduit**
croire: learn only **croyant, cru, je croie**
vouloir: learn only **voulant, voulu, je veux, je voudrai, je veuille**

The following rules will be of great aid in learning the *present indicative* and the *present subjunctive* of irregular verbs:

[6] In verbs of the first conjugation the final **-s** of the pres. ind. 2nd sing. is dropped except before **y** and **en**; pres. ind., **tu donnes:** imperative, **donne; donnes-en.** See also the verbs listed in the next note.

[7] The imperative of the following verbs is formed not from the present indicative but from the present subjunctive: avoir (aie, ayez), être (sois, soyez), savoir (sache, sachez), vouloir (veuille, veuillez.) On the dropping of **-s** see the preceding note.

[8] Regular endings of the past definite:
First conjugation: -ai, -as, -a, -âmes, -âtes, -èrent
Other conjugations: -is, -is, -it, -îmes, -îtes, -irent. In a few verbs *i* is replaced by *u;* **je voulus, tu voulus,** etc.

[9] *There are no exceptions even in the case of irregular verbs;* therefore the student who has learned these endings knows the whole tense if he knows the first person singular.

1. the first, second, third singular and the third plural have the same stem (e.g. **pouvoir: peu-**);

2. *the first and second plural have the stem of the present participle* (**pouv-**);

3. the consonant which follows the stem of the third plural (**peu-**) is that which precedes the ending (**-ant**) of the present participle (**-v**):

je *peux* gives the stem of the third plural: **ils peu-;**
pou*vant* gives the consonant: **ils peuv-;**
-ent (*unpronounced*) is the regular ending: **ils peuvent.**

je peux	**nous pouvons**
tu peux	**vous pouvez**
il peut	**ils peuvent**

539. Prepositions governing verbs. Prepositions, except **en**, govern the **Infinitive: pour** aller, *for going;* **sans** partir, *without departing ;* **après** avoir répondu, *after having answered ;* **avant de** finir, *before finishing. But* **en** allant, *in going ;* **en** répondant, etc.

540. Verbs followed by Infinitives. In English the infinitive is sometimes preceded by *to* and sometimes not. We say ' I dare to go,' but ' you dare not go,' ' he is able to go,' but ' he can go.' In French the infinitive (1) may stand alone, (2) may be preceded by **de**, (3) may be preceded by **à**.

(1) **Nous allons partir,** We are going to leave
(2) **Il a oublié de venir,** He forgot to come
(3) **Il apprend à lire,** He is learning to read

This usage can be learned only by observation. Some verbs fall into two or even all three of these classes. The following are some of the common verbs in each class:

1. aller, compter, croire, désirer, devoir, entendre, envoyer, espérer, faire, falloir, laisser, oser, paraître, préférer, pouvoir, savoir, sembler, venir, voir, vouloir.

2. avertir, blâmer, cesser, se charger, commander, conseiller, craindre, défendre, se dépêcher, dire, écrire, empêcher, s'empresser, entreprendre, essayer, éviter, se hâter, jurer, menacer, négliger, ordonner, oublier, permettre, persuader, se presser, prier, promettre, proposer, recommander, refuser, regretter, remercier, souhaiter, tâcher.

3. aider, aimer, s'amuser, apprendre, avoir, chercher, condamner, consentir, se décider, demander, enseigner, s'habituer, hésiter, inviter, se mettre, parvenir, renoncer, réussir, songer, tenir, travailler.

541. Transitive and intransitive verbs (see § 512, NOTE 2). Verbs transitive (i.e. taking a direct object) in French and intransitive (and followed by a preposition) in English: **attendre, chercher, demander** (ask for), **écouter, regarder: Je l'attends,** I am waiting *for* him.

Verbs intransitive in French and transitive in English: **approcher de, assister à** (be present at), **convenir à** (suit, fit), **demander à** (ask a *person*), **douter de, entrer dans, jouir de, nuire à, obéir à, pardonner à, plaire à, répondre à** (answer), **ressembler à, se servir de, se souvenir de.**

542. Reflexive verbs. Verbs which are reflexive in French but not in English: **s'arrêter, s'asseoir, se coucher, s'écrier, s'en aller, s'endormir, s'éveiller, s'habiller, se lever, se plaindre, se promener, se sauver** (run away), **se taire.**

543. Auxiliaries. Compound tenses are usually formed by **avoir** and the past participle (**j'ai aimé, j'avais aimé,** etc:) But **être** replaces **avoir** in the following cases:

(1) With all reflexive verbs: **Je me suis flatté,** I flattered myself.

(2) With many verbs (mostly of motion) of which the following are the most common: **aller, arriver, descendre,**

entrer, monter, mourir, naître, partir, sortir, venir: [1] **Je suis allé,** I went.

544. Agreement of Present Participles. The present participle is invariable when used as a verb (to express action), but it is varied when used as an adjective (to describe a state).

Une bête, vivant dans l'eau, s'amuse peu,	An animal, living in the water, has a dull time.
J'ai trouvé une bête vivante dans le lait,	I have found a living animal in the milk.

545. Agreement of Past Participles:

1. If the verb is conjugated with **avoir,** the participle agrees with the direct object *when the object precedes* (*order;* object; verb; participle):

Quelle ***leçon*** **avez-vous** ***apprise?***	What lesson have you learned? [2]

Otherwise no agreement (*order:* verb; participle; object):

J'ai appris la leçon,	I have learned the lesson

2. If the verb is conjugated with **être** (§ 543), the participle agrees with the *subject:*

Elle est venue, She has come
Elles sont aimées, They are loved

Note. Though reflexive verbs are conjugated with **être,** the past participle agrees not with the *subject* but with a *preceding direct object* as in the case of verbs conjugated with **avoir: Elle s'est lavée,** She washed herself.

With **Elle s'est lavée** compare:
Elle s'est lavé les mains, She washed her hands
Elle s'est cassé le bras, She broke her arm

[1] Verbs conjugated with **être** are intransitive (that is, they have no direct object). Some may be used also transitively (that is, with a direct object). In the second case they are conjugated with **avoir:**

Je suis descendu (monté), I went down (went up)
J'ai descendu (monté) l'escalier, I went down (went up) the stairs
J'ai descendu (monté) la malle, I carried the trunk down (up)

[2] With **en** the participle remains invariable: **Avez-vous choisi des livres? — J'*en* ai choisi.**

In the sentence **Elle s'est lavée,** *She washed herself,* **s'** (se) is the direct object; since it *precedes* the participle, the participle agrees with it. In the sentences **Elle s'est lavé les mains, Elle s'est cassé le bras, s'** (se) is the indirect object (*She washed the hands to herself; She broke the arm to herself*); the direct objects are **mains, bras,** and since they *follow* the participles, the participles do not agree with them, but are invariable.

Similarly in **Elle s'est parlé,** She spoke to herself, the participle does not agree with **s'** (to herself) since it is the indirect, not the direct, object.

SYNTAX OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE

546. Present and future tenses in the principal clause govern the subjunctive verb or auxiliary in the *present;* and past and conditional tenses govern the subjunctive verb or auxiliary in the *past.*

Je désire qu'il parte.	I desire that he go.
Je désirais qu'il partît.	I desired that he might go.
Croyez-vous qu'il soit parti?	Do you believe he has gone?
Je ne pensais pas qu'il fût parti.	I did not think he had gone.

NOTE. In colloquial style, the past subjunctive is becoming obsolete, the present ungrammatically usurping its place. See Permissible Deviations, § 560,9.

Il était temps que je vous dise cela.	It was time that I should say this to you.

547. Subjunctive used Independently. Though the subjunctive is properly a *subjoined,* and therefore a dependent or governed mood, it is in a few cases used independently — though a governing verb may usually be understood:

1. In wishes:

Dieu vous garde (or **préserve**)**!**	God guard you!
À Dieu ne plaise qu'il vienne!	May it not please God that he come!

Puisse-t-il être heureux!	May he be happy!
Vive le roi!	Long live the king!
Plût à Dieu que cela fût vrai!	Would to God that this might be true!

NOTE. **Soit!** So be it.

2. To supply the lacking third persons imperative (occasionally also the first person); it is preceded by **que:**

Qu'il réponde! Qu'ils répondent!	Let him answer! Let them answer!
Que je sois pendu si j'en sais le premier mot!	May I be hanged if I know anything about it!

3. In purely literary style to express with special emphasis a condition or concession — **si**, *if*, being omitted and the subject-pronoun following its verb.

Eût-il cent fois raison, je ne céderais point.	Were he right a hundred times, I would not yield.
Dussé-je mourir, je le ferais quand même.	Were I to die, I would do it nevertheless.

4. To replace the conditional in compound tenses:

Je l'eusse fait volontiers.	I would have done it willingly.
Avec une dot, elle se fût mariée plus tôt.	With a dowry, she would have got married sooner.

548. Subjunctive after a Governing Verb. The subjunctive is used after:

(1) Verbs expressing an act of will, i.e. verbs like *to wish*, like, prefer, *demand*, order, beg, *permit*, forbid,[1] approve, *prevent*,[1] etc.

Nous voulons qu'il sorte.	We wish that he go.
Je préférerais qu'il régnât.	I should prefer that he should reign.
Je défends qu'on le fasse.	I forbid that one do it.
J'empêcherai qu'on ne le fasse.	I will prevent its being done.

(2) Verbs expressing emotions, such as joy, sorrow, surprise, doubt,[1] fear,[1] anger, shame:

[1] For the redundant **ne** with these verbs see § 534.

Je regrette que cela soit arrivé.	I regret that this has happened.
Je serais bien aise que cela arrivât.	I should be very glad to have that happen.
Je crains que vous ne vous trompiez.	I fear you may be deceiving yourself.

(3) Impersonal verbs, unless they express certainty or probability. When negative or interrogative *all* impersonal verbs govern the subjunctive.

Il faut qu'il parte.	He must go.
Il semble que cela soit facile à faire.	It seems that that is easy to do.
Il convient que vous le fassiez.	It is proper you should do it.
Il est vrai (certain, sûr, probable, clair) que c'est facile.	It is true (certain, sure, probable, clear) that it is easy.
But:	
Il n'est pas vrai (certain, sûr, etc.) que ce soit facile.	It is not true (certain, sure, etc.) that it is easy.

(4) Verbs of *saying* and *thinking*, when used negatively or interrogatively (the indicative *may* be used):

Je dis qu'il a menti.	I say that he has lied.
Je ne dis pas qu'il ait menti (or a menti).	I do not say he has lied.
Je ne crois pas qu'il mente.	I do not believe he lies.
Pensez-vous qu'il mente?	Do you think he lies?
J'espère qu'il le fera.	I hope he will do it.
Je n'espère pas qu'il le fasse (or fera).	I do not hope he will do it.

549. Subjunctive after Conjunctions:

1. The following regularly govern the subjunctive:

quoique, **bien que** } *although*
pourvu que, provided that
sans que, without
à moins que, unless (with redundant **ne**; cf. § 534)
afin que, **pour que** } in order that, so that
avant que, before (for redundant **ne** see § 534)

Quoiqu'il ait soixante ans, il est plus fort que moi.	Although he is sixty years old, he is stronger than I.
Venez avant qu'il parte.	Come before he gets away.

2. Certain compound conjunctions govern the subjunctive when the following verb suggests purpose or anticipation, and hence uncertainty. They govern the indicative when they introduce a mere statement of fact.

Such are **de manière que, de façon que, de sorte que,** all meaning *so that:*

Il agit en (or de) sorte que tous le haïront.	He acts so that all will hate him.
Agissez de sorte qu'on vous bénisse.	Act so that people may bless you.

550. Subjunctive in Relative Clauses:

1. The subjunctive is used in a relative clause when it expresses a *characteristic* which may not be fulfilled:

Il n'avait pas d'outil dont il pût se servir.	He had no tool of which he could make use.
Il y a peu de livres qui soient bien écrits.	There are few books that are well written.
Quel est le poète qui ait égalé Homère?	Who is the poet that has equaled Homer?
Je cherche un domestique qui soit fidèle.	I seek a servant who may be faithful (*purpose and desire*).
But:	
J'ai un domestique qui est très fidèle.	I have a servant who is very faithful (*a mere fact*).

2. The relative clause following a superlative is usually subjunctive.

Napoléon est le plus grand général qui ait jamais existé.	Napoleon is the greatest general that ever existed.

NOTE. **Le premier, le dernier, le seul, personne, rien,** etc., being virtual superlatives, govern the relative clause accordingly:

Il n'y a personne qui soit sûr.	There is no one who is safe.
De tous mes anciens amis c'est le seul qui se souvienne de moi.	Of all my old friends he is the only one who remembers me.
But:	
De cette grande armée c'étaient les seuls qui survivaient.	Of this great army they were the only ones who survived.

3. Owing to their hypothetical or concessive value, the

French equivalents for the English *whoever, whatever, however,* and *wherever,* require a verb in the subjunctive (cf. § 530,4):

Quelle que soit la provocation, ne vous battez point. Whatever be the provocation, do not fight.

Quelques peines qu'il eût, il les cachait. Whatever griefs he felt, he hid them.

Quelque bons qu'ils fussent, ils ne lui pardonnèrent jamais. However good they were, they never pardoned him.

USE OF TENSES

551. Present tense with depuis:

Depuis quand êtes-vous ici? How long *have you been* here?

Je suis ici depuis huit jours
Voilà (il y a) huit jours que je suis ici } I *have been* here for a week.

NOTE. As the present is used here for the past indefinite, so the imperfect is used for the pluperfect: **Depuis quand étiez-vous ici?** How long *had you been* here?

552. Use of the past tenses.

The *past indefinite* is the narrative tense, the most frequently used past tense.

The *imperfect* is the descriptive tense, corresponding roughly to the English past in *-ing, I was giving.* It is used:

(1) of an action conceived as continuing in past time, especially when another action takes place during the continuance of the first: *I was walking* (imperfect) *in the garden when I saw* (past indefinite) *him;*

(2) of customary or repeated action: *I used to give, I* (repeatedly, always, usually, etc.) *gave.*

The *past definite* replaces the past indefinite in literary style.

Enfin il a parlé (*conversational*)
Enfin il parla (*literary*) } He spoke at last.

Il allait à l'école, He was going to school, he used to go to school, he usually went to school.

Il allait à l'école lorsque l'orage a éclaté (éclata), He was going to school when the storm burst.

553. The future and the conditional are often used to express probability or conjecture:

Sera-ce lui? Serait-ce lui?	Can it be he? Could it be he?
Il l'aura dit.	He probably said it.
Aurait-il dit cela?	Could he have said that?

554. Note the future with **quand, lorsque, aussitôt que, après que,** etc., where the present is used in English:

Je viendrai quand je pourrai, I shall come when I *can*.

555. Conditions. Conditions follow the *normal* English forms:

If he speaks, I shall speak, **S'il parle** (*present*), **je parlerai** (*future*).
If he spoke, I should speak, **S'il parlait** (*imperfect*), **je parlerais** (*conditional*).

NOTE. The future and conditional may be used in English in the *if* clause (if "he will speak," "if he would speak") but not in French except when **si** means whether:

Savez-vous s'il parlera (parlerait)? Do you know if he will (would) speak?

556. Passive. The passive voice corresponds to the English forms, the participle agreeing with the subject since the auxiliary is **être** (see § 545,2): **elle est aimée,** she is loved; **elle sera aimée, elle a été aimée,** etc.

NOTE 1. The passive voice is not so commonly used in French as in English. Two frequent substitutes are:

(1) **On: Ici on parle français,** French is spoken here.
(2) The reflexive: **Cela se dit,** That is said.
La lutte se termina, The struggle ended.

NOTE 2. The agent is introduced by **par** when the action is specific, by **de** when the action is general or habitual:

Il fut tué par un brigand, He was killed *by* a bandit.
Un père est aimé de ses enfants, A father is loved *by* his children.

NOTE 3. Observe the passive force of a *transitive* infinitive following **faire** (have, cause) **voir, entendre,** and some other verbs:

J'ai fait bâtir une maison, I had a house built.
Je l'ai vu (entendu) punir, I saw (heard) him punished.

But:

J'ai fait venir (intransitive) **le médecin,** I had the doctor come.

If the infinitive has an object, the agent is the indirect object. **Par** may be used to avoid ambiguity:

Faites-lui faire son devoir, Have him do his duty.

Faites faire son devoir à votre fils, Have your son do his duty.

Il a fait vendre sa maison par un ami, He had his house sold by a friend.

RULES FOR GENDER

(Supplementary to § 481)

557. I. Gender determined by meaning.

A. Masculine:

1. Males: **homme, fils, coq.**
   Except **la sentinelle, la recrue.**[1]
2. Trees, shrubs, metals: **chêne, saule, argent, cuivre.**
   Except **la ronce, l'épine, la vigne.**
3. Seasons, months, days: **printemps, été, janvier, dimanche.**
4. Winds, points of compass: **zéphyr, aquilon, nord.**
   Except **la bise, la brise.**
5. Countries not ending in **-e**: **États-Unis, Canada, Portugal.**
6. Mountains: **Vésuve, Parnasse.**
   Except **Alpes, Pyrénées, Vosges.**
7. Adjectives, infinitives and other parts of speech used as nouns: **le blanc, le dormir, le pourquoi.**

B. Feminine:

1. Females: **mère, fille, poule.**
2. Fruits and flowers ending in **-e**: **pomme, cerise; tulipe, rose.**
3. Countries, cities, rivers ending in **-e**: **France, Russie; Rome, Venise; Seine, Loire.**
   Except: **le Mexique, le Rhône, le Tibre.**
4. Holidays (*fête de* is understood): **la Toussaint** (la fête de Toussaint), **la Saint-Jean.**

[1] These and **connaissance, dupe, personne, victime** are feminine whether they refer to males or females.

558. II. Gender determined by endings.

A. Feminine:

1. Nouns ending in neutral -e:[1] **porte, ville, place, huile.**
   Except those ending in

   -acle: spectacle, oracle, miracle
   -age:[2] voyage, village, courage
   -aire:[3] dictionnaire
   -ège: collège, privilège, manège
   -sme: patriotisme, enthousiasme

2. *Abstract* nouns ending in
   -eur:[4] chaleur, hauteur, grandeur
   NOTE: When **-eur** denotes an *agent* the noun is masculine:
   laboureur, sénateur, facteur

3. Nouns ending in

   -ié: moitié, pitié, amitié
   -ion: nation, confusion, possession
   -té:[5] cité, santé, liberté
   -aison:[6] maison, raison, conjugaison

B. Nouns ending otherwise are generally masculine.

559. III. Gender of compound nouns.

1. Those composed of two nouns have the gender of the first:
   le chou-fleur.
2. Those composed of a noun and another part of speech have the gender of the noun: **une basse-cour.**
   Except those composed of a noun and a verb which are always masculine: **le porte-plume, tourne-vis.**
3. Those of which neither component part is a noun are masculine:
   le passe-partout.

[1] The following are among the common exceptions to this rule: **âge, automne, centime, cigare, costume, crime, exemple, légume, linge, livre** (*book*), **mètre, signe, silence, sucre, timbre, tonnerre, verre, vice.**

[2] Feminine are **cage, image, page, plage, rage.**

[3] Feminine are **grammaire, paire.**

[4] Except **bonheur, malheur, honneur, labeur.**

[5] Except **côté, été.**

[6] Nouns in **-on** are masculine: **bouillon, poison, poisson;** except **boisson, chanson, façon, leçon.**

560. Permissible Deviations.

A decree of the French Minister of Public Instruction, dated February 26, 1901, orders that the following deviations from established orthography be tolerated in public schools:

1. The article need not be dropped in partitive constructions when the noun is preceded by an adjective: **du bon pain, de la bonne viande, des bons fruits.** See § 485, 1, NOTE, (*b*).
2. **Demi** may agree with its noun even when it precedes: **une demie heure.** See § 507, NOTE.
3. **Vingt** and **cent** may be written with an **-s** even when a number follows: **quatre vingts dix.** See § 502, NOTE 1.
4. **Mille** may be used in dates: **l'an mille huit cents quatre vingts dix.** See § 509.
5. The hyphen may be omitted in numerals: **dix sept.** See § 502, NOTE 2.
6. The hyphen may be omitted in **moi même,** etc. See § 513, 5.
7. The hyphen may be omitted between the verb and a pronoun subject placed after it: **est ce, avez vous.** See § 536.
8. **C'est** may be used instead of **ce sont: c'est eux.** See p. 319, footnote.
9. The present subjunctive may be used instead of the imperfect in a clause depending upon a conditional: **il faudrait qu'il vienne.** See § 546, NOTE.
10. The redundant **ne** may be omitted: **il craint qu'on vienne, l'année a été meilleure qu'on l'espérait, à moins qu'on accorde le pardon.** See § 534.

VOCABULARIES

The numbers following the word defined refer to the lessons in which the word is first used.

The asterisk * after verbs denotes that they are conjugated with être in the compound tenses.

The feminine form of the adjective is given only when it offers some special difficulty.

The following abbreviations are used:

adj.	adjective	*p. p.*	past participle
adv.	adverb	*pl.*	plural
conj.	conjunction	*prep.*	preposition
f.	feminine	*pron.*	pronoun
m.	masculine	*rel.*	relative

à [a], to, at, in, 2.
absolu [apsɔly], absolute, 34.
l'**achat** [laʃa], *m.*, purchase, 23.
acheter [aʃte], to buy, 17.
admirer [admire], to admire, 27.
l'**adresse** [ladrɛs], *f.*, address, 31.
afin que [afɛ̃ kə], in order that, 41.
l'**âge** [lɑːʒ], *m.*, age, 29
agréable [agreabl], agreeable, 42.
aimable [ɛmabl], amiable, kind, 42.
aimer [ɛme], to like, love, 16.
allemand [almɑ̃], German, 3.
aller* [ale], to go, 14 (to feel), 41.
l'**allumette** [lalymɛt], *f.*, match, 22.
américain [amerikɛ̃], American, 42.
l'**Amérique** [lamerik], *f.*, America, 32.

---

a, an, un, une.
to be able, pouvoir.
about (=*on one's person*), sur.
absolute, absolu.
acquaintance, la connaissance.
across, à travers.
address, l'adresse, *f.*
to admire, admirer.
to be afraid, avoir peur, craindre.
after, après.
afternoon, l'après-midi, *f.*
again, encore.
ago, il y a.
agreeable, agréable.
all, tout, –e, tous, toutes.
to allow, permettre.
almost, presque.
alone, seul.
already, déjà.
also, aussi.
although, quoique, bien que.
always, toujours.
am to, devoir, § 447.
America, l'Amérique, *f.*
American, américain.
amiable, aimable.

l'ami [lami], *m.*, **l'amie**, *f.*, friend, 9, 16.
amuser [amyze], to amuse, 34.
l'an [lɑ̃], *m.*, year, 29; **le jour de l'—**, New Year's Day, 34.
anglais [ɑ̃glɛ], English, 2.
l'animal [lanimal], *m.*, animal, 28.
l'année [lane], *f.*, year, 27.
l'anniversaire [laniversɛːr], *m.*, birthday, 34.
août [u], August, 34.
appeler [aple], to call, 16.
apporter [apɔrte], to bring, 13.
apprendre [aprɑ̃ːdr], to learn, 32.
après [aprɛ], after, 3.
l'après-midi [laprɛ midi], *f.*, afternoon, 23.
l'argent [larʒɑ̃], *m.*, silver, money, 16.
l'arme [larm], *f.*, weapon, 39.
l'armée [larme], *f.*, army, 39.
s'arrêter* [sarɛte], to stop, 38.
arriver* [arive], to arrive, 14.
assez [ase], enough, 17.
l'assiette [lasjɛt], *f.*, plate, 43.
assis [asi], seated, 32,
asseyez-vous! [aseje vu], sit down! 44.
attendre [atɑ̃ːdr], to wait (for), 32.
attraper [atrape], to catch, 36.
aujourd'hui [oʒurdyi], to-day, 22.
aussi [osi], also, 3; as, 28.
l'automne [lotɔn], *m.*, autumn, 27.
l'automobile [lotɔmɔbil], *f.*, automobile, 36.
autour (de) [otuːr (də)], around, 43.
autre [otr], other, 22.
avancer [avɑ̃se], to advance, be fast (*clock*), 24.
avant [avɑ̃] (*prep. of time*), before; 23; (*conj.*),—**que**, before, 41.
avec [avɛk], with, 9.
l'avocat [lavɔka], *m.*, lawyer, 29.
avoir [avwaːr], to have, 7; **il y a** [il ya], there is, there are, 7; ago, 29.
avril [avril], April, 34.

le bagage [bagaːʒ], baggage, 14.
le bain [bɛ̃], bath, 38; **la salle de —s**, bath-room, 38.

---

to amuse, amuser.
an, un, une.
and, et.
animal, l'animal, *m.*
another, un autre.
to answer, répondre (à).
any, du, *etc.*, § 123.
anything, quelque chose.
apple, la pomme.
April, avril.
are, sont; — **to**, devoir, § 447.
arm, le bras.
army, l'armée, *f.*
around, autour (de).
to arrive, arriver*.
as, comme, aussi; — . . . —, aussi . . . que.
to ask, ask for, demander (à).
to astonish, étonner.
at, à; — **last**, enfin; — **once**, tout de suite.
August, août.
aunt, la tante.
automobile, l'automobile, *f.*
autumn, l'automne, *m.*

back (to come), revenir*.
bad, mauvais.
badly, mal.

le **banc** [bã], bench, 2.
bas [ba], low; **en—**, downstairs, 7.
le **bas** [ba], stocking, 17.
la **bataille** [bataːj], battle, 39.
la **bateau** [bato], boat, 44.
le **bâtiment** [batimã], building, 11.
bâtir [batiːr], to build, 11.
se **battre*** [sə batr], to fight, 39.
beau, belle [bo, bɛl], beautiful, fine, handsome, 8.
beaucoup (de) [boku (də)], much, many, 17.
le **besoin** [bəzwɛ̃], need; **avoir—**, to need, 36.
bête [bɛːt], foolish, stupid, 36.
le **beurre** [bœːr], butter, 13.
bien [bjɛ̃], well, 23; very, 44; **— que**, although, 41.
bientôt [bjɛ̃to], soon, 16.
le **billet** [bijɛ], note, 14.
blanc, blanche [blã, blãːʃ] ,white, 8.
la **blanchisseuse** [blãʃisøːz], laundress, 37.
blesser [blɛse], to wound, hurt, 38.
bleu [blø], blue, 4.
boire [bwaːr], to drink, 22.
la **boîte** [bwaːt], box, 22, 31; **— aux lettres**, letter-box, 31.
bon, bonne [bõ, bɔn], good, 2, 8.
les **bonbons** [bõbõ], candy, 43.
bonjour [bõʒuːr], good morning, 21.
la **bonne** [bɔn], maid, servant, 7.
à bord [a bɔːr], on board, 44.
la **bouche** [buʃ], mouth, 41.
le **boucher** [buʃe], butcher, 26.
le **boulanger** [bulãʒe], baker, 26.
la **bouteille** [butɛːj], bottle, 22.

---

baggage, le bagage.
baker, le boulanger.
barracks, la caserne.
bath, le bain; **—-room**, la salle de bains.
battle, la bataille.
to be, être; (*health*), aller* (§ 419).
beautiful, beau, belle.
because, parce que.
bed, le lit; **to go to —**, se coucher*.
bedroom, la chambre à coucher.
before (*of time*), avant; (*of place*), devant; (*conj.*), avant que.
to beg, prier.
to begin, commencer.
beginning, le commencement.
behind, derrière.
to believe, croire.
bell, la sonnette.
to belong, être à.
bench, le banc.
beside, à côté (de).
best (*adj.*), le meilleur; (*adv.*), le [meiux.
better (*adj.*), meilleur; (*adv.*), mieux; **it is —**, il vaut mieux.
between, entre.
big, grand.
bill, la note.
bill-of-fare, la carte.
bird, l'oiseau, *m.*
birthday, l'anniversaire, *m.*
black, noir; **to —**, cirer.
blue, bleu.
board (on), à bord (de).
boarding-house, la pension.
boat, le bateau.
book, le livre.
born, né*.
both, tous les deux.
bottle, la bouteille.
box, la boîte.
boy, le garçon.

le bras [bra], arm, 37.
briller [brije], to shine, 27.
brosser [brɔse], to brush, 32.
bu [by], drunk, 22; (*p. p. of* **boire**, to drink).
le buffet [byfɛ], lunch-counter, 14.

la cabine [kabin], cabin, 44.
le cadeau [kado], present, gift, 34.
le café [kafe], coffee, 13; café, 22.
le cahier [kaje], copy-book, 1.
la campagne [kɑ̃paɲ], country, 28.
le capitaine [kapitɛn], captain, 39.
la carte [kart], bill-of-fare, 16; card, 31.
la carte-postale [kart pɔstal], post-card, 31; — **illustrée**, picture post-card, 31.
la caserne [kazɛrn], barracks, 39.
causer [koze], to chat, 42.
ce, cet, cette [sə, sɛt], this, that, 23; **ce qui, ce que**, what (*rel.*), 36.
ceci [səsi], this, 23.
cela [səla], that, 23.
celle [sɛl], *f.*, that, this, the one, 43.
celui [səlyi], *m.*, that, this, the one, 43.
cent [sɑ̃], hundred, 29.
le centime [sɑ̃tim], centime, 17.
certain [sɛrtɛ̃], certain, 33.
chacun [ʃakœ̃], each one, 43.
la chaise [ʃɛːz], chair, 7.
la chambre [ʃɑ̃ːbr], room, 6; — **à coucher** [kuʃe], bedroom, 7.
le champ [ʃɑ̃], field, 28.
chanter [ʃɑ̃te], to sing, 3.
le chapeau [ʃapo], hat, 11.
chaque [ʃak], each, 43.
charmer [ʃarme], to charm, 43.
chaud [ʃo], hot, warm, 27; **avoir —**, to be warm, 36.

---

bread, le pain.
to break, casser.
breakfast, le déjeuner; **to —**, déjeuner.
to bring, apporter.
brother, le frère.
to brush, brosser.
to build, bâtir.
building, le bâtiment.
but, mais.
butcher, le boucher.
butter, le beurre.
to buy, acheter.
by, par.

cabby, le cocher.
cabin, la cabine.
café, le café.
cake, le gâteau.
to call, appeler.
can (=*to be able*), pouvoir.
candy, les bonbons, *m.*
captain, le capitaine.
car, la voiture (*railway*).
card, la carte.
carpenter, le menuisier.
carriage, la voiture.
to carry, porter.
to catch, attraper.
centime, le centime.
certain, certain.
chair, la chaise.
chambermaid, la femme de chambre.
to charm, charmer.
to chat, causer.
cheap, bon marché.

le chauffeur [ʃofœ:r], chauffeur, 36.
la chaussette [ʃosɛt], sock, 37.
le chemin [ʃəmɛ̃], way, road, 12.
la chemise [ʃəmi:z], shirt, 37,
cher, chère [ʃɛ:r], dear, 18.
chercher [ʃɛrʃe], to seek, look for, 4.
le cheval [ʃəval], horse, 28,
les cheveux [ʃəvø], *m.*, hair, 38.
chez [ʃe], at (in, to) the house (shop, *etc.*) of, 18.
choisir [ʃwazi:r], to choose, 8.
la chose [ʃo:z], thing, 17.
-ci [si], here, 23.
le ciel [sjɛl], sky, heaven, 27.
le cigare [sigɑ:r], cigar, 22.
la cigarette [sigarɛt], cigarette, 22.
le cinéma [sinema], moving-picture show, 36.
cinq [sɛ̃k], five, 16.
cinquante [sɛ̃kɑ̃:t], fifty, 17.
cirer [sire], to black (*shoes*), 32.
clair [klɛ:r], light (*of colors*), 33; clear, 36.
la classe [klas], class, 3; **salle de —**, class-room, 1.
le client [kliɑ̃], customer, 33.
le cocher [kɔʃe], coachman cabby, 16.
le coin [kwɛ̃], corner, 12.
le colis [kɔli], package, parcel, 14; **— postal**, parcel-post package, 31.
le collège [kɔlɛ:ʒ], school, 28.
combien [kɔ̃bjɛ̃], how much, how many, 17; **— de temps**, how long, 34.
la comédie [kɔmedi], comedy, 36.
commander [kɔmɑ̃de], to order, 18.
comme [kɔm], as, like, how, 32, 37.
le commencement [kɔmɑ̃smɑ̃], beginning, 28.
commencer [kɔmɑ̃se], to begin, 36.
comment [kɔmɑ̃], how, 37.
comprendre [kɔ̃prɑ̃:dr], to understand, 32.
conduire [kɔ̃dyi:r], to conduct, drive, 21.
la connaissance [kɔnɛsɑ̃:s], acquaintance, 43.
connaître [kɔnɛ:tr], to know, 42.
content [kɔ̃tɑ̃], glad, 42.
le costume [kɔstym], suit, 18.

---

child, l'enfant, *m. or f.*
to choose, choisir.
Christmas, Noël, *m.*; **Merry —**, joyeux Noël.
church, l'église, *f.*
cigar, le cigare.
cigarette, la cigarette.
city, la ville.
class, la classe.
class-room, la salle de classe.
clean, propre.
clerk, l'employé, *m.*
clock, la pendule.
to close, fermer.
clothes, les vêtements, *m.*
cloud, le nuage.
coach, la voiture.
coachman, le cocher.
coffee, le café.
cold, froid; (*illness*), le rhume; **to be —**, avoir froid; **to catch —**, attraper un rhume.
color, la couleur.
to comb, peigner.
to come, venir*; **— back**, revenir*; **— in**, entrer*; **— down**, descendre*.
comedy, la comédie.
to complain, se plaindre*.
to conduct, conduire.

le côté [kote], side; à—de, beside, 22.
le coton [kɔtõ], cotton, 17.
se coucher* [sə kuʃe], to go to bed, 38.
la couleur [kulœːr], color, 33
la cour [kuːr], yard, 4.
la course [kurs], errand, 26.
le cousin [kuzɛ̃], –e [kuzin], *f.*, cousin, 9.
le couteau [kuto], knife, 43.
coûter [kute], to cost, 19.
couvrir [kuvriːr], to cover, 44.
craindre [krɛ̃ːdr], to fear, 44.
la cravate [kravat], cravat, 19.
le crayon [krɛjõ], pencil, 1.
la crème [krɛːm], cream, 13.
croire [krwaːr], to believe, 37.
la cuiller [kyjɛːr], spoon, 43.
la cuisine [kyizin], kitchen, 7.
la cuisinière [kyizinjɛːr], cook, 7.

la dame [dam], lady, 21.
dans [dɑ̃], in, into, 1.
de [də], of, from, 1.
décembre [desɑ̃ːbr], December, 34
déjà [deʒa], already, 21.
déjeuner [deʒœne], tobreakfast, 7.
demain [dəmɛ̃], to-morrow, 34.
demander (à) [dəmɑ̃de (a)], to ask (for), 16.
demeurer [dəmœre], to live, 29.
demi [dəmi], half, 24.
la dent [dɑ̃], tooth, 38.
la dentelle [dɑ̃tɛl], lace, 19.
se dépêcher* [sə depɛʃe], to hurry, 37.
depuis [dəpyi], since, from, 34;—quand, how long, 34.
dernier, –ère [dɛrnje, dɛrnjɛːr], last, 32.
derrière [dɛrjɛːr], behind, 23.
descendre* [dɛsɑ̃ːdr], to come (get) down, 11.
se déshabiller* [sə dezabije], to undress, 38.
désirer [dezire], to wish, 17.
deux [dø], two, 11; tous les —, both, 29.
deuxième [døzjɛm], second, 32.
devant [dəvɑ̃], in front of, 1.
devoir [dəvwaːr], to owe, must, ought, am to, 43.
le devoir [dəvwaːr], paper, exercise, 2.
dévouer [devwe], to devote, 44.

cook, la cuisinière.
copy-book, le cahier.
corner, le coin.
to cost, coûter.
cotton, le coton.
country, le pays, la campagne; in the —, à la campagne.
cousin, le cousin, la cousine.
cow, la vache.
cream, la crème.
cravat, la cravate.
to cover, couvrir.
to cross, traverser.
cup, la tasse.
customer, le client.
custom-house, la douane.

dark (*of colors*), foncé.
daughter, la fille.
day, le jour; every —, tous les jours.
dead, mort.
a great deal, beaucoup.
dear, cher, chère.
death, la mort.
to deceive, tromper.
December, décembre.

difficile [difisil], difficult, 2.
le dimanche [dimã:ʃ], Sunday, 19.
dîner [dine], to dine, 7.
dire [di:r], to say, 19.
dit [di], said, 21; (*p. p. of* **dire**, to say).
dix [dis], ten, 24.
dix-huit [di zyit], eighteen, 28.
dix-neuf [diz nœf], nineteen, 28.
dix-sept [dis sɛt], seventeen, 28.
donc [dõ:k *or* dõ], then, so, therefore, 22.
donne [dɔn], gives, 2.
donner [dɔne], to give, 3.
dont [dõ], of which, of whom, whose, 44.
dormir [dɔrmi:r], to sleep, 38.
la douane [dwan], custom-house, 44.
douter [dute], to doubt, 42.
douze [du:z], twelve, 24.
le drapeau [drapo], flag, 39.
droit [drwa], right; **à —e**, to (on) the right, 31.
drôle [dro:l], funny, 36.
l'eau [lo], *f*,, water, 13.
l'éclair [lekle:r], *m.*, lightning, 27.
l'école [lekɔl], *f.*, school, 1.
écouter [ekute], to listen, 23.
écrire [ekri:r], to write, 31.
l'église [legli:z], *f.*, church, 12.
eh bien! [e bjɛ̃], well!
l'élève [lelɛ:v], *m. or f.*, pupil, 1.
elle [ɛl], *f.*, she, her, it, 3.
l'employé [lãplwaje], *m.*, employee, 17.
en [ã], some, any; of it, of them, 13.
en [ã], in, 21; **—bas**, downstairs, 7; **—haut**, upstairs, 7.
encore [ãkɔ:r], still, yet, again, 19.
l'encre [lã:kr], *f.*, ink, 4.
l'enfant [lãfã], *m. or f.*, child, 4.
enfin [ãfɛ̃], at last, finally, 23.
enseigner (à) [ãsɛɲe], to teach, 4.
ensemble [ɑsã:bl], together, 24.
entendre [ãtã:dr], to hear, 11.
entre [ã:tr], between, 12.
entrer* (**dans**) [ãtre (dã)], to go in, enter, 6.
envelopper [ãvlɔpe], to wrap, 33.

---

deck, le pont.
to depart, partir*.
to devote, dévouer.
to die, mourir*.
difficult, difficile.
to dine, dîner.
dining-room, la salle à manger.
dirty, sale.
to do, faire.
doctor, le médecin.
door, la porte.
to doubt, douter.
downstairs, en bas.
drawing-room, le salon.
dress, la robe; **to —**, habiller.
to drink, boire.
to drive, conduire.
during, pendant.
dust, la poussière.

each, chaque; **— one**, chacun.
early, de bonne heure.
Easter, Pâques, *m.*
easy, facile.
to eat, manger.
eight, huit.
eighteen, dix-huit.
eleven, onze.
employee, l'employé, *m.*
end, la fin.
English, anglais.
enough, assez.
to enter, entrer* (dans).

envoyer [ɑ̃vwaje], to send, 31.
l'épée [lepe], *f.*, sword, 39.
l'épicier [lepisje] *m.*, grocer, 26.
épouser [epuze], to marry, 29.
l'escalier [lɛskalje], *m.*, staircase, 7.
essayer [ɛsɛje], to try, 33.
est [ɛ], is, 1; (belongs), 26; **n'est-ce pas?** [nɛs pɑ], is it not (so);? **est-ce que** [ɛs kə] (*introduces a question*), 2.
et [e], and, 3.
les États-Unis [le zeta zyni], *m.*, the United States, 32.
l'été [lete], *m.*, summer, 27.
étonner [etɔne], to astonish, 21.
l'étranger [letrɑ̃ʒe], *m.*, stranger, foreigner, 32.
être [ɛːtr], to be, 14; **—à**, to belong to, 26.
l'étude [letyd], *f* , study, 2.
eux [ø], they, them, 22.

facile [fasil], easy, 2.
le facteur [faktœːr], porter, 14; postman, 31.
faible [fɛbl], weak, 41.
la faim [fɛ̃], hunger; **avoir—**, to be hungry, 24.
faire [fɛːr], to do, make, 26; **— beau (temps)**, to be fine (weather), 27.
la famille [fami:j], family, 9.
fatiguer [fatige], to tire, 37.
il faudra [fodra], it will be necessary, 44.
il faut [il fo], it is necessary, must, 42.
le faux-col [fo kɔl], collar, 19.
la femme [fam], woman, wife, 9.
la fenêtre [fənɛːtr], window, 1.
la ferme [fɛrm], farm, 28.
fermer [fɛrme], to shut, close, 6.
la fête [fɛːt], holiday, 34.
février [fevrie], February, 34.
le fiancé [fjɑ̃se], fiancé, 29.
la figure [figyːr], face, 38.
la fille [fi:j], daughter, girl, 4, 9.
le fils [fis], son, 9.
la fin [fɛ̃], end, 28.
finir [finiːr], to finish, 8.

---

errand, la course.
evening, le soir.
every, tout; chaque.
everybody, tout le monde
evil, le mal.
exercise, le devoir.
eye, l'œil, *m.*; *pl.* yeux.

face, la figure.
to fall, tomber*.
family, la famille.
far, loin.
farm, la ferme.
fashion, la mode.
fashionable, à la mode.
fast, vite; **to be —** (*watch*), avancer.
father, le père.
to fatigue, fatiguer.
fear, la peur.
to fear, craindre, avoir peur.
February, février.
to feel, sentir; **to — well**, *etc.*, se sentir* bien, *etc.*
few, peu.
fewer, moins.
fiancé, le fiancé.
field, le champ.
fifteen, quinze.
fifty, cinquante.
to fight, se battre*.
finally, enfin.
to find, trouver.
fine, beau.

la fleur [flœːr], flower, 8.
la fois [fwa], time, 23.
foncé [fɔ̃se], dark (*of colors*), 33.
fort [fɔːr], strong, 41.
la fourchette [furʃɛt], fork, 43.
le franc [frɑ̃], franc (20 *cents*), 17.
français [frɑ̃sɛ], French, 2.
la France [frɑ̃ːs], France.
frapper [frape], to strike, knock, 11.
le frère [frɛːr], brother, 9.
froid [frwa], cold, 27; **avoir —**, to be cold, 36.
fumer [fyme], to smoke, 22.
le fusil [fyzi], gun, 39.

gagner [gaɲe], to gain, win, 39.
le gant [gɑ̃], glove, 33.
le garçon [garsɔ̃], boy, 4; waiter, 13.
la gare [gaːr], railway station, 14.
le gâteau [gɑto], cake, 23.
gauche [goʃ], left; **à—**, to (on) the left, 31.
le général, *pl.* généraux [ʒeneral, ʒenero], general, 39.
la glace [glas], ice, 27; mirror, 38.
grand [grɑ̃], large, great, big, 4.
la grand'mère [grɑ̃mɛːr], grandmother, 29,
le grand-père [grɑ̃pɛːr], grandfather, 29.
gris [grɪ], gray, 18.
la guerre [gɛːr], war, 39.
le guichet [giʃɛ], ticket- *or* stamp-window, 14.

---

to finish, finir.
first, premier, –ère.
five, cinq.
flag, le drapeau.
floor, plancher; **on the second —**, au premier.
flower, la fleur.
foolish, bête.
foot, le pied; **on —**, à pied.
for, pour.
foreigner, l'étranger, *m.*
to forget, oublier.
fork, la fourchette.
forty, quarante.
four, quatre.
franc, le franc.
French, français.
Frenchman, le Français.
Friday, le vendredi.
friend, l'ami, *m.*; l'amie, *f.*
from, de.
in front of, devant.
funny, drôle.

to gain, gagner.
garden, le jardin.
gate, la porte.
general, le général.
German, allemand.
to get, chercher; — **down**, descendre*; — **out**, sortir*, descendre*; — **into**, monter*; — **up**, se lever*.
gift, le cadeau.
girl, la fille.
to give, donner; — **back**, rendre.
glad, content.
glass, le verre, la glace (*mirror*).
glove, le gant.
to go, aller*; — **away**, partir*; — **in**, entrer*; — **out**, sortir*; — **to bed**, se coucher*; — **up**, monter*; — (**right**) (*of clocks*), marcher (bien); — **down**, descendre*.
good, bon, –ne; — **morning**, bonjour.
grandfather, le grand-père.

habiller [abije], to dress, 37.
l'**habit** [labi], *m.*, coat, 18.
'**haut** [o], high; **en —**, upstairs, 7.
Henri [ɑ̃ri], Henry, 23.
Henriette [ɑ̃rjɛt], Henrietta, 26.
l'**herbe** [lɛrb], *f.*, grass, 8,
l'**heure** [lœːr], *f.*, hour, time, o'clock, 23, 24; **de bonne —**, early, 21; **de meilleure —**, earlier, 37.
heureux, –se, [œrø, œrøːz], happy, 31.
hier [jɛːr], yesterday, 26.
l'**histoire** [listwaːr], *f.*, story, 2.
l'**hiver** [livɛːr], *m.*, winter, 27.
l'**homme** [lɔm], *m.*, man, 23.
l'**hôtel** [lotɛl], *m.*, hotel, 32.
'**huit** [yit], eight, 24.

ici [isi], here, 7.
il [il], *m.*, he, it, 3.
il y a [il ja], there is, there are, 7; ago, 29.

---

grandmother, la grand'mère.
grass, l'herbe, *f.*
ground-floor, le rez-de-chaussée.
gray, gris.
green, vert.
grocer, l'épicier, *m.*
to grow, pousser.
guest, l'invité, *m.*
to guide, mener.
gun, le fusil.

hair, les cheveux, *m.*
half, demi, la moitié; **— past**, et demie.
hand, la main.
handkerchief, le mouchoir.
handsome, beau, belle.
happy, heureux, –se.
hat, le chapeau.
to have, avoir; **— to**, devoir, § 447.
he, il.
head, la tête; **— ache**, mal à la tête.
health, la santé.
to hear, entendre.
heaven, le ciel.
Henry, Henri.
Henrietta, Henriette.
her (*pron.*), elle, la; **to —**, lui; (*adj.*), son, sa, ses.
here, ici; **— is, — are**, voici.
hers, le sien.
herself, se, elle.
him, le, lui.
himself, se, lui.
his (*adj.*), son, sa, ses; (*pron.*), le sien.
to hold, tenir.
holiday, la fête.
at home, chez . . .
horse, le cheval, *pl.* les chevaux.
hot, chaud; **to be —**, avoir chaud.
hotel, l'hôtel, *m.*
hour, l'heure, *f.*; **at what —**, à quelle heure.
house, la maison; **at (in, to) the — of**, chez . . .
how, comment; **— are you?** comment allez-vous?; **— much**, combien (de).
however, pourtant.
hunger, la faim; **to be hungry**, avoir faim.
to hurry, se dépêcher*.
to hurt, blesser; faire mal à . . .
husband, le mari.

ice, la glace.
if, si.

illustré [ilystré], *see* **carte-postale**.
impossible [ɛ̃pɔsibl], impossible, 42.
l'invité [lɛ̃vite], *m.*, guest, 43.
inviter [ɛ̃vite], to invite, 42.

jamais [ʒamɛ], ever; **ne . . . —**, never, 32.
janvier [ʒɑ̃vje], January, 34.
le jardin [ʒardɛ̃], garden, 8.
jaune [ʒon], yellow, 33.
je [ʒə], I, 3.
Jean [ʒɑ̃], John, 7.
le jeudi [ʒœdi], Thursday, 23.
jeune [ʒœn], young, 29.
joli [ʒɔli], pretty, 23.
jouer [ʒwe], to play, 4.
le jour [ʒu:r], day, 21; **tous les —s**, every day, 21.
le journal *pl.* **journaux** [ʒurnal, ʒurno], newspaper, 38.
joyeux -se [ʒwajø, ʒwajø:z], joyful, 34.
juillet [ʒyijɛ], July, 34.
juin [ʒyɛ̃], June, 34.
jusqu'à [ʒyska], as far as, up to, till, 34.

la [la], the, 1; her, it, 18.
là [la], there, 7.
la laine [lɛn], wool, 18
laisser [lɛse], to let, leave, 16.
le lait [lɛ], milk, 13.
la langue [lɑ̃:g], tongue, language, 4.
large [larʒ], broad, wide, 33.
laver [lave], to wash, 37.
le [lə], the, 1; him, it, 18.
la leçon [ləsɔ̃], lesson, 2.

---

ill (*adj.*), malade; (*adv.*), mal.
illness, la maladie.
immediately, tout de suite.
impossible, impossible.
in, dans, en.
ink, l'encre, *f.*
into, dans.
to introduce, présenter.
to invite, inviter.
is, est; — **to**, devoir, § 447.
it, il, elle, le, la; **of —**, en.

January, janvier.
John, Jean.
journey, le voyage.
joyous, joyeux, -se.
July, juillet.
June, juin.

to kill, tuer.
kind, bon, aimable.
kitchen, la cuisine.
knife, le couteau.
to knock, frapper.
to know, connaître, savoir.

lace, la dentelle.
lady, la dame.
land, la terre.
language, la langue.
large, grand.
last, dernier, dernière.
late, tard.
laundress, la blanchisseuse.
lawyer, l'avocat.
to lead, conduire.
to learn, apprendre.
least, le moins; **at —**, au moins.
to leave (*go away*), partir*.
left, gauche.
less, moins.
lesson, la leçon.

le **légume** [legym], vegetable, 23.
lent [lɑ̃], slow, 36.
lequel, laquelle [ləkɛl, lakɛl], which, 44.
les [le], the; them.
la **lettre** [lɛtr], letter, 31.
leur [lœːr], to them, 19; their, 9; le —, theirs, 43.
lever [ləve], to raise, 37; se —*, to rise, get up, 37.
le **lieutenant** [ljœtnɑ̃], lieutenant, 39.
le **linge** [lɛ̃ːʒ], linen (washing), 37.
lire [liːr], to read, 36.
le **lit** [li], bed, 32.
le **livre** [liːvr], book, 1.
loin [lwɛ̃], far, 42.
longtemps [lɔ̃tɑ̃], a long time, long, 27.
louer [lwe], to rent, 42.
lui [lyi], to him, to her, to it, 18; him, he, 19.
le **lundi** [lœ̃di], Monday, 23.

Madame [madam], Madam, Mrs., 16.
Mademoiselle [madmwazɛl], Miss, 21.
le **magasin** [magazɛ̃], store, 12.
mai [mɛ], May, 34.
la **main** [mɛ̃], hand, 38.
maintenant [mɛ̃tnɑ̃], now, 12.
mais [mɛ], but, 8.
la **maison** [mɛzɔ̃], house, 6.
le **maître** [mɛːtr], master, teacher, 1.
la **maîtresse** [mɛtrɛs], mistress, 1.
le **mal**, *pl.* **maux** [mal, mo], evil, pain, 41.
mal [mal], ill, badly, 24; **faire** —, to hurt, 41; **avoir** —**à la tête**, to have a head ache, 41.
malade [malad], ill, sick, 41.
la **maladie** [maladi], illness, 41.
la **malle** [mal], trunk, 14.
le **mandat** [mɑ̃da], money-order, 31.
manger [mɑ̃ʒe], to eat, 6.

---

let (*him, her, them*), que, § 418, 1.
to let, laisser.
letter, la lettre; — **-box**, la boîte aux lettres; — **-carrier**, le facteur.
lieutenant, le lieutenant.
life, la vie.
light (*of colors*), clair.
lightning, l'éclair, *m.*
like, comme.
to like, aimer.
linen, le linge.
to listen, écouter.
little (*adj.*), petit; (*adv.*), peu.
to live, demeurer.
living-room, le salon.
long: a — time, longtemps.
no longer, ne . . . plus.
to look at, regarder; — **for**, chercher.
to lose, perdre.
to love, aimer.
to lunch, déjeuner.
lunch-counter, le buffet.

maid, la bonne.
to make, faire.
man, l'homme, *m.*
many, beaucoup; **too** —, trop; **so** —, tant; **how** —, combien.
March, mars.
to march, marcher.
to marry, épouser, se marier*.
Mary, Marie.
master, le maître.
match, l'allumette, *f.*
matter: what is the — with you? qu'avez-vous?

le marchand [marʃɑ̃], dealer, merchant, 22.
marcher [marʃe], to walk, go, march, 12.
le marché [marʃe], market; **bon —**, cheap, 18.
le mardi [mardi], Tuesday, 18.
le mari [mari], husband, 9.
marier [marje], to marry, 29; **se —***, to get married, 37.
mars [mars], March, 34.
le matelot [matlo], sailor, 44.
le matin [matɛ̃], morning, 21.
mauvais [movɛ], bad, 27.
me [mə], me, to me, 18, 19.
le médecin [medsɛ̃], doctor, 29.
meilleur [mɛjœːr], better (*adj.*), 28.
même [mɛːm], same, 29.
menuisier [mənyizje], cabinet-maker, carpenter, 26.
la mer [mɛːr], sea, 44.
merci [mɛrsi], thank you, 16.
le mercredi [mɛrkrədi], Wednesday, 23.
la mère [mɛːr], mother, 9.
le métier [metje], trade, 26.
le mètre [mɛːtr], meter, 33.
mettre [mɛtr], to put, put on, place, set, 11.
midi [midi], *m.*, noon, 23.
le mien [mjɛ̃], mine, 43.
mieux [mjø], better (*adv.*), 28.
minuit [minyi], *m.*, midnight, 24.
la minute [minyt], minute, 24.
la mode [mɔd], fashion, 33; **à la —**, fashionable, 33.
la modiste [mɔdist], milliner, 19.
moi [mwa], me, to me, 19.
moins [mwɛ̃], less, fewer, 17; **à — que**, unless, 41; **au —**, at least, 29.
le mois [mwa], month, 27.
la moitié [mwatje], half, 31.
mon, ma, mes [mɔ̃, ma, me], my, 9.
le monde [mɔ̃ːd], world, 28; people, 21; **tout le —**, everybody, 28.
Monsieur [məsjø], Sir, Mr., gentleman, 13.
monter* [mɔ̃te], to go up, 7.
la montre [mɔ̃ːtr], watch, 24.
montrer [mɔ̃tre], to show, 19.
morceau [mɔrso], piece, 43.
la mort [mɔːr], death, 39.
mort* [mɔːr], dead, 29; (*p. p. of* **mourir***, to die).
le mot [mo], word, 3.

May, mai.
me, me, moi.
meal, le repas.
to mean, vouloir dire.
meat, la viande.
to meet, rencontrer.
to mend, raccommoder.
merchant, le marchand.
meter, le mètre.
midnight, minuit, *m.*
milk, le lait.
milliner, la modiste.
mine, le mien.
minute, la minute.
mirror, la glace.
mistake: to make a —, se tromper*.
mistress, la maîtresse.
Monday, le lundi.
money, l'argent, *m.*; **— -order**, le mandat.
month, le mois.
more, plus; **no —**, ne . . . plus.
morning, le matin.
most, le plus.
mother, la mère.
mouth, la bouche.
moving-picture show, le cinéma

le **mouchoir** [muʃwaːr], handkerchief, 19.
la **musique** [myzik], music, 21.

la **nappe** [nap], table-cloth, 43.
naturel, –le [natyrɛl], natural, 33.
n'est-ce pas? [nɛs pɑ], isn't that so? 23.
ne . . . pas [nə pɑ], not, 6.
ne . . . personne [pɛrsɔn], nobody, no one, 32.
ne . . . plus [ply], no longer, 32.
ne . . . que [kə], only, nothing but, 32.
né [ne], born, 29; (*p. p. of* **naître***, to be born).
la **neige** [nɛːʒ], snow, 29.
neuf [nœf], nine, 24.
le **neveu** [nəvø], nephew, 29.
la **nièce** [njɛs], niece, 29.
Noël [nɔɛl], *m.*, Christmas, 34.
noir [nwaːr], black, 4.
non [nõ], no, not, 2.
la **note** [nɔt], bill, 23.
notre, nos [nɔtr, no], our, 9.
le **nôtre** [noːtr], ours, 43.
nous [nu], we, 3; us, to us, 18, 19; ourselves, 37.
novembre [nɔvɑ̃ːbr], November, 34.
le **nuage** [nyaːʒ], cloud, 27.
la **nuit** [nyi], night, 36.
le **numéro** [nymero], number, 32.

obliger [ɔbliʒe], to oblige, 26.
l'**occasion** [lɔkɑzjõ], *f.*, opportunity, 42.
l'**œillet** [lœjɛ], *m.*, pink, 8.

---

much, beaucoup (de); **as —**, autant; **too —**, trop; **how —**, combien.
music, la musique.
must, il faut que, § 429; devoir, § 447.
my, mon, ma, mes.

napkin, la serviette.
natural, naturel, –le.
near, près de.
nearly, presque.
it is necessary, il faut, § 429.
necktie, la cravate.
to need, avoir besoin de.
nephew, le neveu.
never, ne . . . jamais.
New Year's Day, le jour de l'an; **Happy New Year**, bonne année.
newspaper, le journal.
niece, la nièce.
night, la nuit.
nine, neuf.
nineteen, dix-neuf.
no, non; **— longer**, **— more**, ne . . . plus; **— one**, ne . . . personne; **no . . .**, § 248.
nobody, ne . . . personne.
noon, midi, *m.*
none, § 123.
not, ne . . . pas.
nothing, ne . . . rien.
November, novembre.
now, maintenant.
number, le numéro.

to oblige, obliger.
o'clock, l'heure, *f.*
October, octobre.
of, de.
often, souvent.
old, vieux, vieille.

l'oiseau [lwazo], *m.*, bird, 28.
on [õ], one, people, we, you, they, 24.
l'oncle [lõ:kl], *m.*, uncle, 9.
onze [õ:z], eleven, 24.
ou [u], or, 9.
où [u], where, 1.
oublier [ublie], to forget, 23.
oui [wi], yes, 2.
ouvert [uvɛ:r], open, 27; (*p. p. of* **ouvrir**, to open).
l'ouvrier [luvrie], *m.*, workman, 26.
ouvrir [uvri:r], to open, 26, 44.

la paille [pa:j], straw, 33.
le pain [pɛ̃], bread, 13.
la paire [pɛ:r], pair, 33.
la paix [pɛ], peace, 39.
le pantalon [pãtalõ], trousers, 18.
le paquebot [pakbo], steamer, 44.
Pâques [pɑ:k], *m.*, Easter, 34.
le paquet [pakɛ], parcel, bundle, 33.
par [pa:r], by, through, 43.
le parc [park], park, 12.
parce que [pars kə], because, 16.
le pardessus [pardəsy], overcoat, 18.
le parent [parã], relative, 9.
parfait [parfɛ], perfect, 38.
Paris [pari], Paris, 14.
parisien, –ne [parizjɛ̃, parizjɛn], Parisian, 32.
parler [parle], to speak, 3.
la partie [parti], part, 42.
partir* [parti:r], to depart, go away, leave, 14.
pas [pɑ], not, not any. *See* **ne**.
passer [pase], to pass; to spend, 33.
pauvre [po:vr], poor, 19.
payer [pɛje], to pay, 23.
le pays [pɛi], country, 41.
le paysan [pɛizã], peasant, 28.
peigner [pɛɲe], to comb, 38.
pendant [pãdã], during, 27;—que, while, 27.
la pendule [pãdyl], clock, 24.
penser [pãse], to think, 26.

---

on, sur.
on board, à bord.
once, une fois; at —, tout de suite.
one, un, une; (*pron.*), on; the —, celui, celle.
only, seulement, ne . . . que.
to open, ouvrir.
open, ouvert.
opportunity, l'occasion, *f.*
or, ou.
to order, commander.
in order that, afin que, pour que.
other, autre.
ought, devoir, § 447.
our, notre, nos.
ours, le nôtre.
overcoat, le pardessus.
to owe, devoir.

package, le colis.
pair, la paire.
paper, le devoir.
parcel, le colis.
parcel-post package, le colis postal.
Parisian, parisien, –ne.
park, le parc.
part, la partie.
to pass, passer.
to pay, payer.
peace, la paix.
peasant, le paysan.

la pension [pɑ̃sjɔ̃], pension; boarding-house, 42,
perdre [pɛrdr], to lose, 12.
le père [pɛːr], father, 9.
permettre [pɛrmɛtr], to permit, 43.
la personne [pɛrsɔn], person; **ne . . .** —, nobody, no one, 32.
petit [pəti], little, small, 4.
peu [pø], little, few, 16.
la peur [pœːr], fear; **avoir** —, to be afraid, 36.
peut-être [pøt-ɛtr], perhaps, 16.
la phrase [frɑːz], sentence, 3.
la pièce [pjɛs], play, 36.
le pied [pje], foot, 36.
Pierre [pjɛːr], Peter, 9.
la pipe [pip], pipe, 22.
la place [plas], place, seat, 14.
plaindre [plɛ̃ːdr], to pity, 44; **se** —*, to complain, 44.
le plaisir [plɛziːr], pleasure, 21.
s'il vous plaît [sil vu plɛ], if you please, 33.
pleuvoir [plœvwaːr], to rain, 27.
la pluie [plyi], rain, 27.
la plume [plym], pen, 2
plus [ply], more, most, 28; **ne . . . —**, not again, no more, no longer, 32.
plusieurs [plyzjœːr], several, 44.
poli [pɔli], polite, 32.
la pomme [pɔm], apple, 13; **—de terre**, potato, 13.
le pont [pɔ̃], bridge, deck, 44.
la porte [pɔrt], door, gate, 6.
porter[pɔrte], to carry, 16; wear, 18.
poser [poze], to place, 26.
possible [pɔsibl], possible, 28.
la poste [pɔst], post-office, 31.
le potage [pɔtaːʒ], soup, 13.
pour [puːr], for, 12; **—que**, in order that, 41.
le pourboire [purbwaːr], tip, 31.
pourquoi [purkwa], why, 26.
pourtant [purtɑ̃], however, 29.
pousser [puse], to grow, 8.
la poussière [pusjɛːr], dust, 28.
pouvoir [puvwaːr], to be able, 6.
premier, –ère [prəmje, prəmjɛːr] first, 32; **au** —, on the second floor, 32

---

pen, la plume.
pencil, le crayon.
people, le monde.
perfect, parfait.
perhaps, peut-être.
to permit, permettre.
Peter, Pierre.
piece, le morceau.
pink, l'œillet, *m.*
pipe, la pipe.
to pity, plaindre.
place, la place.
to place, mettre, poser.
plate, l'assiette, *f.*
play, la pièce.
to play, jouer.
pleasant, agréable.
if you please, s'il vous plaît.
pleasure, le plaisir.
polite, poli, –e.
poor, pauvre.
porter, le facteur.
possible, possible.
postal-parcel, le colis postal.
post-card, la carte postale; **picture** —, la carte postale illustrée.
postman, le facteur.
post-office, la poste.
potato, la pomme de terre.
to prefer, aimer mieux.
present, le cadeau.
to present, présenter.

prendre [prɑ̃:dr], to take, catch, 32.
près (de) [prɛ (də)], near, 22.
présenter [prezɑ̃te], to present, introduce, 43.
presque [prɛskə], almost, 21.
prier [prie], to pray, beg, 26.
le printemps [prɛ̃tɑ̃], spring, 27.
le prix [pri], price, 17.
le professeur [prɔfɛsœr], professor, 2.
se promener* [sə prɔmne], to take a walk, 37.
prononcer [prɔnõse], ta pronounce, 3.
propre [prɔpr], clean, 37.
la provision [prɔvizjõ], supply, 44.
puis [pyi], then, 21.

le quai [kɛ], wharf, 44.
la qualité [kalite], quality, 33.
quand [kɑ̃], when, 24.
quarante [karɑ̃:t], forty, 29.
quart [kar], quarter, fourth, 24; **—d'heure,** quarter of an hour, 24.
quatorze [katɔrz], fourteen, 28.
quatre [katr], four, 24.
quatre-vingts [katrə vɛ̃], eighty, 29.
que [kə], whom, which, that, let (§ 418), than, as; (*interrog.*), what; **ne . . . —,** only, 32.
quel [kɛl], what; which; what a . . .! 8.
quelque [kɛlkə], some, any, 31;— **chose,** something, 31,
quelqu'un [kɛlkœ̃], some one, 38.
quelquefois [kɛlkəfwa], sometimes, 31.
qu'est-ce qui? [kɛs ki], what? 44.
la question [kɛstjõ], question, 26.
qui [ki], who, which, that, 7; (*interrog. or after prep.*), who, whom, 11.
quinze [kɛ̃:z], fifteen, 28.
quoi [kwa], which, what, 44.
quoique [kwak], although, 41.

raccommoder [rakɔmɔde], to mend, 37.
la raison [rɛzõ], reason; **avoir —,** to be right, 36.
se rappeler* [sə raple], to remember, 38.

---

pretty, joli.
price, le prix.
professor, le professeur.
to pronounce, prononcer.
pupil, l'élève, *m. or f.*
purchase, l'achat, *m.*
to put, put on, mettre.

quality, la qualité.
quarter le quart.
queer, drôle.
question, la question.
quick, vite.

railroad, le chemin de fer.
railway car, le wagon.
railway station, la gare.
rain, la pluie; **to —,** pleuvoir.
to raise, lever.
to read, lire.
reason, la raison.
to receive, recevoir.
red, rouge.
to regret, regretter.
relative, le parent.
to remain, rester*.
to remember, se rappeler*.
to rent, louer.

recevoir [rəsəvwa:r], to receive, 43.
regarder [rəgarde], to look at, 24.
regretter [rəgrɛte], to regret, be sorry, 42.
rencontrer [rãkõtre], to meet, 11.
rendre [rã:dr], to give back, 39.
le **repas** [rəpɑ], meal, 42.
répondre (à) [repõ:dr (a)], to answer, 17.
se reposer* [sə rəpoze], to rest, 37.
le **restaurant** [rɛstərã], restaurant, 16.
rester* [rɛste], to remain, 42.
retarder [rətarde], to be slow (*of clocks*), 24.
revenir* [rəvəni:r], to come back, 28.
le **rez-de-chaussée** [re də ʃose], ground-floor, 32.
le **rhume** [rym], cold, 36.
rien [rjɛ̃]: **ne . . . —**, nothing, 32.
la **robe** [rɔb], dress, 17.
la **rose** [ro:z], rose, 8.
rouge [ru:ʒ], red, 4.
le **ruban** [rybã], ribbon, 19.
la **rue** [ry], street, 11.

saisir [sɛzi:r], to seize, 8.
la **saison** [sɛzõ], season, 27.
sale [sal], dirty, 37.
salir [sali:r], to soil, 28.
la **salle** [sal], room, 1;—**à manger** [mãʒe], dining-room, 6;—**d'attente** [datã:t], waiting-room, 14; —**de bains** [bɛ̃], bath-room, 38; —**de classe** [klas], class-room, 1.
le **salon** [salõ], drawing-room, 6.
le **samedi** [samdi], Saturday, 23.
sans [sã], without, 21.

---

to reply, répondre.
to rest, se reposer*.
restaurant, le restaurant.
to return, revenir*.
ribbon, le ruban.
right, droit; **to the —**, à droite; **to be —**, avoir raison.
to ring, sonner.
to rise, se lever*.
road, le chemin.
room, la chambre; la salle; **bed- —**, la chambre à coucher; **dining- —**, la salle à manger; **class- —**, la salle de classe; **bath- —**, la salle de bains; **waiting- —**, la salle d'attente.
rose, la rose.
to run, courir, marcher (*of clocks*).

sailor, le matelot.
same, même.
Saturday, le samedi.
to say, dire.
school, l'école, *f.*; **at —**, à l'école.
school-master, le maître d'école.
school-mistress, la maîtresse d'école.
sea, la mer.
season, la saison.
seat, la place.
seated, assis.
second, deuxième; **— floor**, le premier.
to see, voir.
to seek, chercher.
to seize, saisir.
to sell, vendre.
to send, envoyer.
sentence, la phrase.
September, septembre.
sermon, le sermon.
servant, la bonne.
to set, mettre.

la santé [sãte], health, 41.
savoir [savwa:r], to know, 26.
le savon [savõ], soap, 37.
la scène [sɛn], stage, 36.
se [sə], (to) himself, herself, itself, oneself, themselves, 37.
seize [sɛ:z], sixteen, 28.
la semaine [səmɛn], week, 23.
sentir [sãti:r], to feel, 38.
sept [sɛt], seven, 24.
septembre [sɛptã:br], September, 34.
le sermon [sɛrmõ], sermon, 21.
la serviette [sɛrvjɛt], towel, 37; napkin, 43.
seul [sœl], alone, 22.
seulement [sœlmã], only, 23.
si [si], if, 18; so, 23.
le sien [sjɛ̃], his, hers, its, 42.
six [sis], six, 24.
la sœur [sœ:r], sister, 9.
la soie [swa], silk, 17.
la soif [swaf], thirst; **avoir—**, to be thirsty, 24.
le soir [swa:r], evening, 23.
soixante [swasã:t], sixty, 29.
soixante-dix [dis], seventy, 29.
le soldat [sɔlda], soldier, 39.
le soleil [sɔlɛ:j], sun, 27.
le sommeil [sɔmɛ:j], sleep; **avoir —**, to be sleepy, 36.
son, sa, ses [sõ, sa, se], his, her, its, 9.
la sonnette [sɔnɛt], bell, 6.
sonner [sɔne], to ring, 6.
sont [sõ], are, 2.

---

seven, sept.
seventy, soixante-dix.
several, plusieurs.
to shine, briller.
shirt, la chemise.
shoe, le soulier.
shop: to the — of, chez . . .
to show, montrer.
to shut, fermer.
sick, malade.
sickness, la maladie.
side, le côté.
sidewalk, le trottoir.
silk, la soie.
since, depuis; — **when**, depuis quand, depuis combien de temps.
to sing, chanter.
sir, monsieur.
sister, la sœur.
sit down! asseyez-vous!
six, six.
sixteen, seize.
sky, le ciel.
to sleep, dormir.
sleep, le sommeil.
to be sleepy, avoir sommeil.
slow, lent; **to be —** (*of clocks*), retarder.
small, petit.
to smoke, fumer.
snow, la neige.
so, donc, si; — **many**, — **much**, tant; — **that**, afin que.
soap, le savon.
sock, la chaussette.
to soil, salir.
soldier, le soldat.
some, du, § 123, quelque.
some one, quelqu'un.
something, quelque chose.
sometimes, quelquefois.
son, le fils.
soon, bientôt.
sorry, fâché; **to be —**, être fâché de; regretter.
soup, le potage.
to speak, parler.
to spend (*time*), passer.

sortir* [sɔrti:r], to go out, 14.
le soulier [sulje], shoe, 32.
sous [su], under, 37.
souvent [suvã], often, 22.
le sucre [sykr], sugar, 26.
tout de suite [tu də syit], at once, 19.
sur [sy:r], on, 1.

le tabac [taba], tobacco, 22.
la table [tabl], table, 1.
le tailleur [tajœ:r], tailor, 18.
tant [tã], so much, so many, 17.
la tante [tã:t], aunt, 9.
tard [ta:r], late, 21.
la tasse [tas], cup, 43.
le taxi [taksi], taxi, taxicab, 36.
le temps [tã], time, 31; weather, 32; à—, in time, 36; combien de—, how long, 34.
tenir [təni:r], to hold, 33.
la terre [tɛ:r], land, 44.
la tête [tɛ:t], head, 41.
le thé [te], tea, 26.
le théâtre [teɑ:tr], theater, 36.
le timbre [tɛ̃:br], stamp, 31.
la toilette [twalɛt], toilette, 38.
tomber* [tõbe], to fall, 27.
le tonnerre [tɔnɛ:r], thunder, 27.
le tort [tɔ:r], wrong; avoir—, to be wrong, 36.

---

spoon, la cuiller.
spring, le printemps.
stage, la scène.
stairs, l'escalier, *m.*
stamp, le timbre; — **-window**, le guichet.
to start, partir*.
station, la gare.
to stay, rester*.
steamer, le paquebot.
still, encore.
stocking, le bas.
store, le magasin.
to stop, s'arrêter*.
story, l'histoire, *f.*
stranger, l'étranger, *m.*
straw, la paille.
street, la rue; — **-car**, le tramway.
to strike, frapper.
strong, fort.
stupid, bête.
study, l'étude, *f.*
sugar, le sucre.
suit, le costume.
summer, l'été, *m.*
sun, le soleil.
Sunday, le dimanche.
sword, l'épée, *f.*

table, la table; — **-cloth**, la nappe.
tailor, le tailleur.
to take, prendre.
to talk, parler.
taxi, taxicab, le taxi.
tea, le thé.
to teach, enseigner.
teacher, le maître, la maîtresse.
to tell, dire.
ten, dix.
than, que.
thank you, merci.
that (*adj.*), ce, cet, cette; (*pron.*), celui, celle; celui-là, celle-là; cela; (*rel. pron.*), qui, que; (*conj.*), que.
the, le, la, les.
theater, le théâtre.
their, leur.
theirs, le leur.
them, les, eux, elles; to —, leur.
themselves, se, eux.

toujours [tuʒuːr], always, 18.
tout, –e, tous, toutes [tu, tut], all, 9; **tous les deux**, both, 29; **tous les . . .**, every . . ., 21; **tout de suite**, at once, 19.
la tragédie [traʒedi], tragedy, 36.
le train [trɛ̃], train, 14.
le tramway [tramwɛ], street-car, 12.
le travail [travaːj], work, 8.
travailler [travaje], to work, 26.
à travers [a travɛːr], across, 26.
traverser [travɛrse], to cross, 44.
treize [trɛːz], thirteen, 28.
trente [trɑ̃ːt], thirty, 29.
très [trɛ], very, 7.
trois [trwa], three, 22.
tromper [trɔ̃pe], to deceive, 37; **se —***, to be mistaken, 37.
le trottoir [trɔtwaːr], sidewalk, 12.
trop [tro], too much, too many, too, 17.

---

then, puis.
there, là, y; — **is**, — **are**, il y a, voilà.
therefore, donc.
these (*adj.*), ces; (*pron.*), ceux-ci, celles-ci.
they, ils, on.
thing, la chose.
to think, penser.
third, troisième.
thirst, la soif; **to be thirsty**, avoir soif.
thirty, trente.
this (*adj.*), ce, cet, cette; (*pron.*), celui, celle; celui-ci, celle-ci; ceci.
those (*adj.*), ces; (*pron.*), ceux-là, celles-là.
three, trois.
through, par.
thunder, le tonnerre.
Thursday, le jeudi.
ticket, le billet; — **-window**, le guichet.
till, jusqu'à.
time, le temps; la fois; l'heure, *f.*
tip, le pourboire.
to tire, fatiguer.
to, à.
tobacco, le tabac.
tobacconist, le marchand de tabac.
to-day, aujourd'hui.
together, ensemble.
to-morrow, demain.
tongue, la langue.
too, aussi; trop; — **much**, trop.
tooth, la dent; — **ache**, mal aux dents.
towel, la serviette.
town, la ville; **in** —, en ville.
trade, le métier.
tragedy, la tragédie.
train, le train.
to travel, voyager.
traveler, le voyageur.
trousers, le pantalon.
true, vrai.
trunk, la malle.
to try, essayer.
Tuesday, le mardi.
tulip, la tulipe.
twelve, douze; — **o'clock**, midi, minuit.
twenty, vingt.
twice, deux fois.
two, deux.

uncle, l'oncle, *m*
under, sous.
to understand, comprendre.
to undress, déshabiller*.
United States, les États-Unis, *m.*
unless, à moins que.

trouver [truve], to find, 4.
tuer [tye], to kill, 39.
la tulipe [tylip], tulip, 8.

un, une [œ̃, yn], a, an, one, 3.

les vacances [vakɑ̃:s], *f.*, vacation, 28,
la vache [vaʃ], cow, 28,
la valise [vali:z], valise, 14.
il vaut [il vo], it is worth, 33;— **mieux**, it is better, 39,
le velours [vəlu:r], velvet, 19.
vendre [vɑ̃:dr], to sell, 11.
le vendredi [vɑ̃drədi], Friday, 23.
venir* [vəni:r], to come, 14.
le vent [vɑ̃], wind, 27.
le verre [vɛ:r], glass, 18.
vert [vɛ:r], green, 4.
les vêtements [vɛtmɑ̃]. *m.*, clothes, 19.
la viande [vjɑ̃:d], meat, 13.
la vie [vi], life, 42.
vieux, vieille [vjø, vjɛ:j], old, 8.
le village [vila:ʒ], village, 28.
la ville [vil], city, 12.
le vin [vɛ̃], wine, 13.
vingt [vɛ̃], twenty, 19.
la visite [vizit], visit, 34.
vite [vit], quickly, 36.

---

until, jusqu'à.
upstairs, en haut.
us, **to us**, nous.
to use to, § 262.

vacation, les vacances, *f.*
valise, la valise.
vegetable, le légume.
velvet, le velours.
very, très; — **much**, beaucoup.
village, le village.
visit, la visite.

to wait (for), attendre.
waiter, le garçon.
waiting-room, la salle d'attente.
to walk, marcher; **to take a** —, se promener*.
to want, vouloir.
war, la guerre.
warm, chaud; **to be** —, avoir chaud.
to wash, laver.
watch, la montre.
water, l'eau, *f.*
way, le chemin.
we, nous; on.
weak, faible.
weapon, l'arme, *f.*
to wear, porter.
weather, le temps.
Wednesday, le mercredi.
week, la semaine.
well, bien; **to be** —, aller* bien.
wharf, le quai.
what, quel, ce qui, que, qu'est-ce qui.
when, quand.
where, où; **from** —, d'où.
which, que; lequel; quel.
while, pendant que.
white, blanc, blanche.
who, qui.
whose, dont, à qui.
why, pourquoi.
wide, large.
wife, la femme.
to win, gagner.
wind, le vent.
windy: it is —, il fait du vent.

voici [vwasi], here is, here are, 26.
voilà [vwala], there is, there are, 7.
voir [vwaːr], to see, 21.
la voiture [vwatyːr], carriage, 12.
votre, *pl.* **vos** [vɔtr, vo], your, 9.
le vôtre [voːtr], yours, 43.
vouloir [vulwaːr], to wish, 6;—**dire**, to mean, 39.
vous [vu], you, 3; to you, 19; yourself, 37.
le voyage [vwajaːʒ], journey, 44.
voyager [vwajaʒe], to travel, 44.
le voyageur [vwajaʒœːr], traveler, 16,
vrai [vrɛ], true, 29.
vu [vy], seen, 21; (*p. p. of* **voir**, to see).

le wagon [vagõ], railway car, 14.

y [i], to it, to them, there, 22.

---

window, la fenêtre.
wine, le vin.
winter, l'hiver, *m.*
to wish, désirer, vouloir.
with, avec.
without, sans.
woman, la femme.
wool, la laine.
woolen, de laine.
word, le mot.
work, le travail; to —, travailler.
workman, l'ouvrier, *m.*
world, le monde.
it is worth, il vaut.
to wound, blesser.
to wrap, envelopper.
to write, écrire.
to be wrong, avoir tort.

yard, la cour; le mètre.
year, l'an, *m.*; l'année, *f.*
yellow, jaune.
yes, oui.
yesterday, hier.
yet (*still*), encore; (*however*), pourtant.
you, vous; on.
young, jeune.
your, votre, vos.
yours, le vôtre.

INDEX

Numbers refer to sections

à contracted with definite article, 483; with infinitive after verbs, 540; expressing possession, 522, 2.

accent (stress), page 16, § 53.

accents (acute, etc.), page 18, § 57.

adjectives, feminine (formation), 490; (irregular), 490, 6, 7; plural (formation), 491; agreement, 492; possessive, 520; agreement, 521; repeated, 522, 1; demonstrative, 523; comparison, 497 ff; position, 493.

adverbs, formation (*-ment*), 494; position, 495; comparison, 497 ff; of quantity, 496; numerical, 505.

age, 510.

alphabet (names of letters, etc.), page 19, § 58.

any, see *some.*

article, after *être* to express possession, 522, 2; definite and indefinite, 483; definite, contracted with *de* and *à*, 483; definite with general nouns, 484; definite with proper names, 486, 2; definite with languages, 486, 3; definite with countries, 486, 4; definite with week-days, 486, 5; definite with seasons, 486, 6 and 263; definite in various idioms, 486, 7; definite omitted in titles, 487, 1; definite omitted with appositive nouns, 487, 2; definite in idiomatic uses, 489; definite in expressions of *measure, weight,* etc., 489, 1; definite with parts of body, 489, 2.; indefinite, 483; omitted with predicate nouns, 488, 1; omitted with appositive nouns, 488, 2; omitted with *cent, mille,* 488, 4.

as, in comparisons, 499.

aucun (*ne*), 532.

autre / *autrui* } 530, 6.

auxiliary *verbs,* conjugation (*avoir, être*), page 278; use, 543; use in compound tenses, page 277.

avant, distinguished from *devant,* page 126, footnote.

avoir, see auxiliary verbs.

bien (+ *de* + article), 486, note 1.

cedilla, page 18, § 57.

c'est, ce sont, page 120, footnote; 525, 2.

ce, cet, cette, 523.

ce and *il,* distinguished, 525.

ceci, cela, 524, 525.

celui, celle, 524.

celui-ci, celui-là, 524, note 1.

chaque, 530, 3

chez, 173.

-ci (*-là*), 523, note 2; 524, note 1.

clock, 508, 525; exceptions: 1.

comme and *comment,* distinguished, page 209, footnote.

comparison, see *adjectives* and *adverbs.*

conditional, formation, use, 303.

conditions, 555, 305.
conjectural future or **conditional,** 553.
conjugations, of regular verbs (in full), page 275; of irregular verbs, pages 281–293; interrogative, 26; negative, 54.
conjunctive pronouns, see *pronouns.*
connaître, distinguished from *savoir,* page 243, footnote.

dates, 509.
days of the week (list), 222.
de, contracted with definite article, 483; with infinitive after verbs, 540; partitive use, 485; after adverbs of quantity, 496; 485, 1, c; = in (after superlative), page 313, footnote 3; with names of countries, 486, 4.
definite article, see *article.*
demonstrative adjectives or **pronouns,** see *adjectives, pronouns.*
depuis (tenses after), 551.
devant, distinguished from *avant,* page 126, footnote.
deviations permissible, 560.
devoir (translation), 447.
dieresis, page 18, § 57.
disjunctive pronouns, see *pronouns.*

elision, page 17, § 56.
en (prep.), with names of countries, 486, 4, and 319; (pronoun), uses, 518; (= *some, any,* etc.), 485, 2; with numerals and with adverbs of quantity, 485, 2, Note.
est-ce que, use, 536.
être, conjugation, page 278; auxiliary in compound tenses, 543; with passive voice, 556.

floor (1st, 2d, etc.), page 177, footnote.
fois (*temps, heure*), distinguished, page 126, footnote.
fractions, 507.
future (= English present), 554; (or **conditional**), to express conjecture or probability, 553.

gender (of nouns), rules for, 557, 558.
guère (*ne — guère*), 532.

heure, see *fois;* used to tell time, 508.

i (final) elision, page 18, Note 2.
il and *ce,* distinguished, 525.
il y a and *voilà,* 66.
imperative, forms, 537, 4; third person (how rendered), 547, 2; with object pronouns, 516.
imperfect tense (indicative), use, 552; (subjunctive), formation, 537, 5; (subjunctive), sequence of tenses, 546.
in (before places or countries), 319.
indefinite adjective or **pronoun,** 530.
indefinite article, see *article.*
infinitive (following verbs), 540.
interrogation, models for questions, 536.
interrogative adjectives, see *adjectives.*
interrogative pronouns, see *pronouns.*
irregular verbs, tabulated, pp. 281–293; stem, 538.

jamais (*ne — jamais*), 532.

-là, 523, Note 2; 524, Note 1.
le (pleonastic), 517.
lequel, declined, 528, 2; (and *quel*), 526, 527 ff.
linking (of words), page 17, § 55.

meilleur and *mieux*, distinguished, page 153, footnote.
même, use, 530, 7.
mon for *ma*, 520, Note 1.
months (list of), 347.

ne (with *pas*, *point*), 531; position, 531, 4; redundant, 534.
n'est-ce pas, page 130, footnote.
negation, 531.
ni — ni (with *ne*), 523; (with partitive), 485, Note 1.
non, use, 535.
nouns, gender, 481, 557–559; number, 482; rules for gender, 557–558; gender (compound nouns), 559; used as adjectives, 485, 1, d.
nul (*ne*), 532.
numerals, 502; pronunciation, 504; collective, 506; fractions, 507.

on, use, 530, 1.
où (= relative pronoun), 529, 3.

participle (present), agreement, 544; (past), agreement, 545; (past), agreement with reflexive pronoun, 545.
partitive, use, 485; (see *some*).
pas, use, 531; position, 531, 1, 2, 3; omitted, 533.
passive voice, 556.
past definite tense, use, 552.
past indefinite tense, use, 552 (2).
permissible deviations, 560.
personal pronouns, see *pronouns*.
personne (*ne — personne*), 532.
plupart, use, page 307, footnote 1.
plus (*ne — plus*), 532.
possession, how expressed, 522, 2.
possessive adjective, see *adjectives*.
possessive pronouns, see *pronouns*.
prepositions with infinitive, 539–541; see also *à* and *de*.
present subjunctive, formation, 537, 2; sequence of tenses, 546.
principal parts of verbs (formation of tenses), 537.
probability or **conjecture**, (in future or conditional), 553.
pronouns, conjunctive, 512; use, 513; order, 515, 516; demonstrative, 524 ff; disjunctive, 512; use, 513, 514; interrogative, summary of uses, 517; remarks on, 528; personal (subject), 511 ff; (object), 512 ff; possessive, 520; relative, 527, 529; reflexive, 519; as reciprocals, 519, 3.
pronunciation, pages 3–23.

que (*ne — que*), 523.
quel and *lequel*, 526, 527 ff.
quelconque, 530, 9, a.
quelque, 530, 4.
questions, models for, 536.
qui? and *qui*, 527 ff.
quiconque, 530, 9, b.
quoi, 527 ff.

regular verbs, paradigms, page 275.
reflexive pronouns, see *pronouns*.
reflexive verbs, see *verbs*.
rien (*ne — rien*), 532.

savoir, distinguished from *connaître*, page 243, footnote.
seasons, 263 and 486, 6.
si, elision of *i*, page 101, footnote; = *aussi* in comparison, 499, Note.
some (**any**), 485; before a noun, 485, 1; with negative, 485, 1, Note; before an adjective, 485, 1, Note; as pronoun, 485, 2.
son for *sa*, 520, Note 1.
stress (accentuation), page 16, § 53.

subjunctive, sequence of tenses, 546; uses, 547 ff.
superlative, formation, 497.
syllables, division of, page 17, § 54.

temps, see *fois.*
tenses, formation from principal parts, 537; compound (synopsis of), page 277; compound (with *avoir* or *être*), 543; compound (verbs of motion), 543, 2; compound (reflexive verbs), 543, 1; use of (with *depuis*), 551; use of past tense, 552; sequence in subjunctive, 546.
-tes (instead of *-ez*), as ending of 2d person plural, 537 (3).
than, before numerals, page 313, footnote 2.
time of day, 508.
ton for *ta,* 520, Note 1.
tous, pronunciation, page 329, footnote.
tout, 530, 2.
tu and *vous,* distinguished, 511, Note.

verbs, regular (paradigms), page, 275; stem of irregular verbs, 538; irregular (table of), pages 281–293; irregular (compounds) pages 294–295; principal parts and formation of tenses, 537; compound tenses (paradigm), 537; compound tenses (auxiliaries used with), 543, 1; reflexive verbs, 542; prepositions used with verbs, 539; followed by infinitive, 540; transitive and intransitive (differing from English use), 541.
voici and *voilà,* distinguished page 141, footnote.
voilà and *il y a,* distinguished, 66.
vous and *tu,* distinguished, 511, Note 1.

weather, 264.

y (pronoun), uses, 518.

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Sept. 2006

PreservationTechnologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION
111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 003 117 044 8